



GOD AND DEVIL WORLD

BOOK 07

Zi Chan Bao Zeng

Epub creation by Lisa Hayes

God and Devil World

(神魔系统)

by

Zi Chan Bao Zeng

(资产暴增)

Synopsis

In less than an instant the world as we knew it was at its end.

That's right. The Apocalypse. In a single blink Zombies appeared and mutated monsters began to rampage all throughout the world. Now it was the human species turn to fight for survival and planetary dominance!

On the same day that the world descends into chaos we meet Yue Zhong. Initially only hoping to get to his friends and escape to a refugee camp our protagonist sets out, inadvertently building a team along the way. After a series of fortuitous events and a few serious hunches our hero decides it's time to do more than just survive!

Yue Zhong begins to form the foundations of an enormous survival plan... before he suddenly discovers that he has only gotten over the first hurdle.... Unbeknownst to Yue Zhong and company, the world outside of China is mostly a wasteland! Country sized swathes of nuclear radiation and an extreme shortage of supplies in the world after the nuclear explosions was quickly becoming the "norm". Mutants, Evolved animals and what's worse, intelligent out of control dinosaurs had quickly appeared and claimed their own sections of the planet. There were several innately powerful Evolved races which appeared that were more than 10 times stronger than humans, nearly all of them possessing bodies impenetrable by normal bullets. The fabled orcs' were another of these Evolved races, the leader of which had in fact enslaved many of the remaining human beings.

Unceremoniously exposed to such a cold and heartless new world, Yue Zhong is faced with a choice: Find a deep dark hole and hope it goes back to "normal"? Or overcome all obstacles and struggle towards Evolution!!!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Editing by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 601: Gaining the God and Devil World's 18th Novice Village!

Yue Zhong was also helpless, and could only take out a set of clothing from his storage ring and helped the little loli dress.

He had just helped her to put on the clothes, when she lightly pulled at them, and ripped them apart.

Yue Zhong's face grimaced in helplessness under the Sea Mask, and tried to coax her as though he was speaking to a kid: "Wear your clothes!! Wear your clothes, I'll be nice!"

"Wear...Clo..thes..! Nice...nice!" The little silver-haired loli immediately picked up on that little bit of Chinese and allowed Yue Zhong to dress her again.

Once she put them on, she pounced into his embrace again, giggling adorably.

Yue Zhong ruffled her hair and said: "Since you have a head of pretty silver hair, I'll call you Yin Shuang (Silver Frost)."

Yin Shuang seemed to understand, as she repeated her name slowly: "Yin...Shuang!"

Yue Zhong had chanced upon this strange biological life form from the corpse of the Mutant Infected Womb, and he carried Yin Shuang as they got on Greenie's back, before shooting for the skies.

The 8 Thunder Fighters in the sky had landed at the forefront of the battle. While their rockets and guided missiles had been spent, they had more back at base.

As the battle drew to a close, the ground was strewn with corpses everywhere. Hu Yi's 1st Regiment had fought hard to slaughter the zombies.

After an intense battle that lasted for 2 days, over a million

zombies had been obliterated by Yue Zhong's army. An army that had the support of enough ammunition and logistics was truly powerful, and not something ordinary zombies could hope to withstand.

The Z-type within Ning Xi City saw that the situation could not be salvaged and hurried to bring the remaining 800,000 as they fled.

That was when the armored troops of Yue Zhong burst out, they had been waiting patiently to catch those fleeing zombies. They chased after the horde in a frenzy, slaughtering as many as they could, which reached a total of over 300,000 zombies. By then, only the higher-level evolved zombies had managed to flee together with the Z-Type.

“Congratulations on conquering Ning Xi City and gaining the title ‘Ning Xi City Conqueror’! The title grants +2 in all attributes, and the title cannot be earned again! Effects of titles can stack!”

“You have brought troops to conquer Ning Xi City, and have gained 3 levels, gaining 6 points of attributes to be allocated!”

“You have brought troops to conquer Ning Xi City, you have gained 10,000 Survivor Coins!”

“You have brought troops to conquer Ning Xi City, you have gained a Level 4 Defense Vest!”

“You have brought troops to conquer Ning Xi City, you have gained an additional skill point to be allocated!”

When Yue Zhong's troops had chased out the rest of the zombies, or killed the scattered remaining ones, the notifications rang out in his mind one after another.

Yue Zhong utilized 2 skill points to enhance his Second Order Devil Flame, as the points turned into a bright light in his sea of consciousness, transforming the runes of the Devil Flame. An additional character appeared, and it propelled the might of his

Devil Flame yet again.

After conquering Ning Xi City, Yue Zhong entered the Novice Village on his own.

“Congratulations on conquering the Novice Village, you have gained the title of ‘Controller of God and Devil World’s 18th Village’.”

“Having gained this 18th Village, you have obtained the following information. First: About 2 years, 10 months and 13 days from now, the 2nd Round will begin. Second: The Experience Portal will open in 1 year and 10 months from now. You will have to gain control over the whole of China to obtain a ticket for the portal. Third: Every city’s Novice Village possesses a unique power. Please work hard to obtain the rest of the villages.”

A number of notifications sounded out in his mind, causing his mood to sink.

Yue Zhong frowned deeply, as he felt a rising pressure within his heart: “The 2nd Round, what is it? Damned bastard, it definitely isn’t something good!!”

It was apparent that the current Mutant Beasts, Evolved Zombies, the Sea Clan and all the strange intelligent beings were just the beginning. Yue Zhong could barely handle a million-strong zombie horde, and each time he launched an assault, he would expend a great amount of resources, and suffer some casualties.

If there were more strange monsters that were even more difficult to handle, he was afraid to imagine what the consequences would be.

“The Experience Portal will open in 1 year and 10 months, which means I need to conquer the capital of China by then? How is that possible?”

The capital was one of the densest populated place in China, considering China’s population. It had over dozens of million

people. That was to say, if Yue Zhong wanted to conquer the capital, he had to face dozens of million zombies.

Right now, even 2 million zombies were enough to cause him to be exhausted, as well as cost him his reserves. There was simply no way he could take on a dozen million zombies right now.

Yue Zhong shook his head, putting the stress to the back of his mind as he walked into the 18th Village of the God and Devil World.

He immediately walked up to the temple of the occupation of the Dark Knight.

Within the temple, a Dark Knight stood there quietly, emitting a quiet but powerful pressure.

Yue Zhong could feel the suppressing aura and knew he was far from being a match for this Dark Knight.

“Your excellency, I’m Dark Knight Yue Zhong, I hope to purchase some class-related skill books.”

The Dark Knight pointed with his finger, and a number of projections appeared in mid-air, displaying different skills.”

Yue Zhong took a look and noticed that the prices had risen to more than 10 times compared to the time he entered the other village. A single Level 2 skill required 10,000 Survivor Coins, while a Level 3 skill required 100,000 Survivor Coins.

Here, there were also Level 4 skills that were for sale, each of them going for at least a million Survivor Coins. Level 5 skills needed 10 million, and Level 6 skills went for a 100 million.

As the leader of a million people, Yue Zhong had collected a large amount of Survivor Coins, and yet, he only had 14 million Survivor Coins. It would at most be enough to purchase a Level 5 skill and 4 Level 4 skills.

He glanced through them, the Level 5 and 6 skills were enough to

cause him to salivate with longing, but after some hesitation, he decided to only buy 1 Level 4 Skill.

“Level 4 Skill: Low-level Dark Dou Qi. Allows User to store Dark Dou Qi within the body, using it to enhance combat strength. This skill is necessary to evolve it to a Mid-Level Dark Dou Qi, by enhancing the Low-level Dark Dou Qi three times. User can enhance the skill through training, or by using skill points. Each enhancement requires 2 skill points.”

The moment Yue Zhong purchased the skill, he immediately learnt it, as a dark light shone around him, and the runes of the Dark Dou Qi Skill condensed in his sea of consciousness.

When the runes formed, a bunch of information filled his mind, allowing him to gain the cultivation technique of the Dark Dou Qi and how to use the Qi itself.

His pupils constricting, he activated the Dark Dou Qi, and his energy surged, as wisps of dark energy flowed out of his body, strengthening him, boosting his combat power by a huge margin for a short period of time.

With a flash of his body, he immediately transformed into a shadow and disappeared. Without the use of his Shadow Steps, his speed had already reached 27 times that of a person. If he coupled it with the Shadow Steps, then his speed would truly reach the sound barrier.

He came to a stop and admired the strength flowing through his body, nodding in satisfaction: “Great! Great! This Dark Dou Qi is truly marvelous. With this skill, my strength and survivability have increased another notch.”

After purchasing this Low-level Dark Dou Qi skill, he did not continue his purchase of other skills. Instead, he went over to the Equipment Enhancing shop, and handed 4 Evolution Stones, 10,000 Survivor Coins as well as his Level 4 Falcon Sniper Rifle over to the merchant.

To upgrade a Level 3 equipment to a Level 4 one, it required 1 Evolution stone. Level 4 to Level 5 required 4 stones, Level 5 to Level 6 required 16 stones, and it stacked on that way. At the same time, by upgrading an equipment from its Level 5 to Level 6 state, there was a chance of failure.

With a bright flash of light, the Level 4 Falcon Sniper was upgraded to a sleek, black 25mm Sniper Cannon with many runes all over it.

“Level 5 Treasure, Falcon II-Type Sniper Cannon. Its effective range is 4km, and its rounds include armor-piercing, explosive, incendiary, and sonic boom. Everyday, it will automatically generate one bullet.”

The benefits of being a leader of a large faction had finally revealed themselves. He had over 200 of those amazing Evolution Stones, and he decided to upgrade all the equipment he used constantly to their Level 5 stage.

“Level 5 Black Tooth Blade, extremely sharp blade. It can slice apart system equipment of Level 4 and below.”

“Level 5 Treasure: Stinger III, 25mm Hand-cannon, automatically generates 6 bullets everyday.”

“Level 5 Treasure: Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade.”

After upgrading these equipment to their Level 5 stage, he didn't take on risks, and instead, went over to the Medicine shop.

Inside the shop, Yue Zhong bought 2 Level 6 Formula-Gs.

Currently, a single vial of Formula G was selling for 500,000 survivor coins, 10 times more expensive than when Yue Zhong had initially came across the Novice Village. By purchasing 2, he had spent a million Survivor Coins at one go. However, it was worth it, as other than the Formula G, there was no other medicine that could heal a wound from a zombie.

Even an Evolver would turn into a zombie if scratched by one,

and there was no other known cure. 2 Formula Gs were equivalent to 2 lives. Yue Zhong had no choice but to get them.

After leaving the medicine shop, Yue Zhong came to the Enhancing Temple. In front of it, one could use a 1,000 Survivor Coins to enhance an attribute. However, Each person could at most enhance their attributes 20 times maximum. As for Yue Zhong, who controlled the 18th Village, he could enhance a maximum of 40 times.

He swiftly enhanced his Agility 39 times, reaching 256 in total. Many Agility-based Evolvers would not even close to such a terrifying figure.

Chapter 602: Evolving Temple!

After enhancing his attributes, Yue Zhong then came to the Temple he was unable to enter the previous time.

Inside the Temple, there was a diamond-shaped crystal floating in mid-air, with countless runes covering it.

“Congratulations on gaining the 18th Village. As the controller, you have authority over the following. First: Change the name of the 18th Village. Second: Allow the Village to appear in the world, giving others a clear sight of it. Third: Establish the defense mechanism of the Village, with you providing the energy for the defense. Fourth: Send the Village into the dimension gap, allowing it to shuttle through dimensions, requirement of a single Type 5 nuclei. Fifth: Expand the 18th Village, requirement of a single Type 5 nuclei.

“Please take note, should the central Temple be taken over by any enemy, then the control over the 18th Village will change hands. The method of assault will be transmitted to you, and the enemy would have to occupy the central Temple for at least 24 hours.”

A beam of light shot from the crystal in between Yue Zhong's brows, as he was filled with a mass of information.

Yue Zhong considered for a moment, before saying: “Change the name to Evolving Temple. Allow the Temple to materialize in this world!”

“Yes!”

Within Ning Xi City, a bright light radiated, as a number of structures appear out of thin air. The entire grounds that had been levelled due to the multiple bombardment began to reform under a mysterious light. Soon the village materialized.

Yue Zhong gained control over the Central Temple, before

moving towards the Bloodline Temple.

Within the Bloodline Temple, there were various carvings of werewolves, vampires, mermaids, Forest Rangers, wereleopards, giants, mutants, golems, lionheads as well as other strange existences.

A number of metal cocoon-like compartments stood inside the temple, as a diamond-shaped crystal floated in the middle of the temple.

“This temple is the Bloodline Temple. Any Blood Essence that you collect can be stored here, and inserted into the temple. By spending some Survivor Coins, a person can be enhanced to have a Bloodline. Every person can only possess one bloodline, as having 2 Bloodlines at the same time might cause some unexpected effects. There’s a 90% chance of a mutation to occur, turning user into a freak. There are currently 0 bloodlines in the storage.”

When Yue Zhong came to this Bloodline Temple and heard the flurry of notifications, he immediately whisked out a number of Mutant Beasts Blood Essences.

As he inserted them in, the crystal absorbed them all and presented new information.

“You can now enhance the following bloodlines: Flame Bird, Sea JellyFish, Sea Snake...Enhancing the Flame Bird bloodline will require 1 million Survivor Coins, while the Sea Jellyfish bloodline requires 850,000 Survivor Coins.”

Yue Zhong observed carefully and realized that the Type 4 Mutant Beasts bloodlines were more expensive, whereas the normal with no type were cheapest. The cheapest bloodline was the Mutant Sandworm, which only required 200 Survivor Coins.

After checking them, Yue Zhong chose to leave the temple. The results of the Bloodline Enhancement were still unknown, and he didn’t want to dive into it too fast. Even if he had to consider, he

would want to acquire a Type 5 Mutant Beast Blood Essence before trying.

After he left the Bloodline Temple, he came to the consumable goods store, and purchased wholesale.

Within the store, there was rice, fuel, bullets and all sorts of consumables. He did not buy these, instead, choosing to purchase in bulk different ammunitions manufacturing lines, and other forms of military equipment production lines.

Currently, Yue Zhong was relying on Yan Zhou and its factories to produce his ammunition, but it was not enough.

This time, the operation in Ning Xi City was smooth because of his large expenditure of his military reserves. He had not hold back on the bombardment, and this helped to kill almost 2 million zombies of Ning Xi City.

However, with such a battle, he had already consumed $\frac{2}{3}$ of the total ammunition available in Guang Xi. He was unable to launch another attack on another horde if he had to.

Compared to the valuable skill books, these production lines of ammunitions were not technologically advanced, and hence, they were cheap. A rifle bullet production line would cost at most 100,000 Survivor Coins, while a 122mm cannon production line would require 500,000 Survivor Coins.

Yue Zhong spent all of what he had left on the consumables store, purchasing a large amount of bullets, cannons, optical instruments, energy converter parts as well as other equipment.

The production lines came out in cards, as long as the user willed it, he or she could turn the card into an entire production line, and set it to a location. After mass purchasing a large number of production lines, his military logistics and support had increased tremendously.

After he had done what he needed, he deployed some troops to

stand guard over the area, at the same time, he arranged for a huge number of Enhancers to head to the Evolving Temple to change their classes into soldiers, scientists, doctors, priests, blacksmiths, magicians as well as other professions.

The moment this was done, the entire strength and might of Yue Zhong's forces increased by leaps and bounds.

It was especially so for the soldiers. Yue Zhong arranged for Masako to bring Hai Lan to go summon a large number of Mutant Beasts into Port Fang Cheng, allowing the soldiers to kill them and increase their levels, before changing their class into soldiers.

At the same time, with the scientists from Japan joining Yue Zhong's research team, adding on to the Enhancers that switched classes to scientists, the research into the Laser Gun as well as Energy Converter went underway.

Xian Yu Ming was conferred as the Captain of the Navy, and he led the Blue Ridge ships to scour the coastal lines for resources and survivors.

After making arrangements, Yue Zhong then sat in a Thunder Fighter and made for Long Hai City.

“Salute!”

The moment Yue Zhong came out from the Thunder Fighter, 2 rows of soldiers greeted him with a military salute.

The upper echelons of Long Hai City, including Chi Yang, Da Gou Zi, Chen Yao, Guo Yu, Xu Zheng Gang, Lu Wen and others welcomed him.

Ever since Yue Zhong set off for Guang Xi, he had expanded largely, and gained the support of over a million people, his expansion surpassing even that of Hunan. However, Hunan was still his homebase.

Yue Zhong came up to Chi Yang and patted his shoulders: “It's been hard on you!”

Since Yue Zhong disappeared, there have been plenty of minor uprisings from the countless factions he suppressed. Without Chi Yang's stable but firm grip, Yue Zhong might have lost this base long ago.

Chi Yang smiled warmly: "It's what I should do."

Beside Chi Yang, his guards were shocked when they saw him smile. In their eyes, Chi Yang had been an extremely steady but resolute leader, with a fierce stance on the city. They had never seen him smile before.

Yue Zhong chuckled: "I've seen Hu Yi. That rascal is still alive and kicking, and has become a Regiment Commander of the Guang Xi's 1st Regiment."

Hu Yi had obtained plenty of merits in his efforts to take down Ning Xi City, hence Yue Zhong had promoted him directly.

After all, generals were forged through countless battles. Hu Yi had experienced plenty, and had gained the prestige and respect.

Chi Yang spoke: "What about my mum and dad?"

Yue Zhong became silent, before replying slowly: "I did not manage to find them."

Chi Yang's body trembled, and a look of pain flashed in his eyes. He became silent as well. In the first place, he was a man of few words, regardless of how sad he was, he would bear it all himself.

Seeing this, Lu Wen who had wanted to pounce straight into Yue Zhong's arms also stood quietly, grabbing Yue Zhong's arms.

"This is the report on everything that has happened all this time!" After returning to the villa that he had left for so long, Guo Yu came up to him, dressed in a neat military uniform, her full bosom threatening to burst out of her shirt, as she handed him a thick file.

Yue Zhong received it and began to read it.

During the time when Yue Zhong was gone, Chi Yang had slowly but steadily expanded their scope of power, annihilating zombies, saving survivors, and even obliterating 2 bases that had over 10,000 people each. They had absorbed their survivors. After all, it was tough for ordinary factions to contend with the military-advanced faction of Yue Zhong.

After constant expansion and growth, their Hunan base had reached over 420,000 survivors, and society had stabilized and began to prosper once more.

After reading through it, Yue Zhong handed it back to Guo Yu and said warmly: "You've worked hard."

Hearing his gentle words, Guo Yu's eyes turned red, her heart filled with warmth. Her nose turned sour and her tears started to flow. She had been a spoilt brat at home before the apocalypse, and did not know how to do anything. But since then, she had experienced so much, landing in the hands of Wang Guang Hu, almost being tortured to death, in the end, she had landed with Yue Zhong, who gave her the chance to live a life with dignity.

However, he was often out fighting, and would disappear from time to time, with no news whatsoever. This would often cause Guo Yu to be afraid. She was afraid that she would end up in the hands of others, and be toyed with till her death. She had held out for so long, and was exhausted. With this single sentence from him, she was filled with a sense of comfort and strength.

Seeing her sobbing in relief, his emotions welled up as well, reaching out to pull her into his embrace. He then kissed her lightly on her lips.

She responded fiercely, before wrapping around him like a female snake, giving him her warmth, passion and all.

Chapter 603: Reaching the Central Plains!

After an intense bout of passion, a blood-colored rose bloomed on the snow-white sheets.

Guo Yu curled up like a satisfied kitten, before lying on Yue Zhong's chest as she used her voluptuous breasts to massage him and said: "Master, now that you're back, are you going to stay here for long?"

Guo Yu looked at him with an expectant look, hoping that he would stay at Long Hai City. As long as he stayed, she would feel so much more secure.

Yue Zhong planted a kiss on her lips, before hugging her tightly: "No! Soon, I'll have to make another trip."

Guo Yu's eyes flashed with disappointment, as she hugged him back, feeling his warmth: "Where are you heading to this time? Can't you just command the troops from here?"

Yue Zhong rebuked gently: "No can do! I have to head north, and conquer that area."

Guang Xi had just experienced a huge battle, and their ammunition and supplies were largely expended. In the short-term future, there was no way to organize another battle. They could only embark on minor expeditions to clear the zombies.

Long Hai City had also gone out on such minor expeditions plenty of times, and the total number of zombies they have annihilated was over 600,000. The troops needed rest as well.

If Yue Zhong waited slowly for the laser gun and Energy Converter to be produced, he could take his time to slowly wipe the zombies out before conquering the entire county.

In fact, he had planned for it to be like this. However, after obtaining the 18th Village, now known as the Evolving Temple, he had received the shocking news of what's to come. He had to find a

way to conquer the capital as soon as he could.

In order to conquer the capital, he had to start advancing towards the North, and make use of the strength of the survivors there to subjugate the capital. Otherwise, the moment the 2nd Round of the God and Devil System started, Yue Zhong knew that his faction would be too ill-equipped to deal with it. The death toll then might number in the millions.

Guo Yu asked softly: “This time, can you bring me along?”

She had watched as Chen Yao, Ji Qing Wu and a few of his women join him in battles. There was a strong sense of envy, and she wanted to fight by his side as well.

Yue Zhong directly refused: “No, this time, it is a major operation to take down the North. It’s too dangerous, I can’t risk having you there.”

She sighed lightly, and did not press the issue further. Instead, she raised her head and kissed his lips, and her eyes shined brightly as she said: “Master, let’s do it again! Give me more, I want to bear your children!!”

Guo Yu was a beauty capable of stirring the hearts of many. With such a tone, Yue ZHONG was instantly aroused again, and they tousled for the rest of the morning.

Since returning to Long Hai City, Yue Zhong would go around in the day to make his presence known to his subordinates and the survivors under him. During the nights, he would then head to find Guo Yu, Lu Wen, Zhuo Ya Tong, and Tong Xiao Yun to placate and pacify them.

As for Yin Shuang, the life form that had appeared out of the corpse of the Mutant Infected Womb, she was a loveable existence to everybody. However, she was practically stuck to Yue Zhong and was not willing to leave his side for long periods of time.

After 10 days, Yue Zhong boarded one of the Thunder Fighters as

he led over a hundred elites towards the North.

It was spring now, yet there was a chill in the air, and it would snow almost every 2 or 3 days. The entire Central Plains was covered in a layer of snow.

Across the snow-white field, there were a hundred survivors in tattered clothes running. Behind them, over twenty men in thick cotton clothes were chasing them as they rode horses. They wielded guns, and they were laughing loudly, while firing their guns from time to time, killing a number of the survivors.

The men in pursuit had the ability to wipe out the entire group of survivors, except that right now, they were treating the chase as a hunt. They laughed as they chased and fired their guns, and the survivors would drop dead one after another.

As the survivors ran, some fell, breathing heavily as they kneeled, hugging their heads while begging to surrender.

However, in response, the men behind just came up and whipped out their blades and slashed at the survivors.

Seeing this, the rest of the survivors became frantic, and began to flee again.

At this time, a number of soldiers dressed in military uniforms appeared in the distance.

One of the survivors saw this group of gun-wielding soldiers and immediately screamed out: “Save us!! Sir, please save us!! As long as you save us, we will do anything!! Please!!”

“Save us!! Save us!!”

“Please, please, please!! I’m willing to toll my entire life for you!!”

“....”

Seeing this new group of militants, the pitiful survivors who had been forced to such a state began to scream and shout. It didn’t matter who these people were, since it seemed like they were their

only hope.

This group of soldiers were precisely Yue Zhong and his men.

The way towards the capital was filled with dense population. There were zombies everywhere, and no place was suitable to expand their scope of power. Yue Zhong had thus chose the route through Mongolia, where the plains were vast and population scarce. Not long after arriving here, just as he was prepared to launch an assault on a city, they discovered this situation.

Seeing this new group that appeared, the men in pursuit of the survivors immediately became wary. Each of them were riding Level 15 Mutant Black Stallions, and they immediately turned their aim on Yue Zhong's group.

One of the militants came shouting in a strange language.

Yue Zhong frowned when he heard him, not understanding the language: "Foreign language? These are foreigners? Capture 5, kill the rest."

"Got it, Boss!!" Bai Xiao Sheng who had been following beside Yue Zhong had a savage glint in his eyes, as he flashed forwards, charging towards the ordinary militants like a gust of wind.

The elites who were following beside Yue Zhong immediately spread out, before charging towards the militants as well. These were all Evolvers of at least Level 40 and above. They had all changed their classes to be soldiers, knights, etc, and they were capable of killing these militants without their guns at all.

Suddenly, a gust of wind surged past Yue Zhong, charging for the militants like a specter, with its speed breaking the sound barrier. A pale fist would appear once in a while, and each time, a militant's head would explode.

In a second, almost all twenty were wiped out, save for 5.

Clearing over 20 militants in just one second, Yin Shuang appeared in their midst, among the bloodied corpses, without a

shred of dirt or blood on her. Looking like an angel, she smiled at Yue Zhong: “Father!! Father!! I’ve killed them all! Father’s enemies have been killed! Praise me!!”

The stark contrast between her angelic demeanor and the hellish scene of the corpses, gave her an innocent yet cruel aura. It was truly strange.

Yin Shuang’s talent for comprehension and learning was terrifying, picking up Chinese in such a short time. She had then started to call Yue Zhong as her father.

“Strong!! Too overpowered!” Bai Xiao Sheng and the rest of the elites watched the scene, as their eyes filled with shock.

Her speed had exceeded even the Type 3 Lightning, and her fists contained an earthshaking might that could cause a person’s head to explode. Not a single one of them dared to take on her blows head on.

“Strong!!” A chill came over Yue Zhong’s heart as well when he witnessed how fast this little girl had killed those militants. Just comparing speed, hers had exceeded Lightning, and reached the level of the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger. It was the first time he had seen her unleash such a frightening combat strength.

“Well done, Yin Shuang! This is your reward!” Yue Zhong chuckled gently, as he pulled out a lollipop for her. From any angle, Yue Zhong was truly lacking as a parent.

A gust of wind blew, and Yin Shuang had already appeared in Yue Zhong’s arms, before grabbing the lollipop and she sucking on it before smiling brightly: “Hehe!! I was praised by Father!”

“Lolicon!! However, this loli truly is something else.” Bai Xiao Sheng eyed Yin Shuang, and his countenance paled as he muttered inwardly.

When the 5 remaining militants saw their comrades wiped out, their legs gave way from the fright, and were easily subdued by

Yue Zhong's soldiers.

Yue Zhong frowned as he asked them: "Who are you people?"

One of them had savage look as he barked out: "We are soldiers that possess the noble Huangjin blood, from the Mongol Empire's King Hu-er Ran's palace. If you know what's good for you, release us this instant. Otherwise, when the army of King Hu-er Ran arrives, you will all be skinned and torn apart!"

"Huangjin Clan? Another ambitious warlord." Yue Zhong knew he came across another faction.

The apocalypse had already lasted for a year so far, and many warlords had tried to stake their own claims to various lands. Yue Zhong had seen it all, after all, he was one himself.

"Too much bullshit! Take him away for execution!" Yue Zhong eyed him coldly and barked.

That militant was dragged to one side, and a blade came flashing down, as his head was thus separated from his body. Fresh blood splattered all over the ground.

Seeing that soldier decapitated, the rest of the warriors started trembling.

Yue Zhong then pointed at another militant and said: "Alright! Come over, and tell me all about the Mongol King Hu-er Ran."

The warrior immediately revealed everything in fear when he was dragged: "Yes!!"

The Mongol King Hu-er Ran was a Mongolian of the Huangjin descent, after the apocalypse happened, he had relied on his claim to his bloodline to influence the people around him to join him as they carved out a faction for themselves.

Chapter 604: Yin Shuang's Terrifying Strength!

The Mongol King Hu-er Ran had warred all over the region, exterminating numerous factions, while taking absorbing power. He had now control over 120,000 households under him.

As for the Huangjin clan that he was from, there were 4 main households, and they were in charge of the 40,000 troops of the Huangjin Clan. These armed warriors were the soldiers trained under Bo-er Zi of the Huangjin Clan. They had just launched an assault on a middle-sized faction, and were in the midst of hunting down these remnant survivors.

Since the apocalypse, the weather had turned even harsher and colder. It was now already early spring, yet it was still snowing everyday. Vegetation could not grow. To the Mongols who raised livestock, it was truly tough. Many of their livestock had already succumbed to the weather. Their rations hence dwindled day after day.

Under such circumstances, Bo-er Zi had therefore ordered a massacre of anybody not of Mongol descent. Corpses were to be brought back, becoming food for the slaves as well as the Mutant Black Stallions.

The mid-sized faction had been forced under these circumstances to flee, while being pursued by those Mongol soldiers.

“Damn! What a bunch of beasts!” Yue Zhong heard the words and his expression turned ugly.

After the apocalypse happened, many people started doing what they liked. It didn't matter which country they were from, everyone sought to control and dominate others. Yue Zhong was appalled that such things were happening right across the border.

The middle-aged survivors ran up to Yue Zhong and knelt down

as they sobbed: “Sir!! Thank you!! Thank you so much for savings us!! Thank you Sir!!”

“Many thanks for saving us!!”

“.....”

Those survivors that had managed to escape that ordeal began to kneel and express their gratitude and relief. If it wasn't for Yue Zhong stepping out to act, they would all have died.

Yue Zhong glanced at one of them and asked indifferently: “What's your name?”

He replied carefully: “Responding to Sir, my name is Xiao Li!”

Yue Zhong then gave Xiao Li an order: “Go and tell the rest, those who're willing to come with me, we will ensure your safety, and provide food. However, you will have to obey every single command of mine. Those who aren't willing, I won't stop, they're free to go. Go! Let me make myself clear first, those who come with me, yet are not willing to obey, will face death.”

Xiao Li was shocked in his heart, and he replied carefully, “Yes! Sir!” before turning back to the rest of the survivors.

Not long after, Xiao Li returned, majority of the survivors were willing to follow Yue Zhong, after all, it was hard to find food out here in the plains. They wanted to live, and knew how hard it was. Yue Zhong allowed them to follow him, and it was a sort of blessing to them. Of course, there were those who were unwilling, and the 6 of them expressed their thanks before leaving.

“Set off!” Yue Zhong did not mind as he ordered.

This group of over 200 people hence made their way towards the middle-sized faction.

The mid-sized faction was set out in the wilderness, surrounded by only a layer of wooden fence. It was set up to guard against the occasional low-level Mutant Beast and zombies. At one particular

area, there were a number of sharp spikes erected, with some corpses stuck on them.

Currently, the base had turned a scene from Hell, with corpses strewn everywhere. Numerous Mongols were atop women, laughing maniacally as they sought their hearts' content.

War could allow even the most civilized person to turn into the most savage of beasts.

Yue Zhong ordered: "I will charge through the front door. Bai Xiao Sheng, lead 20 men to attack from the north. Tenpyo Saka, you take 20 and attack from the sides. Zhuo Ya Tong, you shall lead some men to stay and guard here. Await further orders."

This time, Yue Zhong had taken Bai Xiao Sheng, Tenpyo Saka and Zhuo Ya Tong together with him. Both Bai Xiao Sheng and Zhuo Ya Tong had swallowed the pink Snake Birth Fruits and became dual-attribute Evolvers, their powers heightened further. Tenpyo Saka was also one of the top Evolvers from Japan, and possessed terrifying combat ability. As for Yue Zhong himself, he was akin to an entire army, because of his overwhelming strength, he dared to cross the plains to expand.

Yue Zhong gave the order and brought Yin Shuang as he went towards the base.

Within the base, everything was in a mess, and there were many naked women in the grasps of the Mongol soldiers. The prettier the women, the more Mongol soldiers there were around them.

There were corpses everywhere as well, belong to both men and women, and the corpses of children were the most. It was truly hell, and the thick stench of blood wafted throughout the place.

When Yue Zhong stepped into the base, he became like a death god, reaping lives with the flash of his blade. The heads of the soldiers fell swiftly, incapable of reacting in any way at their moment of death.

As blood splattered all over the women, they screamed out loud.

The screams attracted the attention of some of the Mongol soldiers, and 7 of them charged towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong shot forwards, his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade slashing out multiple blade beams, tearing through the 7 Mongol soldiers like they were paper. The copious amount of blood and organs that spilled everywhere was horrifying.

Yin Shuang was like a cat that curled up in Yue Zhong's chest, absorbing the surroundings with a savoury glance. While the gruesome sight might cause some to be horrified and fearful, she felt it to be exciting and fun.

Against these ordinary soldiers, Yue Zhong didn't even need to employ any skills, he just swung his blade, and took them out easily.

On the other side, Bai Xiao Sheng, Tenpyo Saka were both Evolver experts, and the ordinary soldiers were not their match at all.

At the same time, the soldiers brought by Yue Zhong were elites that had received special training, and they killed swiftly and silently, not arousing too much suspicions.

Peng! Peng!

After killing over a hundred soldiers, some form of an army finally appeared. They were some of the Mongol soldiers under the lead of Bo-er Zi that did not waste their energy on women. The moment they discovered Yue Zhong, they began to launch attacks on him.

The soldiers were all wielding guns, and numerous bullets rains upon Yue Zhong.

"Father!! I'll go kill them! Gimme some candy later!" Yin Shuang chuckled at Yue Zhong, before pecking him on the side of his face.

At the next instant, she had transformed into a gust of wind that charged right into the midst of the Mongol soldiers.

Yin Shuang charged through the troops of Bo-er Zi, and their brains exploded one by one in a horrible fashion. It was as though a Grim Reaper had sliced through their midst, collecting their lives.

The Mongol soldiers shouted out in fear as they readied their guns and began firing, however, they missed every single shot.

Within 5 minutes, Bo-er Zi's soldiers had all been slaughtered cleanly, their headless corpses strewn all over the ground.

After killing those hundreds of soldiers, Yin Shuang was still clean, without a speck of dust nor drop of blood on her. She looked just like a little angel. However, this little angel had just slaughtered over hundreds of soldiers in a span of 5 minutes, with her little pale fists.

“Scary...!!!”

“Terrifying!!”

By the time Bai Xiao Sheng and Tenpyo Saka reached the battlefield, it was already over. They looked at the hundreds of headless corpses, astonished. They eyed Yin Shuang who was nestled in Yue Zhong's embrace, their faces full of fear.

The soldiers had followed Yue Zhong through numerous battles, and knew Yue Zhong's attack methods. The headless corpses were obviously the work of the little loli in Yue Zhong's arms. If such a terrifying existence had been their enemy, they would be basically defenseless. However, as a comrade, she was truly reliable.

Yin Shuang laughed brightly: “Father! Did I do well?”

Yue Zhong pulled out a lollipop, and ruffled her little head: “Well done! This is your reward!”

Yin Shuang giggled and leapt around in Yue Zhong's arms, her face full of satisfaction as she enjoyed her lollipop.

Without this Yin Shuang, Yue Zhong could have wiped out the entire base as well, just that it wouldn't have been easy,

Xiao Li and the rest of the survivors had returned to the base. When they saw the headless corpses of the Bo-er Zi forces, they were filled with shock: "Strong! They're truly too strong!"

Especially the headless corpses, Xiao Li and the rest immediately thought of the innocent-looking but deadly loli that followed Yue Zhong around. Their hearts instantly turned cold.

With the death of the Mongol soldiers, the entire base fell into Yue Zhong's hands.

Currently, the mid-sized faction that used to house 3,000-over survivors were only left with a little over 800 after the massacre by the Bo-er Zi's forces. The number of females outnumbered the males, with over 700 of them, and the men numbering 100. As to why there were so many women left, it was precisely because the soldiers had intended to make use of them.

The Bo-er Zi's forces that came to attack were about a thousand or so, and with them, there were over a 100 Black Stallions.

These Black Stallions were stronger than the long-distanced horses of the past by umpteen times, and their acceleration at the start could rival that of powerful sports car. When comparing long distances, they could even drag along a car with their powerful limbs. Every single one of these horses was a treasure, and could exchange for a tonne of rations.

After all, there was lack of fuel, there might be many cars, but fuel was scarce. With such a powerful Black Stallion that could replace a car as a form of transport, and could even be used to transport stuff, they were precious to any faction.

Other than the 100 Black Stallions, there were over a hundred lambs, 200 cows, 50 tonnes of rice, 50 tonnes of corn, 50 tonnes of wheat. The total number of vehicles were about 300, and they had

20 tonnes of fuel allocated.

By eliminating the forces of Bo-er Zi, Yue Zhong had also obtained an additional 1000 rifles, 30,000 rounds of ammunitions, allowing for every single person in his group to wield a gun each.

When they were done clearing the place up, Yue Zhong immediately gave the order for everyone to continue moving.

The news of the 1,000-strong force being wiped out would not escape the Huangjin Clan for long, Yue Zhong had to escape as quickly as possible. Right now, his strength was enough to wipe out a force of 1,000 with no problems, but if the Huangjin Clan sent all of their forces, he could not guarantee victory.

The fact that the Huangjin Clan could sit at the top of the food chain out here in the plains represented their strength, and the might of their troops. Yue Zhong was not blindly arrogant to think he could fight them head on with a bunch of a hundred soldiers.

Across the snow-white plains, 900 people left the desolate base, as they continued on in the harsh weather.

“Halt!! Hand over your weapons and rations, and you can cross. Otherwise, we’ll kill without mercy!” Just as Yue Zhong’s group was proceeding, an overbearing shout resounded from a distance.

A burly man with thick eyebrows and coarse skin appeared, riding a Black Stallion, with a large Bronze Bow slung across his back. He was backed by a few other equally burly men riding other Black Stallions, and they approached with rising killing intent.

They were just about to launch an assault, when Bai Xiao Sheng and his elites swiftly readied their weapons, and aimed at the approaching offenders, their own killing intent billowing out.

“Experts!! Shit, we’ve kicked an iron plate.” The burly leader saw the numerous guns trained on him and his men, and a dangerous feeling rose up in his heart.

Yue Zhong eyed them and spoke coldly: “Who are you people?”

The burly man immediately cupped his fists and said: “This brother! I am Divine Arrow Li Guang! I’ve eyes but did not recognize Mt. Tai, and have offended you. Please pardon my ignorance! I’ll lead my men away.”

When Xiao Li heard him, his face changed and quickly went up to inform Yue Zhong: “Divine Arrow Li Guang!! Leader, he is one of the famous bandits around these parts! His archery is truly something else! The rumors are that he had killed a Type 2 Mutant Beast with a single arrow once. All his brother are also powerful Enhancers in their own right, and their combat prowess is strong. They have wiped out a 100-man troop of the Huangjin Clan before.”

As Li Guang heard Xiao Li’s recount, his face revealed a smug expression.

“Oh! Li Guang, I’m in need of talents. You’ve come at the right time. Stay with me and work for me, as for the matters today, I won’t pursue them. If you aren’t willing, this time next year, will be the death anniversary for you and your brothers.”

Yue Zhong chuckled lightly, and pulled out his Stinger, swiftly firing three shots.

The 3 rounds zipped past 3 of the experts by Li Guang’s side, barely missing their hair.

His speed was too terrifying, and before the 3 of them could even react, the bullets had already soared past them. Only Li Guang could forcefully make out Yue Zhong’s movements.

When the gunshots died down, the 3 of them felt their backs drenched in cold sweat, their countenances pale. If Yue Zhong had aimed for their heads earlier, they would truly have died.

“What do you think?” Yue Zhong’s words were like a hammer that slammed into Li Guang’s heart.

He hesitated for a while, looking at those soldiers pointing the

guns at him and his brothers, and came down from his horse, kneeling before Yue Zhong. “Li Guang is willing to serve Leader!”

Chapter 605: Qi Mu County!

Li Guang pledged allegiance to Yue Zhong, before coming up to him and asked: “Leader! Where are you headed?”

Yue Zhong replied: “Qi Mu County!”

Li Guang’s heart turned cold when he heard it: “Leader! Qi Mu County is currently overrun with many zombies, will our strength be a little too weak?”

Mongolia was vast, and its population was extremely spread out. It could not compare to those inner cities. Qi Mu County used to have 50,000 people in the past, after the apocalypse, there were approximately 40,000. Li Guang knew Yue Zhong and his men were strong, but a group of a thousand intending to wipe out close to 40,000 zombies was basically impossible to him.

Ordinary zombies were extremely weak, and easy to kill, but even a Level 60 Evolver would be exhausted from dealing with 10,000 zombies.

Yue Zhong eyed Li Guang and spoke indifferently: “Our strength is more than enough.”

Li Guang immediately became tired, not daring to believe. He had only seen a part of Yue Zhong’s strength, and just that would have been enough to wipe them out earlier. Not to mention that Bai Xiao Sheng and the rest of the soldiers had yet to act. He didn’t dare infuriate Yue Zhong.

Soon, Qi Mu County appeared in the eyes of the entourage. It was a simple and backward city, within the city, there were many rotting bodies with savage expressions shambling about.

Yue Zhong’s group had long since accumulated enough experience dealing with zombies.

Bai Xiao Sheng pulled out a napkin that had been splashed with blood and charged right into the city. The zombies soon chased

after him.

Yue Zhong pointed at the group of zombies and gave Li Guang and his men an order: “Let me see what you’re capable of!”

“Yes!”

“Brothers! Charge! Let us show Leader our strength!” Li Guang hollered and charged towards the zombies.

The dozens of riders followed behind as they roared and charged at the zombie group.

When Li Guang and his riders reached about 200m away from the zombies, they began to nock their arrows, and a flurry of arrows flew towards the zombies, nailing them to the ground.

Among them, Li Guang’s archery was easily the strongest. His skill was the Heavy Arrow, and each time, he could fire up to 3 arrows, with each arrow possessing a destructive might. Each time he let his arrows fly, 3 zombies would be killed.

The rest of the soldiers had not managed to copy Li Guang’s level of skill, however, each of them could still penetrate the body of the zombies, nailing to the ground. From time to time, some zombies could be seen struggling to stand back up.

At this moment, 7 L2s that were impervious to most guns and knives appeared, and charged at the soldiers. The arrows of these warriors just served to bounce off the L2s’ bodies.

Seeing this, the countenances of the soldiers changed, and they quickly retreated.

Li Guang bellowed in rage, and immediately let loose an arrow empowered by the Explosive Arrow skill. With a flash, a meteor-like arrows shot towards one of the L2, and blasted its head into pieces.

He then proceeded to fire another 3 more of such arrows, dispatching another 3 L2s, before his face turned pale, and he too,

quickly retreated.

The L-types were after all not easy to deal with.

“Bai Xiao Sheng! Do it!” Yue Zhong looked at Bai Xiao Sheng who was behind Li Guang and his men and gave the order.

“Yes! Charge with me!” Bai Xiao Sheng chuckled, and led 50 elites forwards.

The 50 elite Evolvers raised their rifles and fired into the zombie horde.

As the multiple gunshots rang out, a large number of zombies were taken out, their heads popping. The 50 elites were all accurate marksman, every bullet aiming for the heads, and easily took care of the 400-over zombies.

These 50 elites had all changed jobs to become soldiers with the Firearms Manipulation skill, adding on to their status as Evolvers, and their levels reaching 40 and above, each of them already possessed the Level 4 Skill: Soldier’s Heart, enhancing their Firearms Manipulation skill further. Each of them were now accurate marksman. With their rifles, they could easily take out ordinary zombies from a distance of 200m.

After killing those 400 ordinary zombies, there were about 30 Type 2 evolved zombies left. Zhuo Ya Tong held a 3m-long mace that had been enhanced till Level 5 and charged into the midst of the zombies. Every strike of hers caused the zombies to be blasted on the spot. As for Bai Xiao Sheng, he was like a specter that easily sliced the evolved zombies into two with each flash of his blade.

Within 5 minutes, all the zombies that had been lured out were easily done in.

As Li Guang and his men watched, their hearts were filled with shock: “Holy shit! Too strong! Where did this bunch of people come out from? How come they’re so strong?”

“Fortunately I surrendered early, otherwise, we would have been

a pile of corpses.” Li Guang watched Bai Xiao Sheng leading his men to clear the zombies, and he felt a chill down his spine, celebrating his decision.

With such a method, Bai Xiao Sheng easily lured out another 1,000 zombies, and the group proceeded to clear them easily.

All of a sudden, the zombies that had been attracted to the blood stopped following Bai Xiao Sheng, instead, they began to gather together.

Looking at these zombies that had seemingly become smarter, Yue Zhong muttered softly: “Has the Z-type arrived? Who would have thought that such a small county would produce a Z-Type.”

Li Guang felt curious, and asked: “Z-Type? Leader, what’s that?”

There were many people who were still oblivious to the existence of the intelligent Z-Types, and it was likely that only the major factions would have come across them. As a small group, it was natural that Li Guang and his brothers had not yet come across it.

Yue Zhong replied: “It’s a type of zombie that can command others. It is able to gather an entire horde together, to launch a large-scale attack.”

Li Guang turned pale: “What?! It can actually command zombies to gather together?! That’s crazy!”

The zombies were fearsome, and some humans could barely scrape by with their lives because the zombies had little intelligence. The moment they did possess intelligence, it would truly be a nightmare for humankind. Zombies that were not under any command were prey for the humans, but the moment there was an intelligent being behind them, humans would then become the prey.

Yue Zhong gave an order: “Set up the fortifications and begin construction here! I think it would not wait to charge at us soon.”

When he gave his order, the survivors that Yue Zhong had

rescued began to work under the guidance of an Evolver.

A number of buses were driven over, forming a simple wall of steel, surrounding the survivors. Should this wall be breached, the survivors would fall prey to the zombies. The survivors were extremely fearful, but under Yue Zhong's orders, they could not shirk away.

Soon after, 30,000 zombies began to surge out like a huge sea from the center of the city.

With such a number, it truly seemed as though the horde was endless. The survivors turned pale, their bodies trembling.

Many of the survivors began to wail and cry, some kneeling and sobbing as they cursed their fates.

“Do it!” Yue Zhong watched the sea of zombies flow out, and readied his assault rifle, directly killing 10 zombies.

Bai Xiao Sheng and the rest of the elites also raised their weapons, and picked off the zombies calmly.

As the hail of bullets rained down on the zombies, many of their heads were blasted apart like watermelons. It was like there was an invisible wall that impeded their advance, with the zombies in front falling like wheat.

Yue Zhong, together with Bai Xiao Sheng and his 100 elite soldiers who were Level 40 Evolvers, were much more efficient than a 1,000 ordinary soldiers. Their aim was true.

It was especially so for Yue Zhong, who could easily fire 8 shots in a second, taking down 8 zombies each time. It was an easy feat for him, as long as he used all his strength, he could even fire out 12 consecutive bullets, each of them headshots. The rest of the soldiers were not as tyrannical as Yue Zhong, but even so, they could still take down 2 or 3 per second.

The zombie horde seemed to be stepping up to serve their heads on a platter, allowing Yue Zhong and his men to cull them like

crazy. Of course, their slow walking speed was one of the main reasons aiding the quick slaughter.

Li Guang and his men stared wide-eyed and agape as they watched Yue Zhong's men take down the zombies casually, muttering: "This is insane! Their strength is too obscene!! Where are they from? How did they get so powerful?"

They continued to watch, their emotions in turmoil and their backs drenched in cold sweat. Any soldier from this fearsome army could easily dispatch the whole lot of them, and to think they had actually intended to rob them. They had truly been at the gates of hell without knowing.

The rifle bullets could only take down the ordinary zombies. There were 5 L3s and a hundred L2s that formed a front formation and charged towards Yue Zhong and his men.

As the 100 L2s that were about 3m tall charged towards them, they seem like mini tanks, and the 5 L3s who took the vanguard positions were even more massive, towering at 4m.

Yue Zhong eyed them nonchalantly, and pointed, his Devil Flame activating as 5 huge fireballs shot towards the heads of the L3s and exploded.

The heads of the 5 L3s exploded in a cloud of blood and flesh, their massive frames slumping to the ground.

With Yue Zhong insta-killing those L3s, White Bones charged towards the L2s like a gust of wind, its bone spikes extending out as it started to whirl extremely fast, slicing through the heads of the L2s.

As for the other major group that comprised of the S3s and S2s, their heads were targeted by Yue Zhong's rifle. With his current strength, aiming for them was easier compared to the past. It would take an S4 to give him some trouble within a distance of 200m.

Under the relentless assault of Yue Zhong's forces, the 30,000 zombies were slowly being exterminated. The price they had to pay was the expenditure of over 80,000 rounds.

Such an incredible feat was hard to accomplish prior to the change of class for the elite soldiers. After the job change, their firearms manipulation and accuracy had undergone a tremendous change. Adding on to their enhanced physique, it was barely a form of intense training for them to deal with 30,000 zombies.

This was why Evolvers that had changed their jobs were this fearsome. At that time, when the Kingdom of God had been ambushed by the Takama-ga-hara forces in Japan, they could still make use of their superior abilities to hold off the enemy 10 times their numbers. This was purely the advantage of a job change.

“Advance!” Having dealt with the 30,000 zombies, Yue Zhong proceeded forwards.

Bai Xiao Sheng thus led 50 elites and charged in to clear the remaining zombies.

Xiao Li led the rest of the survivors and set fire to the 30,000 corpses according to Yue Zhong's orders.

If the decomposing bodies were to be left alone, there would be unknown viruses and diseases that could transmit. Of course, they were the best fertilizers for the Mutant Plants, however, Yue Zhong did not have any base that were currently growing any Mutant Plants, hence, he had no use for these corpses.

Upon entering the city, the remaining zombies had already been brought away by the Z-Type to escape, leaving behind only a scarce number.

Qi Mu County was a place that was rich in coal, and there were a few large coal mining companies here. With such a large amount of resources falling into Yue Zhong's hands, he had no need to worry about energy for the time being.

At the same time, there were plenty of cotton clothes here, and Yue Zhong gave them out to the survivors, helping them to keep warm.

As the survivors received the cotton clothes, many of them teared up in gratitude.

After all, most factions treated cotton clothes as precious resources, a pretty woman would have to accompany a man for an entire month just to get a piece of cotton clothing. Now, Yue Zhong was giving them out without qualms, and these survivors were all touched. At the same time, they were filled with respect and faith in the strength of the troops.

When Yue Zhong announced to recruit soldiers, many signed up, hoping to gain strength and glory.

Among the survivors that Yue Zhong rescued, there were more women than men. He could not help it, and thus had to organize a largely-female troop as well. He then handed them to Zhuo Ya Tong to lead.

After arranging for matters to be settled, Yue Zhong then summoned Li Guang, asking: "Tell me all you know about the various factions out here in the plains."

The plains and the cities were different, as population was sparse out in the plains. When the world changed, those humans out there stood a better chance in surviving. Thus, the number of survivors was much higher.

Also, since the plains were vast, traffic was not congested, it was easy for communications between factions. As a wandering bandit, Li Guang had seen his fair share of things, and naturally knew more about the plains as compared to Xiao Li.

Chapter 606: Tian Mu Town!

“Yes!! Boss! From what I know, the current largest and strongest faction is naturally the Huangjin Clan led by the Mongol King Hu-er Ran. It’s rumored that he has 120,000 survivors under his rule, and there are over 30,000 slaves of other races under him as well. The 2nd well-known faction would be The Great Turkic Empire of Wu-Er Tuo Tuo. He has a total of 10,000 elite Golden Wolf soldiers, each of them fierce and powerful. Other than that army, they also have 150,000 slaves from other races. The 3rd largest faction would be the forces of the Manchurian Empire under the King Hiowan Yei. The total Manchu and Han soldiers number about 8,000, and they have about 160,000 slaves. Other than these 3 main powers, there’s the Gray Wolf Army, Red Triad, Blue Triad, Gold Wolf Triad, Radiant Sun Triad, People’s Army, Heaven’s Wheel Sect, Universal Sect, Heavenly Demon Sect, etc. However, compared to the 3 main powers, they’re nothing, and are just a ragtag bunch.” Li Guang narrated the information he knew about the factions in the Central Plains.

“All sorts of bullshit characters have appeared!” Yue Zhong frowned when he heard it, before continuing: “Out of all these factions, are there no decent ones established by the Chinese?”

Li Guang sighed gently and spoke with some pity: “No, the Chinese factions are usually too fractured, and cannot compare to the cohesiveness of the Mongols. Each time there was any outstanding character that was rising, he or she would be quickly terminated. The Gray Wolf Army, Red Triad, Blue Triad, Gold Wolf Triad, Radiant Sun Triad, People’s Army, Heaven’s Wheel Sect, all of these are all small-time factions established by the Chinese, but they’re always fighting among themselves, and lack the strength to stand up to the Mongol King.”

Yue Zhong pondered for a while, before asking: “After the world change, there should have been some border guards that remained,

which faction do they belong to?”

The might of military people were the strongest among the ordinary folk, and their survivability was the highest. Since the human population was more spread out in the plains, there should have been many that survived. After gaining the Evolving Temple, Yue Zhong could swiftly produce a number of strong soldiers. However, he had hoped to obtain more troops that belonged to the military in the past. After all, fighting skills could be upgraded through the temple, but experience, tactics and strategies could not be enhanced. He needed the people of talent.

Li Guang thought for a moment: “The border guards? They have been split into a number of factions. A part of them had established themselves as kings, and formed a faction. Another had been absorbed into Manchuria, and the remaining had formed the People’s Army, and are current protecting some 800 survivors over at Hu Yan Town. The scattered few have been absorbed into the other factions.”

Men from the military were still human after all, and had their own thinking and hopes. After the apocalypse, some insisted on their principles and way of life, while others began to degenerate, becoming hitmen for others.

“Which is the closest and largest Chinese faction around here?” Yue Zhong asked.

Li Guang replied quickly: “The Radiant Sun Triad. They have over 7,000 people, and they’re mostly Chinese. Their base is in a small town called Tian Mu Town, situated about 40 li north of Qi Mu County.”

Li Guang was truly a snakehead that mixed with the dragons, knowing helpful information on each and every faction.

Yue Zhong’s eye flashed coldly: “Very good! Our next target will be the Radiant Sun Triad!”

Yue Zhong wanted to establish a sizeable faction out here in the Central Plains, and needed many people. The Radiant Sun Triad might not have any enmity with Yue Zhong, but they had the numbers, and thus had become Yue Zhong's target.

In this apocalyptic world where human lives were treated like ants, the strong could easily trample on the weak. However, the irony was that human lives were extremely valuable. Without manpower, factories would not function, ammunition would not be produced, clothes could not be manufactured, and research and development would come to a stop.

After resting for an entire day, Yue Zhong left Zhuo Ya Tong and 20 elites in Qi Mu County, leaving instructions to train up the new recruits, while Yue Zhong led Bai Xiao Sheng, Tenpyo Saka and the rest of the subordinates towards the direction of Tian Mu Town.

Tian Mu Town was a small town surrounded only by a small wooden fence, and there were various steel structures that served as fortifications, with multiple barrels pointing out, defending every entrance. Around the perimeter, there were some watch towers with soldiers within keeping a lookout. The defense was tight, and covered all areas, those who wanted to enter would have to consider using heavy firepower.

Yue Zhong observed the town from afar and frowned. He might have 80 elite Evolvers with him, but it would still be a challenge to breach this town.

With his Steel Body skill, Yue Zhong was not afraid of bullets, however, his soldiers did not have that skill. They were at risk of dying if they were shot at. These were soldiers that had followed him through Japan and Country A, and he did not want to lose them meaninglessly here.

Li Guang hesitated a while, before speaking up: "Leader!! I can be considered to have some prior friendship with the Radiant Sun Triad's leader Ximen Lie He had always been interested in

recruiting me to work for him. We can make use of this to enter, however, their control, if we want to mix with the crowd, we can't have more than 10 people. Weapons would also be confiscated."

Yue Zhong's eyes lit up as he smiled: "Great!! Take me in! Li Guang, if you do succeed, you will have gained some merit!"

With Yue Zhong's strength, the moment he could infiltrate Tian Mu Town, then it would be like Sun Wukong entering the belly of a demon. He could do whatever he wanted. His strength was overpowered, and under the possible situations of an ambush, he could even take out an peak-level Evolver like the Gun Demon of the Takama-ga-hara. Even if the Radiant Sun Triad had many powerful experts, Yue Zhong had confidence he could slaughter his way out.

After Li Guang selected a few soldiers, he brought Yue Zhong and Tenpyo Saka towards the direction of Tian Mu Town.

At the entrance, 6 gun-wielding soldiers stopped Li Guang's group and barked; "Halt! Who are you guys?"

When they stopped them, their eyes landed on Tenpyo Saka and her body. With her exquisite looks and that smoking hot body, it was truly a rare sight out here in the plains.

Li Guang replied in a confident voice: "I'm Divine Arrow Li Guang, a friend of your chief Ximen Lie! I've come specially to visit Chief Ximen. Please notify him!"

"Wait a while!" One of them replied, and swiftly retreated towards the inner parts of the town.

The rest of the soldiers blatantly stared at Tenpyo Saka, their gazes filled with lust and hope. However, they were restrained and did not do anything.

In this world, some experts were brazen and unbridled, just a single sentence could earn a person a death sentence. If the expert were to get away scot-free, then the deaths of these guards would

have been for naught.

A man in suit soon came to the gate, his eyes slightly swollen, while wearing a smile. His gaze landed on Li Guang, and naturally swivelled to Tenpyo Saka, before saying: “Brother Li Guang!! Which wind had brought you here? Who might this be?”

As for Yue Zhong, he didn’t even bother sparing him a glance.

Li Guang chuckled and said: “Elder Chen, this is Tenpyo Saka, she’s a new subordinate I’ve gotten under my wing. Tenpyo Saka, hurry and greet Elder Chen Feng Hua.”

Tenpyo Saka had a cold expression as she replied: “How do you do.”

Chen Feng Hua’s eyes flashed with a lustful gaze as he exclaimed: “Good!! Good!!”

He had only ever seen 2 or 3 women more beautiful than this Tenpyo Saka, but their figures were nowhere as sexy as this lady. Especially her large chest that threatened to split out her clothes, causing him to drool.

Chen Feng Hua’s gaze did not move from Tenpyo Saka as he asked Li Guang in an off-hand manner: “Li Guang, did you come to join us this time?”

Tenpyo Saka had to suffer the indecent looks of this middle-aged man and her expression wrinkled in disgust, she really hated the way he was looking at her.

Li Guang’s eyes flashed as he replied: “I’ve come to discuss with Chief Ximen, if the conditions are right, I might be willing to join.”

Right at this time, a dozen men walked over.

The leader was a good-looking man with sword-shaped brows, his demeanor extraordinary. He looked to be about 27 or 28, and when he saw Li Guang, he immediately spoke in a curt but jeering manner: “Isn’t this Li Guang? This boorish thug could also gain

the qualifications to join the alliance? Did Ximen Lie become senile?’

Li Guang laughed coldly and retorted: “I’m a thug? If I’m a thug, at least I’m the head of my thugs. What are you considered, Huang Qi Shan? If you didn’t have your father Chief Huang Xue Yi of the Red Tribe, you would have long since been dragged away to be sold. Your dad isn’t going to be around for long though. When he passes on, I’ll see how to enjoy that little butt of yours.”

Li Guang was after all from the market, and his words were extremely uncouth. It served to infuriate Huang Qi Shan immediately.

His eyes were bloodshot as he barked loudly: “The lot of you, go and beat him to death!! I’ll take responsibility!”

Immediately, the dozens or so thugs behind stepped out, albeit with slow and stupid movements, preparing to act.

At this time, Li Guang retreated one step and revealed a savage smile at Chen Feng Hua: “Elder Chen, these guys want to act on your territory, if you don’t want to put a stop to this, this Senior I would not show them mercy.”

Chen Feng Hua knew exactly what Li Guang was capable of, and knew that if Huang Qi Shan was dead, there would be endless troubles. He immediately called for them to stop: “Enough!!”

Seeing Chen Feng Hua step out, Huang Qi Shan was forced to calm down. He shot Li Guang a venomous glare: “Li Guang, you’ve got guts. Let’s see how you live the next time we meet. Let’s go!”

After that, Huang Qi Shan brought his men and left the area. This was after all Ximen Lai’s territory, and if they were to really fight, the ones at a disadvantage would be Huang Qi Shan themselves.

Chapter 607: Zhao Jing Lei!

Li Guang immediately asked Chen Feng Hua: “Elder Chen, that little bastard Huang Qi Shan just mentioned an alliance? What’s going on? Also, how dare he come here?”

“Li Guang, you should also be clear. Within the Central Plains, us Chinese are not the ones in power. The Huangjin Clan, the Golden Wolf Triad, the Manchu Empire, these bastards are going everywhere attacking the Chinese establishments. Our fellow Han-people would then be treated as slaves.”

“In order to change this, to give our Han-people a better life, our Chief Ximen had decided to step up and throw away his past notions, and established an alliance led by our own Han-people. He hopes to unite the factions of the Han-people, and resist the rest of the powers. With you here, it’ll be perfect. Tomorrow is the day that the alliance will start. Our chief is heroic and magnanimous, and many other valiant heroes have arrived to take part. It would be a good time for you to join our Radiant Sun Triad. Once our Chief Ximen has united the country, then you’re one of the founding fathers.”

When Yue Zhong heard this, he thought to himself: “Alliance? They finally thought of that? Seems like this Ximen Lie is something else, to be able to gather the rest of the powers.”

Uniting the Hans in an alliance, it was truly a decent idea. If they could rally all the Hans in the Central Plains, it would be a power not necessarily weaker than the Huangjin Clan or the other powers.

However, Yue Zhong did not look on it too favorably. After all, everyone had their private ambitions and thoughts, who would be willing to hand over their weapons and equipment to others?

Chen Feng Hua brought Li Guang and the rest to a villa, settling them in before leaving.

Li Guang then asked Yue Zhong: “Leader, Chen Feng Hua will bring us to see Ximen Lie later. Do we act then?”

Yue Zhong replied: “No! Let’s change it to tomorrow. You go and put on a show of bargaining with Ximen Lie first, then join him. I’ll go take a look around, and observe the situation.”

Since Ximen Lie wanted to organize this alliance congregation, Yue Zhong wanted to make use of the chance to put on a big show.

Li Guang replied: “Yes!”

Tenpyo Saka was too beautiful, and in order not to cause any problems, Yue Zhong got her to stay within her room. He himself left and walked about.

On the streets, he began to walk while looking at what Tian Mu Town had to offer. It was similar to the many post-apocalyptic towns that he had already come across on his journeys, with many emaciated survivors in tattered clothes with downcast expressions.

Other than the soldiers, there were few shops, only some simple trading posts were set up. The whole atmosphere was dead, and not a sign of vitality was present.

“Ximen Lie lacks the talent to govern, he’s not a good leader.” Yue Zhong gave Ximen Lie an evaluation silently as he observed the town.

Like many leaders of the different factions, Ximen Lie was obviously troubled by the food issue. At the same time, he only gave rations to those in his army and his supporters. Ordinary survivors were ignored, or treated like slaves. Such a method was good in the sense that it ensured that the food expenditure was kept to a minimal, but the entire town would suffer as a result. All resources were dependent on what was left prior to the apocalypse, and there was no alternative or replenishment of resources. Once they ran out, the faction would crumble.

“Master! Come!! Half a bun, I’ll make you feel good for just half a

bun!”

“One packet of instant noodles, I’ll accompany you for an entire night. You can play with me however you like, whatever you want to do..”

“.....”

At every corner, on every street, a number of women who was reeking of odor, and had not bathed for goodness knows how long, began to surround Yue Zhong as they tried to flaunt themselves.

Yue Zhong walked past them with a deadpan expression. He was sympathetic, but he had no means to rescue them all right now.

All of a sudden, a bunch of kids began to swarm in a certain direction like bees.

Yue Zhong looked towards the direction, only to see a beautiful lady with long black hair and fair skin, as though she had just stepped out of a painting. She seemed about 15 or 16, and wore a saintly smile as she handed out buns to those kids.

A young man of about 15 or 16 stood beside her, dressed in black Mutant Beast leather, a huge blade hanging by his waist. He had a decent stature, and his looks pleasant, but he was complaining at the moment: “Leilei, this is food we went through trouble to get from a neighbouring town, how can you just give them out to these little rascals? Did you forget what we had to do? Ah Xin almost lost his life at the hands of that L3! Now that the Huangjin Clan, Manchu Empire and the Golden Wolf bastards are all expanding, it’s getting harder to find food!”

“Zhang Ying, how many times have I said it, don’t call me Leilei. Call me by my full name, Zhang Jing Lei.” The beautiful girl frowned, before lightly sighing: “I know it’s getting harder, but if we don’t give these kids, they will starve to death. Furthermore, this is from my own portion, what does it have to do with you?”

When Zhang Ying heard those words, he bit his lips, clenching

his fist, while staring at her. He had liked her for a long time already, but she did not reciprocate nor care about it, and this caused him to feel upset.

Another cute girl with a ponytail and some pimples on her face, with fair skin and big eyes stepped up to say: “Leilei, don’t blame Zhang Ying, he’s also concerned about you.”

There were 9 other young men and women who tried to mediate.

“What the hell are you looking at? Be careful or I’ll gouge out your eyeballs!” Zhang Ying suddenly saw Yue Zhong looking over, and his fury, with nowhere to go, were projected on him. He roared out like an enraged lion.

His crush had rejected him and ignored him, and the pent up anger was now being directed at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong glanced at Zhang Ying and shook his head, turning around to leave.

Truthfully, Yue Zhong did not agree with Zhao Jing Lei’s actions. In this world, ration was extremely scarce and precious, one had to be mindful of it. When the team needed food, what would she do then? However, the matter had nothing to do with him, and he had no interest in meddling with a bunch of kids.

“Damn it!! You’re looking for a beating!!” Zhang Ying saw Yue Zhong shaking his head, and he became even more angry, shooting forwards with a speed 11 times that of a person, intending to beat Yue Zhong.

Zhao Jing Lei did not expect Zhang Ying to act against Yue Zhong, and her face fell, shouting: “Stop!! Zhang Ying!!”

Yue Zhong immediately swiveled around, his hands grabbing Zhang Ying’s forehead, his eyes flashing coldly, before flinging Zhang Ying’s entire body towards a wall viciously. “Really! Now, all you little fuckers think you can do anything. Why don’t I send you on your way to Hell, and let you join your family earlier? At

the same time, they can discipline you properly.”

Zhang Ying smashed into a wall like a cannon, and spat out a mouthful of fresh blood. His face turned pale, as he continued to cough out blood.

“What are you doing? You dare to harm our classmate! You’re seeking death!!” 2 of the group shot out, 1 tall the other short, both wielding some strange bone blades as they roared out in fury. They activated their abilities, Wind Twist, and both became like hurricanes, shooting towards Yue Zhong.

Both of these rascals were Evolvers, their Wind Twist skill having been enhanced thrice. When both of them worked together, they could even take down Level 50 Evolvers easily.

“Scram!” Right as they got close to Yue Zhong, he kicked out twice swiftly, his terrifying Strength exploding out, and they both spat out blood as they crumpled to the ground.

Yue Zhong possessed speed that was 25 times that of a normal person, and far surpassed most Agility Evolvers. His combat experience was rich as well, and didn’t need any fancy tactics or skills to deal with those 2 rascals.

“Zhang Ying!” The girl with the ponytail saw Zhang Ying’s ugly expression and he shot out, turning into a shadow. At the next instant, she appeared next to Zhang Ying. Her skill was the rare Level 3 Flash Steps. She had already enhanced the skill 3 times, and could easily appear at a location within 20m.

The girl lifted the injured Zhang Ying up.

“Quick, take him away!! I’ll block him!” Zhao Jing Lei saw how fearsome Yue Zhong was, and how his expression was frightening now, and she pulled out 2 silver blades, and disappeared like a shadow. Instantly, she appeared in front of Yue Zhong, the blades in her hands slashing towards Yue Zhong at a sharp angle.

“Fast! She’s an Agility Evolver!” Facing Zhao Jing Lei’s strike

that was extremely fast, Yue Zhong was finally forced to whisk out his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade to block her attack,

As the 3 blades clashed, a strange force spread from the curved blades of Zhao Jing Lei, as though threatening to spin Yue Zhong's blade away.

After that clash, Zhao Jing Lei's curved blades turned into silver hurricanes and enveloped Yue Zhong.

“Strong! This little girl, her strength is in close combat, and is comparable to the Demons of the Takama-ga-hara!”

Yue Zhong's speed had been enhanced multiple times, and was stronger than Zhao Jing Lei. His experience was also more abundant, and in most cases, he could easily dispatch an Evolver with a single move. However, when exchanging blows with this Zhao Jing Lei, he was actually being suppressed, unable to display his blade skills. The strange force was being exerted on his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade as well, making it hard for him.

Chapter 608: Gold Wolf Riders!

One bespectacled girl gritted her teeth as she activated her ability, Gravity Manipulation, and a strong gravitational force pressed down on Yue Zhong, affecting his movements.

His eyes flashed coldly as he shot a glare at the girl.

When she was struck by his gaze, she felt like a terrifying bloodthirsty beast was staring at her, and her eyes widened in fear, as she retreated a few steps involuntarily.

When Zhao Jing Lei saw this, she shouted in alarm: “Tiantian! No!! Run!!”

Zhao Jing Lei was trying to pressure Yue Zhong with all her strength, and the fact that she could suppress him was due to her naturally awakened Second Order skill Heavenly Demon Blade. If she didn't use this, Yue Zhong could have easily slaughtered her in a move. Just in the few exchanges, she could already feel his unfathomable strength, that was waiting to rear its head.

The moment her words came out the mouth, Yue Zhong flashed and disappeared from in front of her, and a fist smashed into the midriff of the bespectacled girl.

The pretty girl instantly doubled over from the force and crumpled to the ground. When the rest of the youths witnessed this, they stepped back in horror.

Zhao Jing Lei's eyes flashed with a hint of madness and she chased after Yue Zhong like a goose, with her strange blade technique flashing towards him again: “Hurry and escape, all of you!!”

“Your strength is decent! But your discerning ability is truly lacking.”

Yue Zhong activated his own Gravity Manipulation, and a strong gravitational force caused Zhao Jing Lei's entire body to sink.

At the next instant, Yue Zhong had already activated his Shadow Steps, and pushed his speed to the limit, evading Zhao Jing Lei's blow with ease, and his right hand grabbed onto her throat. He then barked coldly: "Throw down your weapon!!"

Zhao Jing Lei's expression turned extremely pale, gripping her silver blades tightly, not willing to let go. Her entire skill relied on these dual blades, and if she were to lose them, her combat strength would be reduced by over 70%.

"Leilei!!"

"Sister Lei!!"

"Let go of her!!"

"....."

The youths all looked helplessly and shouted when they saw Zhao Jing Lei's plight.

Yue Zhong kept his fingers clenched around Zhao Jing Lei's neck, and his voice was thick with killing intent: "I've already gone easy. If you want to continue resisting, you and your friends can forget about leaving alive today."

"Don't hurt them!!" Her face turned pale and she finally released her silver blades.

Looking at the pair of silver blades dropping on the ground, Yue Zhong then released his grip.

He looked at the rest of the youths and whisked out his Stinger: "I'll say it directly! Little rascals, I admire your strength and abilities. The price of offending me is to serve me for 2 years. After that, you'll be free to go."

Zhao Jing Lei's pale countenance finally regained some colour, and she asked: "We truly apologize for offending you today. May we please have another option? We're willing to look for rations as payback."

Yue Zhong aimed the Stinger at the pretty bespectacled girl still doubled over on the ground, his tone icy: “No! Serve me for 2 years, or die here. Your choice.”

Zhao Jing Lei’s strength was truly something else, Yue Zhong didn’t wish for anything untoward to happen the next day.

Zhao Jing Lei gritted her teeth in frustration and stared back at Yue Zhong with a clear gaze: “Fine! I’ll promise you. However, I’ll make myself clear, we will not be your swords to be used for anything against morals! You cannot touch my friends, and must ensure their safety and well-being. You cannot skimp on our resources allocation as well.”

Since the collapse of society, in the world where depravity was slowing consuming humanity, Yue Zhong had never seen such a clear pair of eyes before, and he couldn’t help but be moved. He gave his word and threw a few Life-Saving Grass to her, before saying: “Fine! Come with me! This is for your wounds, give them to your friends, and they’ll recover faster.”

Zhao Jing Lei took up the medicine and hesitated a while, before using it on herself. She did not dare to give things with unknown sources to her friends. She might be kind, but she wasn’t a fool.

A young oval-shaped face woman then suggested: “Sister Lei! Why don’t we run now! I don’t think he’ll be able to catch us!”

The rest looked at her and awaited her decision. They were from the same school prior to the apocalypse, and have been moving together. If it wasn’t for Zhao Jing Lei naturally awakening as an Evolver, they would have perished umpteen times. That was why their faith in her was so strong.

Zhao Jing Lei picked up the pair of blades, and looked at Yue Zhong’s departing back. She hesitated a while, but in the end, shook her head: “No! Let’s just observe for the time-being. Zhang Ying, Lei Tie, Zhao Yi, Tian Tian are all injured, we need some place to rest anyway.”

With a single sentence, the rest of them did not push the case, and followed behind Yue Zhong as they came to the villa.

“What a pretty girl!” The moment they entered, they saw Tenpyo Saka and they were shocked.

Zhao Jing Lei looked at Tenpyo Saka and shifted her gaze to Yue Zhong, becoming more guarded: “This fellow is definitely a pervert.”

Tenpyo Saka looked back at them without any expressions, silently reading her Chinese textbook.

Ever since Takama-ga-hara wasn't willing to use their machines to exchange for Tenpyo Saka, she had become totally withdrawn, and was brought to China by Yue Zhong. He made her study Chinese, and she who had lost faith in what she believed in before gradually became accustomed to listening to Yue Zhong's commands.

He didn't force her to do anything, nor anything she disliked. He gave the basic courtesy as a human being as well. In return, although she didn't express her desire to work for him, she had already silently complied with his orders.

As the villa that Chen Fei Hua had arranged for them was big, Zhao Jing Lei and the rest found a room and moved in, taking care of their injured members.

Not long after, Li Guang who had gone to Ximen Lie's came back and reported to Yue Zhong.

Li Guang began his report: “Leader! As per your instructions, I've agreed to join Radiant Sun Triad. He had even gifted a beauty to pull me closer. Your subordinate did not dare reject and hence accepted the beauty. Your subordinate seeks your understanding.”

Li Guang was also a powerful Evolver who had reached Level 42, and his experience was abundant. Together with his elite archer subordinates, they were considered a decent force out here in the

Central Plains.

Yue Zhong smiled warmly and said: “Don’t worry! Since he had already gifted you a beauty, she’s yours. Those who work for me, will definitely be taken care of.”

Li Guang was overjoyed: “Thank you, Leader!”

There were all sorts of people in this world, and some heads were selfish, and wanted dips on everything their subordinates had. Such leaders would not really gain any true followers.

Yue Zhong and Li Guang continued their discussion.

Within a golden tent far out in the Central Plains, a burly man with a long knife scar on his face wearing a yellow robe and an emperor crown on his head stared out with his gaze fierce and his expression grim. A few men stood in 2 rows on either side in front of him.

This was the Khan of the Great Turkic Empire Wu-er Tuo Tuo. He was already a member of the East Turkestan Separatist Party.

When he had awoken as a natural Evolver, he had swiftly subjugated the rest of the members in the East Turkestan Party and started expanding. Many nationalists and extremists lacked the platform prior to the apocalypse, but when the world changed, it was a good strategy to gather people.

Wu-er Tuo Tuo had then expanded pretty smoothly in the Xinjiang region, but the zombie hordes had continually attacked his base of operations. After countless clashes, they had been defeated and were forced towards the deeper parts of Mongol to resettle and expand again. The main force under their banner was the 40,000 Uyghur youths that he had manipulated into being loyal to him.

Wu-er Tuo Tuo surveyed his men around him and spoke slowly but sternly: “The Radiant Sun Triad’s Ximen Lie has organized a convention of the heroes, in order to form an alliance to defend

against our Gold Wolf Riders. Who's willing to go in This Emperor's name, to take back the heads of these Han dogs, and turn Tian Mu Town into This Emperor's base?"

Ever since he had conquered the East Turkestan Party and proclaimed himself as king, he had started using the term 'This Emperor' to refer to himself, as a form of distinction between him and the common people.

(Translator notes: 朕 - an emperor's way of referring to himself. Some translators use the term 'We', but I'll just make it clear that he calls himself an emperor as an ego-complex thing.)

Another burly man with a deep-set gaze and high nose, stepped out and his voice rang out: "Great Kahn! Dong-er Molei is willing to go in Kahn's stead, to lead men and conquer Tian Mu Town, to kill the men and gift the women and children to Great Kahn!"

Dong-er Molei was also one of the members from the East Turkestan Party, and he killed without batting an eyelid. He was truly a great general, and had helped fight for Wu-er Tuo Tuo all the way. The number of survivors that had died at his hands truly numbered too many to count.

Wu-er Tuo Tuo roared out in laughter: "Good! Dong-er Molei, This Emperor will grant you 4,000 Gold Wolf Riders to attack Tian Mu Town, you must ensure that the grounds bleed with their blood. Gugani, you shall be his second-in-command, and to help him obtain Tian Mu Town.

While the Radiant Sun Triad had thousands of survivors, not everyone had weapons. 4,000 Gold Wolf Riders were more than enough to take down tens of thousands of a motley bunch. Wu-er Tuo Tuo was thus extremely confident in his soldiers.

Another man with a medium-statured who looked like an ordinary Han person replied respectfully: "Yes! My liege! Your subordinate will definitely assist Dong-er Molei!"

Dong-er Molei's expression was solemn as he looked back at Wu-er Tuo Tuo, not saying anything.

Before the apocalypse, their relationship had been good, and could speak freely. However, since proclaiming himself as Emperor, Wu-er Tuo Tuo had thus gained much prestige, and Dong-er Molei did not dare to be on casual terms any longer.

The 4,000 Gold Wolf Riders thus rode out in a cloud of dust.

In a small villa that stood on its own, there were hundreds of people gathered. These were the various solo warriors from all over the plains, as well as some members from the Blue Triad, Red Triad, and various other gangs.

Xinmen Lie had invited all the various heroes together, with the pretext of fending off the other powers with their own Han people, while in fact bolstering his own strength.

In truth, the number of Hans out here in the Central Plains were truly numerous, however, the powers were all scattered, and had no way of contending against the united forces of the Gold Wolf Riders, or the Huangjin Clan, or even the Manchu Empire.

If they truly all gathered, they would become a force to be reckon with, that was larger than the rest of the factions.

It was precisely because of this, that the rest of the factions would choose to band together to annihilate any outstanding Han hero even while fighting amongst themselves.

In the villa, in preparation for the congregation, there was a stage set up, with 10 seats. Below the stage, 2 long tables were set up, where the various heroes had gathered. Only the well-known Han experts had the qualifications to sit at that table. Someone like Yue Zhong who was not well-known around these parts could only stand aside.

Barbequed lamb, beef, milk, were brought out by numerous beautiful servants. The various heroes began to grab the meat and

ate without a care for their image.

After the apocalypse, the lives of these solo wanderers had been extremely tough. Most of the cattle out in the Central Plains were owned by various factions. The game in the wild were tough and vicious Mutant Beasts. In the cities, there were still many zombies roaming about. Even Evolvers faced the possibility of dying. Therefore, these solo wanderers were forced to be bandits, otherwise they would die of hunger. Even in the event that they successfully hunt down some Mutant Beasts, they could only bring it back to sell it to the larger factions who usually exploit them.

Many of them lived meal to meal, now that they were invited to this feast, they would naturally not hold back.

As they ate, the leaders of the other factions eyed each other and began to engage in quarrels. The entire scene was like a huge marketplace. There were many of them who did not like to study when they were younger, and were coarse and boorish people. The curses thrown got more vulgar and coarse as time passed.

There were many strong rice buckets who were here, but at the same time, there were true powerful Evolvers like Zhao Jing Lei.

Yue Zhong stood quietly and observed the people, noting many of the useless loudmouths, but at the same time, discovering some true talents.

Chapter 609: Alliance Meeting!

There were many snakes and dragons mixed into the crowd, and Yue Zhong discovered 12 experts. His senses told him that they were different from the rest.

“Who’s that?” Yue Zhong pointed to one young man of about 21 who was dressed in white, a long sword on his back, his brows thick and powerful, his features unique. There was a proud aura about him, causing Yue Zhong to ask Li Guang.

There were few people who used swords, Yue Zhong mostly came across blade users, as the God and Devil system usually generated the Tang Replica Sword. Of course, there were other sort of weapons that dropped once in awhile. However, in Guang Xi and Hunan, most of the low-level warlords preferred the Tang Replica Swords.

(Translator Note: There are different words for swords and blades in Chinese. The author was referring to this when he talked about blades 刀, even if he referred to them as Tang Replica Swords. The word 剑 refers to this, widely seen in wuxia)

Li Guang looked at the youth and muttered: “That’s the Sword Master, Pi Jian Yi. It’s rumored that he had killed an L3 with a single sword slash. He’s unparalleled in close combat, his sword skills are truly top-notch. No one can win him in a close-combat fight. Any enemy of his had been killed. Of course, he might be arrogant but not stupid. He had never antagonize any major power. I didn’t expect him to come.”

“What about that person?” Yue Zhong looked another burly-looking man, who had a 3m hammer beside him. He was wearing a sleeveless warrior’s clothing, revealing a large amount of chest hair. His entire body was covered in scars, and he was gorging on the meat.

“That’s Big Bear Qin Zhen! He has fearsome strength, and it’s

rumored that the hammer beside him weighs over 500kg. He could easily flatten an L2, and is someone not easy to deal with as well.”

As Li Guang continued to introduce the characters that Yue Zhong took notice of, 10 Enhancers came to the stage and sat down.

The seats on the stage were set up specifically for the various leaders of the major Han factions. Only those who had over a thousand people under them had the qualifications to sit on those seats.

This time, Ximen Lie had invited the leaders of the 10 largest tribes, namely the Heaven’s Wheel Sect, the Scarlet Sun Sect, the Universal Sect, the Heavenly Demon Sect, the Red Triad, the Blue Triad, the Golden Wolf Triad, the Pink Triad, the Green Bamboo Triad, and himself of the Radiant Sun Triad.

Of the 10 leaders, 8 were male, while the leaders of the Pink Triad and Green Bamboo Triad were female. Yue Zhong cast a slightly longer gaze at these 2.

The chief of the Pink Triad was an ordinary woman with an ordinary physique, however, her eyes radiated with intelligence. The leader of the Green Bamboo Triad was a tall woman of 1.9m, her entire body rippling with muscles, her waist thicker than a vat, and her expression grim. It seemed that not all women leaders were as ravishing as Ding Mei or Shanguan Bing Xue.

One middle-aged man who was dressed in a suit and had shiny black hair, with a restrained aura spoke up with a slight smile: “Welcome to the Alliance gathering today, I’m your host, Chief Ximen Lie from the Radiant Sun Triad. I’m honored to meet you heroes.”

The moment he appeared, a strange atmosphere overcame the entire venue, as everyone piped down subconsciously, as all arguments came to a halt.

Yue Zhong could feel the Spiritual pulse from Ximen Lie's words: "Spirit Fluctuations. This is a Spirit-based ability. Seems like Ximen Lie has some moves."

When he finished, the rest of the leaders began to introduce themselves, allowing the rest of the audience to get to know them.

"Everybody! Heed my words! Out here in the Central Plains, the Turkic Empire's Gold Wolf Riders, the Mongol King's Huangjin Clan, and the Manchu Empire 8 Flag's Army have been treating us Han people like sheep. Every day, our fellow Hans people are being assaulted by them. Each time, the men would be killed, the women and children would be whisked away to become slaves, and tortured at their hands. If this goes on, the entire Central Plains will become their hunting grounds, and we Han-people will be the lowest of the low!"

"Our Han-people are hardworking, kind and brave! We're not necessarily worse off than the Turks or Mongols or even the Manchurians! We have hot-blooded warriors, and powerful heroes. As to why we have ended up today's state, is because we have allowed minor squabbles to tear us apart! As long as we work together, we can definitely become the largest power here in the Central Plains, and step over all of the rest!"

"It's precisely due to this, that I've announced this gathering, to form an alliance, gather the various heroes from all over the Central Plains, and work together to deal with the Turks, Mongols or the Manchurians! Thank you!" Ximen Lie's passionate speech resounded all over the venue.

After Ximen Lie finished speaking, the venue broke out in resounding applause.

The other factions were well-known for capturing people of other races as slaves, allowing their own people to lead better lives. Such a strategy would strengthen their own people, while suppressing the other races. Thus, the unity between their own

people would strengthen.

However, it was at the cost of the other races. No one was willing to be a slave. Especially since the world had modernized and received education. The current slaves were all forced against their will due to strength.

When many of those who had smaller factions out in the Central Plains thought about the possibility of their own bases being destroyed, and becoming slaves to the other 3 great factions, they couldn't help but shudder. This was why they all responded to this call to form an alliance.

Zhao Jing Lei heard Ximen Lie's nationalistic words and frowned as she sighed slightly: "Why do we have to eliminate the Turks, Mongols and Manchurians? Aren't we all Chinese? Why must we kill amongst ourselves?"

Yue Zhong eyed the naive girl and responded coolly: "Simple! Everyone just wants to live better lives, no one wants to become anyone's slaves. To those who cannot be reasoned with, only strength can force them to listen. If you don't kill them, they will kill you."

"Only by becoming an existence more powerful than them, will you be able to talk about peace. Since the 3 other factions want to kill us, we should just kill them. Simple as that. Don't make it too complicated."

Yue Zhong did not like the internal strife, however, if there was somebody who chose to block his path, he would not show them any mercy. As long as it was an enemy, he would stop at nothing to eradicate them, regardless of who they were or where they came from. Even if some Han people wanted to bar his path, he would kill.

Since nobody really disagreed or objected, the motion to form an alliance was pushed through, and every faction present agreed to join.

In truth, everyone had already known about this beforehand, and those who had participated were of a mind to join. After all, strength in numbers. Those who weren't interested would not have sent anybody over.

One particular hero called out: "Chief Ximen is a hero of our times, wise and valiant. He had brought the Radiant Sun Triad to constantly fend off the 3 factions, and possesses abundant experience. I vote for him to be our alliance leader, and lead us to defeat the other 3 factions! To unite the Central Plains, to conquer the country and build a new China!!"

"Ximen Lie is wise and valiant, I vote for him to be our leader too!!"

"No way!! I vote for my Red Triad's Chief Huang Xue Yi to be the leader. He's a man of intelligence and had been an official in the government before the apocalypse. He has strong governance skill and experience. With him as the chief, wouldn't the alliance soar quickly?"

"Pei! Huang Xue Yi is an old lecher that lusts after women, he spends his time all over his women, how would he be in charge of the alliance? I reckon the chief of the Golden Wolf Triad Mu Tang to be the Alliance Leader. Chief Mu is young and promising, his energy strong and full of vitality, and his combat prowess truly unrivalled amongst his peers. As long as he is the Chief, the alliance would definitely become powerful!"

"....."

One by one, the various members of the audience began to argue for their own nominations, with many of the secret accomplices that the leaders had sent out beforehand to try and rally for their own backing.

The leaders watched the commotion without any sign of stopping them.

Sword Master Pi Jian Yi stepped out and his voice rang: “Everybody, silence!”

His voice carried a strange force that immediately overpowered the entire venue.

Everyone’s gaze fell onto Pi Jian Yi.

He spoke arrogantly: “Out here, the strong prey on the weak. I feel, that the Alliance Leader should be the strongest person! Let me suggest a competition of martial arts, to compete for the strongest position, and the winner will be the leader!”

“I agree! A competition is great!”

“Me too!”

“.....”

Those rowdy men who had been hollering over one another immediately burst out in appreciative laughter.

One hero stood up to shake his head: “I object, what era are we in? Martial Arts competition? A person strength could not single-handedly fight an entire army. I recommend that Chief Ximen with the most number of survivors under him to be the leader!”

“.....”

The entire venue again fell into chaos. Many argue fervently. These were all leaders of their own factions with survivors depending on them, who would be willing to give their position of authority up?

Yue Zhong observed coldly, and he knew that the solo wander Pi Jian Yi would definitely not be able to become the leader. It was likely that it would be one of those in the larger factions.

Chapter 610: Attack of the Gold Wolf Riders!

“Everyone, quieten down!” Ximen Lie’s sonorous voice rang out, and the noise soon died down. He then wore a smile and said: “Alright. Let’s do this. We shall all vote, the person who garners the most vote will become the leader, it’s the fairest. What does everyone think?”

“Good!! Let’s do that!!”

“Alright! That is democratic!!”

“.....”

Many people sounded their approval, and the suggestions of those solo warriors like Pi Jian Yi were suppressed.

Hearing the cheers, Ximen Lie’s face blossomed in a strange smile. Most of the powers here had been pulled over by him, as long as they went with this method, he would be sure to become the alliance chief.

Right at this moment, a soldier suddenly hastened up the podium and reported: “Chief!! Not good! The Gold Wolf Riders are rushing over now!! There’re over thousands of them!!”

“What?! The Gold Wolf Riders are here?!” Ximen Lie’s face changed when he heard that.

The Radiant Sun Sect had 7,000 people, of which, most of them were survivors. The true warriors and fighters were only about 800 people. And out of these 800, only 200 had guns, and about 20 machine guns.

Gold Wolf Riders were the elites of the Turkic Empire, and they had guns. Goodness knows how many establishments had been raided by them. They were ferocious and violent, and when Ximen Lie heard their name, his expression turned ugly.

“Gold Wolf Riders!!”

“Are they here?!”

“How did it become like this?! I wouldn’t have come if I knew!!”

“It’s over!! We’re over!!”

“.....”

When they heard that the Gold Wolf Riders were on their way, the various small-time leaders and solo wanderers became frightened. The infamous Gold Wolf Riders were associated with death and massacre.

Many notable Han experts had fallen at their hands. After all, no matter how strong a person was, he couldn’t stand up against an army. Furthermore, in most of the clashes, the Gold Wolf Riders had their fair share of experts.

Huang Xue Yi, the chief of Red Triad, suddenly shouted: “I recommend Chief Ximen to be the leader of the alliance!!”

Mu Tang of the Golden Wolf Triad also exclaimed: “Right! Chief Ximen is truly a hero, he should be able to lead us to defeat the enemy!”

The leaders of the 10 largest triads who had been keeping quiet, began to vote for Ximen Lie to become the Alliance Leader.

If the Gold Wolf Riders were to really breach Tian Mu Town, then the Alliance Leader would surely die. The alluring role of the Alliance Leader was now a sacrificial position, avoided by all of them.

“A bunch of fools!! If they were to breach, you think you can live on?” Ximen Lie was not an idiot, and he knew what they were after. His face, however, maintained a peaceful expression as he replied: “The matter of the alliance chief is too important, we will need to reconsider this. I feel that we should get someone with abundant experience to lead us. Chief Huang, you’re the perfect person for this, only you can take on this role.”

Huang Xue Yi immediately rejected: “No! No!! This time, you organized this gathering, you’re the one most suitable to be the leader. Don’t reject the appointment, otherwise, you’re truly letting down all of the heroes here!!”

As the various leaders pushed and pulled, Yue Zhong stepped out and barked out: “Since you all aren’t willing, I’ll take it on!”

Ximen Lie’s eyes brightened up, as he spoke to Yue Zhong amicably: “This little brother, how should we address you?”

Yue Zhong replied indifferently: “Yue Zhong!”

“Courageous!!” Ximen Lie praised, and exchanged glances with the rest of the leaders: “This young hero Yue Zhong has courage beyond his peers, and famed, I recommend him to be the first Alliance Leader, what does everyone think?”

“Good!! Good!! I agree!!”

“I agree!!”

“.....”

The rest of them expressed their consent, looking at Yue Zhong as though pitying him as a dead fool.

Without any hesitation, Yue Zhong immediately called on the 12 people he had taken note of: “Good! I’m now the Alliance Chief. Pi Jian Yi, Qin Zhen, Zhou Yi, Jiang Yi, Gu Tao, Pan Sheng, Luo Ding, He Yi, Jiang Fang, Pan Ling, Pan Da Shi, Zhou Mu. The 12 of you will form the Guards, joining my troops and strength. Come with me to the frontlines to kill the enemies. Your direct supervisor will be this lady, Tenpyo Saka.”

Yue Zhong swept his gaze across the 12 of them, before saying: “Those who’re willing to join me in killing those bastards, come over, those who don’t, you better scram far!”

He then spoke to the leaders of the factions with a tone of finality: “As for you guys! All the triads will now be as they are, the

rest of the warriors here are to form the Dragon Fang Battalion. The Dragon Fang Battalion will be under the charge of Li Guang. Li Guang, stay behind and organize them. Ximen Lie, the rest of you, come to the frontlines with me.”

At this time, one person with a weird temper and disposition stepped out from the hundreds of warriors: “Who the fuck are you? How dare you command us?”

Yue Zhong whisked out his Stinger and pulled the trigger without batting an eyelid.

Peng!

Following the loud gunshot, the man’s brain was splattered all over the ground, his headless corpse crumpling.

He then swept his gaze past everybody with a strong killing intent billowing: “I’m now the Alliance Chief of the Great Han Alliance. I have taken on the responsibility to lead everyone to destroy the 3 other factions, and have the authority to mobilize everyone here. Those who disobey, will be considered as traitors, and disloyal dogs. Death to those people, and their families will be branded as slaves. Anyone else has any opinions?”

Seeing how Yue Zhong had disposed of the one guy that had just questioned him, everyone’s heart was chilled to the very core. They had seen how fast his actions were, and not many could actually make out his movements.

“Damn it! Did I just invite a wolf into the den?” Ximen Lie watched Yue Zhong, his heart filled with a growing chill. He turned to eye Li Guang, and had a bad feeling about this.

The rest of the 9 leaders saw how decisive and clean Yue Zhong had dealt with opposition, and their hearts were also shocked. However, with the imminent attack by the Gold Wolf Riders, and the fact that Yue Zhong’s strength seemed to be beyond their imagination, they maintained their cool.

As for the 12 experts pointed out especially by Yue Zhong, they were filled with different emotions. Initially, they had viewed him with contempt and disregard, but the moment he displayed his strength and charisma, their attitudes towards him changed.

“If no one has any other views, then let’s move! Come with me!” Yue Zhong barked out coldly, and left the hall.

Ximen Lie and the rest of the leaders followed after.

Out of the 12 that Yue Zhong had called for, 10 hesitated a while, before following him as well, leaving behind Pi Jian Yi who had a strange expression, and a young monk.

The monk looked towards Pi Jian Yi, before placing his palms together and said: “Amitabha! This small monk here would have to engage in killing after all! Brother Pi, this small monk will make a move first.” He then marched out right after Yue Zhong.

Pi Jian Yi’s countenance flickered before he gritted his teeth and chased after as well: “Ah forget it!! This time, it’s to go kill those bastard! It’s definitely not because I’m obeying his orders!!”

Tian Mu Town’s fortification was pretty decent, and since Ximen Lie knew the dangers of being in the Central Plains, he had no way of obtaining decent firepower, hence he focused on the fortifications.

Yue Zhong led the people towards a high vantage point. His eyesight had been enhanced, and could clearly see the approaching Gold Wolf Riders in the distance.

On the platform, when the rest of the leaders caught sight of the approaching enemies, their faces were extremely ugly. This was the infamous Gold Wolf Riders army!

Yue Zhong’s face remained impassive, as he waved his hands, and pulled out a Barrett Sniper rifle. He took a quick aim and fired.

Peng!

Following that gunshot, one rider was immediately pierced through the chest and fell from his horse.

It was a difficult feat even for Yue Zhong to get a headshot on riders at such a distance away. However, aiming for the body was definitely easier. He didn't need to specially kill them after all, as surviving casualties were more of a problem than dead comrades.

Yue Zhong killed 3 more riders and ordered coldly: "Convey my orders, all snipers are to attack!"

Zhou Yi, one of the 12, stepped out silently with his Falcon Sniper, and began sniping.

Peng!

Peng!

Under his deadly aim, the Gold Wolf Riders began to fall one by one. His speed of sniping was even faster than Yue Zhong by 3 times.

"Snipers!! Snipers, attack!!" Ximen Lie also hollered out.

Within the Radiant Sun Triad there were 5 snipers, at the same time, another 13 snipers from the rest of the 9 great triads stepped forwards and began firing.

Under the rain of bullets, a number of strong killers of the Gold Wolf Riders fell in pools of their own blood.

The devastation caused by 20 elite snipers was truly scary, within a while, over 80 Gold Wolf Riders had fallen.

Seeing this, Dong-Er Molei's eyes turned bloodshot and he barked: "Charge!! Everyone charge!! As long as we charge, it will be our world at our fingertips! After conquering Tian Mu Town, you guys will be able to do whatever y'all want for 3 days. The first to enter the town and kill them would be awarded 10 bulls, 2 beautiful virgins, and a promotion of 3 ranks!!"

Under that passionate riling and the attraction of the rewards,

the Gold Wolf Riders let out a resounding cheer and began to charge towards Tian Mu Town like a gust of wind.

Right as they were about to breach the town and unleash a massacre, half circles appeared all around the wooden fence surrounding Tian Mu Town, revealing numerous gunmen, the firepower intended to support the defense.

From the fortification, a hail of bullets rained out, blanketing the approaching Gold Wolf Riders.

Chapter 611: Fierce Dong-Er Molei!

“Haha! What a fool!! What era are we already in, still using such tactics to breach the town!!”

“Scram back and go suck a tit!! Fools!!”

“Hahaha, those fools actually dare charge in a city on horseback, it’s the first time I’ve seen such idiocy!!”

“So, it turns out that the infamous Gold Wolf Riders are only soso!”

“.....”

When the various warriors on the platform looked at how the Gold Wolf Riders were throwing themselves at the city while being punched full of holes, their fear in their eyes dissipated, instead, they began roaring with laughter.

Ximen Lie stared at those riders and his eyes were filled with contempt: “Their prestige truly surpasses them!! Who would have known that the famed Gold Wolf Riders had actually been turned into livestock for slaughter in front of my Tian Mu Town!”

Huang Xue Yi of the Red Triad was the one that spoke fairly: “Theses Gold Wolf Riders are well-known for their drawn out battles, while breaching a city isn’t really their strength. The current leader of this troop must have been too arrogant, and thought they could charge in and end this quickly.”

It was as per Huang Xue Yi’s words. If it were out in the wild, the 4,000 elite soldiers of the Gold Wolf Riders could definitely crush the forces of Tian Mu Town. However, under the circumstances where they lacked the heavy firepower, it was pure stupidity to use the riders themselves to try and charge down the city walls.

“The leader of the Gold Wolf Riders wouldn’t be this dumb right?” Yue Zhong continued to take down the Gold Wolf Riders one by one, but he continued to observe them carefully. He had a

feeling that these warriors weren't so simple, otherwise, how could so many Han factions fall at their hands?

At this distance, Yue Zhong's accuracy was terrifying. Each and every shot of his would be a headshot.

Dong-Er Molei looked his troops falling one by one, his eyes bloodshot as he screamed out: "Saint Wolf Riders!! Charge!! Kill these Han dogs! The entire Central Plains belong to our great Turkic Empire!! Long Live the Great Turkic Empire!!"

"Long live the Great Turkic Empire!!"

"Long live the Great Turkic Empire!!"

"....."

The Gold Wolf Riders began to roar out with passion and fervor. They had been totally brainwashed by Dong-Er Molei, and had become ardent supporters of the rise of the Turkic Empire. To them, dying on the battlefield for the cause of the Turkic Empire was an honor.

In this apocalypse, with the crumbling of society, and corruption of morals and principles, everyone did not know what the future holds. Amidst that fear, many seek some form of hope. That was why triads and sects appeared. These warriors of the Gold Wolf Triad had all been ordinary Turkic Uyghur youths, however, under the brainwashing of Dong-Er Moleo, they had become passionate extremists for their empire.

In truth, Yue Zhong had such forces within his subordinates as well. Those Youth Guards that he created usually consisted of his ardent supporters. They were willing to fight to the death for him. The younger they were, the more hot-blooded. In the recent history of China, it was due to many passionate and hot-blooded youths that sacrificed their blood and sweat to help form China.

Suddenly, a warrior charged out from the midst of the 4,000 Gold Wolf Riders, his entire body decked in yellow, with a wolf

possessing a single horn sewn on his chest. These warriors with the single-horn wolves on their chest were the Saint Wolf Riders amongst the Gold Wolf Riders, the elites of the elites.

A bullet slammed into the body of one Saint Wolf Rider, causing him to fall on the ground. However, he stood up after a while, and continued onward, making his way for Tian Mu Town like a zombie.

The 200 Saint Wolf Riders braved the rain of bullets and charged right at the gates of Tian Mu Town. They raised their fingers and pointed to the walls, and the numerous Ground Spike Rings on their fingers lit up, as countless earth spikes shot from the ground, piercing the soldiers within the defense bunkers.

Within the bunkers, the wretched screams sounded out, and the firepower of Tian Mu Town decreased substantially.

Seeing this, the expressions of the people within the walls turned ugly. If the defensive bunkers were taken out, then everyone within the town would definitely face death.

Yue Zhong eyed the experts of the 10 great factions and ordered: “Ximen Lie, Fei Tu, Zhao Li, Gu Li Xian, Huang Xue Yi, Mu Tang, Hua Yi, Dong Feng, Zhang Yuan Yuan, Ma Bu Lie, bring your men and come with me. Kill all Gold Wolf Riders that breach the city. Li Guang, prepare the reinforcements, without my order, do not move them! Charge with me, those who don’t will die!”

After that, Yue Zhong led the 12 Guards towards the battlefield.

Hearing Yue Zhong’s orders, the eyes of the 10 leaders flashed with displeasure, but seeing Yue Zhong charge into the frontlines himself, they had nothing to say, and could only grit their teeth to follow.

“Go die!! Han dog!!”

The moment Yue Zhong appeared on the battlefield, 4 Saint Wolf Riders bellowed and raised their curved blades, shooting towards

Yue Zhong and swinging down like meteors.

Yue Zhong pulled out his Black Tooth Blade that had been enhanced till Level 5, and easily met their blows, his blade slashing across their bodies.

At the next instant, all 4 were sliced in 2, their blood and organs splattering all over the ground. It was a gory sight.

After disposing of those 4 in a second, he walked towards the rest of the Saint Wolf Riders, and his blade continued to flash about, as the Saint Wolf Rider experts began to fall apart in halves!

“Sick!! This man dared to take the lead, he truly does possess the qualities to lead as an Alliance Chief!”

The 12 Guards that were following behind Yue Zhong saw how easily he was slaughtering the Saint Wolf Riders and were shocked.

However, they were peak experts out here in the Central Plains as well, being powerful Evolvers, each of their levels exceeding 56. They were naturally proud and arrogant. Watching Yue Zhong slaughter the soldiers, each of them suddenly felt the competitive to try and outdo one another, and they all charged at the Saint Wolf Riders.

One Saint Wolf Rider raised his huge hammer and charged at Pi Jian Yi with a wind-like speed, his hammer swinging fast.

“Seeking death!” Pi Jian Yi’s eyes flashed with an icy light, and he shot forwards, his sword at his waist slashing out like a poisonous snake. Its speed was faster than a shooting star, and the unfortunate rider and his mount seemed to be placed through a meat grinder, as they were chopped up within seconds.

After explosively killing that Saint Wolf Rider, Pi Jian Yi was still untouched, without a single speck of dust nor dirt. It was truly an awesome and carefree sight.

On the other side, Big Bear Qin Zhen was swinging his own 3m hammer, like a human-sized tank as the 500kg hammer was

basically dancing around like a needle, but the unfortunate Saint Wolf Riders were pulverized beneath that weight.

Pan Ling, an ordinary looking middle-aged woman who was dressed in black armor, wielded a Bronze Bow and fired continually at the Saint Wolf Riders, knocking them down.

“Amitabha! Forgive my sins! Forgive my sins! Please die!” The monk Pan Sheng continued to strike out with his fists empowered by some art, blasting the Saint Wolf Riders off the mounts, while their insides imploded from the terrifying strength.

The leaders of the 10 factions had also led their own men into the fray. By relying on the pressure of the bunkers, the majority of the Gold Wolf Riders were unable to charge into the town yet, otherwise, they would all be buried.

Yue Zhong and his team had easily killed over 200 of the Gold Wolf Riders elite warriors. Such a loss was extremely devastating to the Gold Wolf Riders. Should they breach the city, they would surely unleash their wrath and pent up frustrations. There would only be one outcome, that was a massacre!

The leaders of the 10 factions have heard about the exploits of the 3 empires, and they dreaded to think of their own fates.

The Red Triad's chief Huang Xue Yi had also charged into the battle, his ability was the Firearms Manipulation. He wielded dual guns, and continued to fire without stopping, causing numerous Saint Wolf Riders to lose their heads. These Saint Wolf Riders had thick armor over their bodies, but their faces had no protection.

The 20 Red Triad experts beside Huang Xue Yi had formed a small circle to protect him, and supported him with all sorts of other abilities. They managed to wipe out dozens of the Saint Wolf Riders, and only lost 3 of their members to the enemy. They were not overly frenzied in their charge, instead, they proceeded with caution, and focused their attacks, bringing the Saint Wolf Riders down one by one.

All of a sudden, Dong-Er Molei, whose entire body was covered in the fresh blood of his enemies, stared at Huang Xue Yi and his group with a ferocious stare like a demon as he growled: “Just based on you trash? Han dogs, you dare to kill me subordinates, today you will all be buried here!!”

“Kill him!” Huang Xue Yi stared at Dong-Er Molei, his heart overcome with a thick, icy intent. He hollered once, and fired continuously with his guns.

Dong-Er Molei’s huge mace swung out and deflected the bullets. By the time the mace was back on the ground, there was a bronze ghost mask on his face.

There were 7 experts well-versed in shooting beside Huang Xue Yi as well, and they all began to fire non-stop.

Rounds after rounds rained on the body of Dong-Er Molei, serving only to bounce off his body, as though there was no effect.

“Go to hell!” Dong-Er Molei laughed savagely, and activated his Charge ability, instantly making for Huang Xue Yi, his momentum building up. At first, it was 6 times the speed of a normal person. In just 4 breaths of time, it had risen to about 23 times that of a person.

One of the high-level Enhancers beside Huang Xue Yi activated his ability, Rock Wall, causing an earthen wall to materialize in front of Huang Xue Yi.

“Peng!” Dong-Er Molei’s mace slammed into the wall, causing it to disintegrate entirely, and he appeared in front of Huang Xue Yi, laughing savagely, and swung the huge mace downwards viciously.

A look of despair flashed past Huang Xue Yi’s eyes, when suddenly a bright shield of light appeared in front of him, protecting him.

The huge mace of Dong-Er Molei slammed into the shield of light, shattering it, before continuing in its trajectory, and

pulverized Huang Xue Yi into minced meat.

After smashing Huang Xue Yi dead, he quickly swung it all around him, and killed 6 other Enhancers. When the forces of the Red Triad saw that things were turning bad, they quickly scattered.

At this time, 50 Saint Wolf Riders charged out from behind Dong-Er Molei and chased the Red Triad members down.

Dong-Er Molei's eyes lit up in bloodlust as he roared: "Kill!! Kill!! Kill!! Kill!! Kill all the Han dogs!!"

"Kill! Kill! Kill!"

The 50 Saint Wolf Riders roared out after him.

With an enraged bellow, Dong-Er Molei led his forces towards the Blue Triad.

"No!!!" The chief of the Blue Triad Zhang Yuan Yuan also had a look of despair, before the huge mace came swinging down on his head, smashing him dead.

Blood splattered all over Dong-Er Molei's body, giving him a terrifying appearance.

"Haha!! Han dogs are weak!! Haha!!" Dong-Er Molei roared out with mad laughter in the midst of corpses, looking like a demon.

Dong-Er Molei was after all the most prominent Evolver amongst the Gold Wolf Riders, being a Strength and Endurance dual-attribute Evolver. At the same time, he possessed many strength-based skills and abilities. Many experts had fallen at his hands. He led the Saint Wolf Riders as they rampaged all over the battlefield, killing the leaders of the Scarlet Sun Sect and Universal Sect. Many of the Gold Wolf Riders following him charged through Tian Mu Town.

At this time, the battle had reached a powerful climax, every second, there would be Gold Wolf Riders being killed, at the same

time, the various heroes and experts of the triads and sects were also dying.

Under Dong-Er Mo Lei's heavy assault, the remaining 6 triads were being beaten back, and their morale was decreasing.

Waving his mace, Dong-Er Molei charged through the ranks of the remaining 6 triads, smashing a warrior into pulp. He suddenly felt a huge sense of crisis, and twisted his body, as a shield of light appeared in front of his body.

Hong!

A Stinger bullet round smashed into the shield of light, causing it to shudder.

Dong-Er Molei turned and saw Yue Zhong eyeing him coldly with the Stinger in his hands.

"It's you!! Damn Han dog, you dare to try assassinate me!! Watch how I tear you into pieces!!" Dong-Er Molei laughed savagely, and activated his Charge ability again, making his way for Yue Zhong like a human tank.

The 50 Saint Wolf Riders beside Dong-Er Molei was made up of men and women, and were top Enhancers and Evolvers of the Turkic Empire. They followed after Dong-Er Molei, charging for Yue Zhong and his 12 experts.

Chapter 612: Repelling the Gold Wolf Riders!

The warriors by Dong-Er Molei's side were all peak experts of the Turkic Empire. Among them, 8 of them possessed a combat strength not weaker than Pi Jian Yi. The remaining 42 might not necessarily be a match for Pi Jian Yi and the rest individually, but as a team, they were more than enough to deal with them.

Both sides immediately went all out in a crazy slaughter, as terrifying sword beams, shadow flickers, summoned beasts, flashing of silhouettes, rising flame pillars and all sorts of abilities were all exhibited.

Dong-Er Molei had become a terrifying human-shaped tank that was constantly using his Charge ability, making a beeline for Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a cold killing intent, as he activated his Art of Fear, and a terrifying pressure assaulted Dong-Er Molei's mind.

The Art of Fear skill was the bet to deal with Strength and Agility-type Enhancers. If the opponent did not take care of his Spirit, no matter how high their Strength or Agility, they would be instantly killed by Yue Zhong.

That powerful spiritual attack blasted Dong-Er Molei, and in response, a white light radiated, causing the attack to dissipate.

"It's useless!! All Spirit-based attacks are useless to me! Fool!!" Dong-Er Molei's speed was enhanced under his Charge attack, and had reached 25 times that of a normal human. He grinned savagely, and his heavy mace swung up, intending to crush Yue Zhong with a Mt. Tai-like strength.

With the support of his ability, and the crazy speed he had reached, the mace swung down at a speed that broke the sound-barrier. So far, not a single person had been able to withstand a

single strike of his.

A powerful body, terrifying strength, in addition to the thrice-enhanced Charge ability, this was the reason why Dong-Er Molei was widely feared on the battlefield.

Yue Zhong's pupils constricted and he activated his Shadow Steps, his body flashing to one side, and the Black Tooth Blade swing out wildly.

‘Dang!’ A huge sound of metals coming in contact rang out.

The heavy hammer of Dong-Er Molei was knocked back by Yue Zhong's counter, while Yue Zhong himself felt his arms go numb from the 20 times strength of Dong-Er Molei. His Black Tooth Blade almost flew out of his hands.

After dodging that deadly blow, Yue Zhong whisked out his Stinger with insane speed, instantly firing 6 shots at Dong-Er Molei's head.

A shield of light appeared from Dong-Er Molei's body, and blocked the 6 Stinger shots before collapsing.

“Interesting! Take this!!” He roared out in mad laughter, activating his ability Giant's Blow. In an instant, his Strength and Agility was enhanced by 40 points, and he swung down with a force that threatened to tear the fabric of space.

Level 3 Giant's Blow, it could bolster the user's next attack by enhancing the Agility and Strength greatly. This was one of the most overpowering skills Dong-Er Molei had in his arsenal.

He was different from a lone warrior, with the status as one of the leaders in the Turkic Empire, he had access to resources and skill books. He naturally chose suitable techniques that complemented his path of combat.

As for most lone warriors, they would usually learn whatever skills they could. Hence, there were cases of warriors with skill that did not complement one another. This was one of the largest

obstacle for the majority of lone warriors to become top experts.

Facing that impending blow, Yue Zhong remained expressionless, he leaped back a few meters, and dodged that blow. After that, he cast the Gravity Manipulation skill on him, and a powerful gravitational pull weighed down on Dong-Er Molei, causing his body to sink.

“Two-times gravity? Just this is useless!!” Dong-Er Molei laughed coldly and charged straight for Yue Zhong again.

Yue Zhong continued to retreat while reloading the Stinger, and fired another 6 shots.

Dong-Er Molei swung his huge hammer up over his face to protect himself, continuing his charge. The 6 bullets blasted his body, causing his clothes to be ripped, revealing an inner Type 3 Mutant Beast hide.

The Stinger had already been enhanced to a Level 5 Treasure, but it still couldn't penetrate the hide of a Type 3 Beast. However, the resulting force of the bullets would not be negated. To think that Dong-Er Molei was seemingly unaffected by it. This showed how fearsome this man was.

“It hurts!! Die, bastard!!” Dong-Er Molei's face twisted in pain, and roared out in agony. He then activated his Giant's Blow again, in conjunction with his Charge. This caused his speed to reach 29 times that of a person. The hammer in his hands became a meteor that shot towards Yue Zhong.

At this point, Dong-er Molei's speed was almost on par with Yue Zhong. This blow was sure to hit Yue Zhong. Yue Zhong had no choice but to raise his Black Tooth Blade to parry, and do his best to meet the force.

Dang!!

Following the loud sound of contact, the Black Tooth Blade was sent flying from Yue Zhong's hands due to the recoil, and he

himself was sent knocked back.

“Haha!” Having gained the upper hand, Dong-Er Molei roared out in mad laughter, and continued to use his Charge, rushing for Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong was in mid-air, and his arms were still smarting from the earlier clash. If it wasn't for his Endurance, his hands might have been destroyed by that earlier blow.

As Yue Zhong was pressurized by Dong-Er Molei, the rest of the battlefield had also reached a crucial point.

Pi Jian Yi was being suppressed by a expert with yellow hair. His sword beams were shooting everywhere, being matched by his opponent's blade beams. Both parties were equal, neither gaining an advantage over the other.

Pan Sheng was being dogged by a melee expert as well, both fists meeting each other, their legs clashing every once in awhile. The sounds of their clashes were explosive, and being peak close-combat experts, it was unclear to whom victory would belong to in a short time.

Big Bear Qin Zhen was being tied down by a voluptuous beauty who was decked in leather, her hair tied up in a ponytail, and her hands wielding dual blades. Her speed reached 18 times that of a person, and her movement speed was like the wind, constantly sending out cautionary blows to test Qin Zhen's strength.

Qin Zhen roared out constantly in frustration, but he could not do anything. He had no way of chasing the woman, and if he was not careful, she would breach his defence and forced him to a pathetic state.

Tenpyo Saka used her Second Order Stealth and her capabilities to assassinate 2 Saint Wolf Riders, before she was held at bay by the rest of them.

These Saint Wolf Riders were all experts with abundant

experience. 3 Agility-based Evolvers, 1 Spirit-based Evolver, and 2 Strength-based Evolver formed a small group that surrounded her as they unleashed torrential attacks, forcing her to be at a disadvantage. Of the 6, she could definitely deal with them individually, but when they joined forces, it was truly hard for her to exhibit her strengths.

The rest of the experts were also forced at a standstill by the various peak experts of the Saint Wolf Riders.

By now, the experts of the 10 great triads had already retreated from the center of the battlefield, choosing to go after the ordinary Gold Wolf Riders.

Although they had been forced to enter the battlefield, they weren't willing to sacrifice their own lives for Yue Zhong. As long as those soldiers of the Gold Wolf Riders weren't allowed to rally, they were of no threat to the experts. Hence, they acted out, killing many of the Gold Wolf Riders.

In truth, many of the Gold Wolf Riders had already begun to penetrate the town from the bunkers.

By acting against them, those experts were able to keep these Gold Wolf Riders at bay.

"I need to end this quickly!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly while in mid-air, and pulled out his Electromagnetic Gun, and fired once at the charging Dong-Er Molei.

The moment the gun appeared in Yue Zhong's hands, Dong-er Molei immediately felt a sense of dread. He ignored the backlash of cancelling his skill, and forced it to stop, spitting out a mouthful of blood, as he dodged to the side.

A bright flash of light appeared, and the next instant, Dong-er Molei's right shoulder was blasted apart, his entire right arm falling to the ground.

"What is that weapon? How is it so destructive?!" Dong-Er

Molei's eyes were wide with shock, as he was able to even withstand the force of cannons, yet he was now injured by this strange weapon, even losing his right arm. He could feel the impending threat of death.

Since he lost his arm to this fearsome weapon, he was truly feeling the possibility of death.

Yue Zhong regained his balance after that strike and aimed once more.

At the moment, Dong-Er Molei instantly activated his strongest skill, the Second Order Werewolf Transformation, and he instantly transformed into a werewolf towering at over 2m, his entire body rippling with powerful muscles.

After transforming into the werewolf, his muscles tensed, and he quickly leaped into the air, escaping towards the distance with his 26 times speed. He only left a single word as he fled: "Retreat!!"

As strong as Yue Zhong was, he could not lock onto a werewolf with 26 times speed hellbent on escaping. He quickly adjusted his Electromagnetic Gun to fire at another Strength-based Evolver wielding a huge hammer.

With a bright flash, the Saint Wolf Rider's body was instantly blasted apart, his limbs flailing.

Witnessing this, the hearts of the rest of the Saint Wolf Riders turned cold, and they lost their will to fight on, turning around to retreat.

Yue Zhong's took out his Stinger in his left hand, while he fired 6 shots to kill off 6 Saint Wolf Riders. His eyes then narrowed, and he activated his Art of Fear, sending a powerful Spirit attack towards the beautiful woman engaging Big Bear Qin Zhen.

A terrifying illusion enveloped the beautiful Evolver, causing her to faint instantly.

Chapter 613: Aisin Gioro - Xuan Zhen!

Tenpyo Saka lead the peak experts who had just joined Yue Zhong to chase after the escaping Saint Wolf Riders, killing another 15 of them. The rest managed to escape albeit with great difficulty.

The moment the Saint Wolf Riders dispersed, Yue Zhong brought out a heavy-machine gun and begun to spray at the Gold Wolf Riders.

Those Gold Wolf Riders who had just charged into Tian Mu Town had no way out without the Saint Wolf Riders, and they continued to stay within the bunkers, before being wiped out by Yue Zhong's subordinates and the 10 great triads.

“Retreat!!”

“Retreat!!”

“.....”

Gugani saw the situation turning bad, and quickly gave the order to retreat.

The moment the Gold Wolf Riders heard that order, they abandoned the other corpses and quickly fled Tian Mu Town.

Yue Zhong then quickly ordered Ximen Lie to organize a team to pick up all that was left by the Gold Wolf Riders, and to organize another team of the Tian Mu Town survivors to begin repairs.

The Gold Wolf Riders had retreated from Tian Mu Town, but they only retreated beyond a few kilometers, and did not actually leave.

Gugani came and saw Dong-Er Molei missing his right arm, and spoke with an unfriendly tone: “Dong-Er Molei, what the fuck happened?”

By retreating, whatever the Gold Wolf Riders had sacrificed was

for naught. They had left over 700 corpses of their comrades back there. Every time he thought to the pointless deaths of their 700 elites, Gugani's mind was filled with fear.

Those elites were the core strength of the Great Turkic Empire. By losing 700 Gold Wolf Riders, this was a huge blow to them. What was more scary was that even after such a heavy price, they did not manage to conquer Tian Mu Town. They were sure to be punished heavily upon their return.

Dong-Er Molei stared back at Gugani and hollered: "Shut up!! You fucking useless half-blood trash that rely on women to get to your position!! In Tian Mu Town, there's an expert with all sorts of technologically advanced weapons. Our troops are not meant to breach cities, what the fuck did you expect?"

Dong-Er Molei was shifting all the responsibility to Gugani, in actual fact, he was the first to charge at Tian Mu Town, and he was the one who rallied his troops to charge at Tian Mu Town. If it wasn't for Yue Zhong bringing the Han experts under his banner, Tian Mu Town might truly have fallen at his hands. Now that he had failed, he vented his anger and frustration of his failure to Gugani.

Gugani's countenance flashed with anger, before he lowered his head silently. He was indeed a mixed blood from Han and Uyghur descent. Before the apocalypse, it wouldn't mean much.

However, the current Great Turkic Empire was very anal about blood purity. Because of his mixed-blood status, Gugani was often ostracized. If it wasn't for his quick wit, and his offerings of a few beauties to Wu-Er Tuotuo, in addition to his skills, he wouldn't have been able to climb to his position.

Even then, the rest of the Uyghur people still looked down on him, and would call him bastard. It was only in front of Wu-Er Tuotuo that they minded their words.

A savage and fierce glint flashed in Dong-Er Molei's eyes as he

spat: “Tian Mu Town cannot be conquered for now!! We shall retreat for the time-being, and go launch a sneak attack on Aga Town.”

Gugani gasped in shock: “Aga Town! That’s the Manchurian territory, if we attack them, they will definitely not sit back and do nothing!!”

Dong-Er Molei stared at Gugani and roared: “The Manchurians are also a bunch of trash that lost to the Hans before! How can they stand up to our Great Turkic Empire. They’re trash, the very epitome of worms! I’m the General, Gugani, are you trying to disobey my orders?”

Dong-Er Molei had been injured badly Yue Zhong and his mood was foul. He wanted to vent his fury by massacring some enemies, at the same time to raise the morale of the Gold Wolf Riders. While a massacre would be a disaster for the victims, to the slaughterers, it was a quick way to bolster morale. In war, many generals would allow their men to pillage or rape or even murder. Even the American troops had sunk to certain levels during the Vietnam war.

One intelligence officer hurried in, his face pale with fright: “General!! Things are bad!! We discovered an armored troop rushing over here with great speed.”

“What?” Both Dong-Er Molei and Gugani were taken back.

Currently, the Gold Wolf Rider had just suffered a defeat, and lost over 700 elites, their morale was at a low. With this sudden appearance of an armored troop making its way towards them, it was obvious that there was no good intent.

Gugani asked: “Who are they?”

The officer replied: “They’re the 8 Banners Army of the Manchurian Empire!!”

About 10km away from the Gold Wolf Riders camp, there were 30

IFVs, 8 tanks, 40 machine gun-mounted vehicles, 10 122 Howitzers and a 1000 motorcycles making their way towards the Gold Wolf Riders.

Other than the fully motorized troop, there were 4,000 additional warriors riding on common horses and the Black Stallions, and a 3,000 foot-soldiers making their way to surround Gold Wolf Riders.

The retreat of the Gold Wolf Riders had been totally cut off by this army of over 10,000 people. There was Tian Mu Town in front, and the Manchurian 8 Banners Army behind.

In the command centre of the approaching troops, stood a burly middle-aged man decked in emperor clothes and a crown on his head. There was a tinkling glint in his eyes as he said: "Those Hans are sure capable, to actually force that animal Dong-Er Molei back!"

Another middle-aged man with straight features and an uncommon aura stood beside the emperor and said respectfully: "My liege, other than his strength, Dong-Er Molei is just a brute. He only knows how to use force, and had actually tried to use his troops to breach the city walls. It was simply fighting with their weakness in their haste. However, for them to be defeated so fast, it has truly exceeded this subject's calculations."

The man in the emperor's clothes was precisely the emperor of Manchuria, Aisin Gioro - Xuan Zhen. The prim and proper man beside him was the most trusted aide of his, General Shang Ming De.

Xuan Zhen's eyes were filled with excitement and fervor: "This time, as long as we eradicate the Gold Wolf Riders, we would become the 2nd largest faction out here in the Central Plains. Once we've swallowed the Turkic power, we would then become the largest! With the Central Plains as our base, conquering the entire country would not just be a dream! Haha!"

The population in the Central Plains were quite spaced out, and the remaining survivors were thus more than other places. If they could really unite all the survivors, the entire strength would be a force to reckon with.

“My King is wise!! My King is far-sighted, and this subject is simply inferior.” Shang Ming De sucked up to him, before throwing in a few words of advice: ‘My Liege! Kill a thousand enemies and suffer 800 casualties. To swallow the Turkic Empire, our losses will not be small, and there might be a chance that the Mongol King would try and jump on us then.’”

Xuan Zhen’s eye flashed with a cold but arrogant light: “The Mongol King? Hmph! This Emperor naturally has a way to deal with him. Ming De!”

Shang Ming De quickly got on his knees and portrayed the very posture of a loyal subject: “Your subject hears!”

Xuan Zhen looked at him and spoke strictly: “When we are done eradicating Dong-Er Molei, go to Tian Mu Town and extend an invitation for the Hans to join us. As long as they’re willing to join our Manchuria, this Emperor will confer upon them the status of Manchurians, and allow them to join our forces.”

Xuan Zhen had been an ordinary Manchurian, and was actually not of Aisin Gioro’s descent. In fact, he was an ordinary farmer. However, he loved to watch dramas, and had idolized Puyi, the 12th emperor of the Qing Dynasty, who had been dramatized.

After the apocalypse, Xuan Zhen had awakened as an Evolver, and changed his name to Aisin Gioro Xuan Zhen, intending to create a new Manchuria. He made use of the chaos then, to gather like-minded people. However, Xuan Zhen had always felt the Manchurians to be the noblest of blood, and he would try and recruit powerful people of talent and confer upon them the status of a Manchurian.

In order to pull more experts in, he had employed such tactics,

and as such, a huge number of experts had gathered under him. When he saw that the Hans in Tian Mu Town had been able to repel Dong-Er Molei, he began to entertain the idea of recruiting them.

Shang Ming De kowtowed: “Yes! Your subject obeys!”

With the passing of time, the 8 Banners Army of the Manchu Empire got closer to the Gold Wolf Riders.

Gugani saw the approaching Manchurians, and his heart was filled with anxiety: “What do we do?”

A wild and savage glint flashed in Dong-Er Molei’s eyes, as he roared: ”Breakthrough!! Everyone listen up!! Charge and kill with me!! We will break past their lines!!

“Kill!”

“Kill!!”

“Kill!!”

The Gold Wolf Riders began to shout and holler with killing intent under the rallying cry of Dong-Er Molei.

“Charge with me!!” Dong-Er Molei rode his Black Stallion and charged right for the 8 Banners Army.

The 3,000 Gold Wolf Riders immediately followed behind his lead, charging for their enemies with billowing killing intent.

Although Dong-Er Molei was violent and wild, he wasn’t an idiot. He didn’t charge for the armored battalion, instead, aiming for the flesh and blood soldiers.

The 30 IFVs, 8 tanks, 40 gun-mounted vehicles, 10 122 Howitzer began blasting the Gold Wolf Riders. Under the hail of firepower, many of the Gold Wolf Riders fell, their bodies blasted apart.

The cavalry and foot soldiers of the 8 Banners Army also fired their own guns at the incoming Gold Wolf Riders.

However, the Gold Wolf Riders were mainly riding powerful Black Stallions, and their maximum speed was faster than ordinary mounts In a few breaths of time, they had to pay the price of a few hundred people Dong-Er Molei had already charged right into the troops of foot soldiers.

Chapter 614: Miserable Victory of the Manchurian Army!

Although Dong-Er Molei had lost an arm, he was still as valiant and wild. He wielded his huge hammer and charged right at the enemy, smashing them into minced meat.

These foot soldiers were all common vagrants and had not yet undergone any proper training. They were mostly using wooden spears and the moment they were charged at by the Gold Wolf Riders, they quickly broke ranks and abandoned their armor and weapons to flee.

Hong! Hong!

The 10 122 howitzers began to fire non-stop. Rounds after rounds blasted the Gold Wolf Riders, tearing their bodies apart. The fearsome projectiles rained down and caused some of the foot soldiers of the Manchurian Army to be caught in the area of effect as well.

As Dong-Er Molei was engaging the foot soldiers, the 1,000-strong motorcycle troop revved and charged at the Gold Wolf Riders using their own firearms to kill those Gold Wolf Riders as well as their own comrades who were clashing against them.

Those 3,000 foot soldiers were after all, slaves and were made up of Hans and other races. Xuan Zhen had deliberately made use of them to attract the attention of the Gold Wolf Riders, sending them to be slaughtered, while wearing down their stamina and horsepower.

Dong-Er Molei led the Gold Wolf Riders and caused the 3,000-strong troop to scatter upon losing many of their people but the Gold Wolf Riders were similarly being bombarded by the 8 Banners Army from the other side.

The 4,000 riders of the 8 Banners Army prepared to launch a

devastating attack. Many of these riders made use of sabres. Their objective was to prevent the Gold Wolf Riders from running and to control their movements. If need be, they would launch a mighty assault on them.

The ones who were truly out to kill the Gold Wolf Riders were the motorcycle troops and the armored vehicles.

Under the assault of the 1,000-strong motorcycle riders, many of the Gold Wolf Riders were shot from their mounts, as they screamed and wailed.

“Charge!!!” Dong-Er Molei roared out with bloodshot eyes, his fury reaching a peak. He led 80 Saint Wolf Riders and did not focus on the foot soldiers any longer, aiming to break out instead.

“Kill!” The 4,000-strong 8 Banners riders bellowed in response as they surged forward with their sabres pointing out, making their way for the remaining 1,800 Gold Wolf Riders.

The 2 top forces of the Central Plains clashed in this epic battle and engaged in a cruel and merciless slaughter that resulted a great deal of blood and body parts flying everywhere. In terms of actual power, the Gold Wolf Riders were truly much stronger than the Manchurian 8 Banners Army. However, because they had just been repelled by Yue Zhong’s army, they had been left defeated, their morale low, and their energy sapped. With the sudden pincer attack by the Manchurian 8 Banners Army, it served only to wear down their numbers even further. As the 4,000-strong riders of the 8 Banners Army surged forwards, even more Gold Wolf Riders fell.

Within the Gold Wolf Riders forcers, Dong-Er Molei was like a meat grinder himself, his huge hammer swinging around like a tornado, smashing each and every warrior from the 8 Banners Army that got too close. No one could withstand a blow of his. With his 80 Saint Wolf Riders, they slaughtered their way through the 4,000-strong riders of the 8 Banners Army, causing them countless casualties.

“Dong-Er Molei!! Go to hell!” Right as Dong-Er Molei was in the midst of his killing spree, a man wielding a crescent blade roared in anger as he charged over.

This man was called Tong Jia Guo, and he was a Strength-based Evolver leading the 8 Banners Army. He was renowned as a general who possessed great contributions to the empire.

“Which fucktard has appeared?! Go and die!” As he charged in front of Dong-Er Molei, he was greeted with a savage laugh. Dong-Er Molei activated his Giant’s Blow, and the hammer came swinging down like a mountain at Tong Jia Guo’s head.

Tong Jia Guo brought up his crescent blade to block the attack.

Dang!

Following the loud ring, Tong Jia Guo and his Black Stallion were instantly pulverized.

“General Tong is dead!!!”

“General Tong is dead! What do we do? What do we do now?”

The moment they saw their general Tong Jia Guo killed in an instant, the morale of the 8 Banners troops plummeted.

As for the Gold Wolf Riders, they were still feeling high on their bloodlust and under Dong-Er Molei’s lead, they continued their massacre of the fleeing soldiers.

After he had caused enough mayhem which resulted in the 8 Banners troops to be plunged in chaos, he did not continue his assault for too long. Instead, he led the remaining 800 Gold Wolf Riders to flee.

Dong-Er Molei might be fierce and violent, but he wasn’t a fool. The experts in Manchuria were plenty and there was still the armored division to deal with. If he continued to kill, his remaining members of the Gold Wolf Riders would definitely die.

Under the protection of his personal guards, Xuan Zhen stared

hatefully at the fleeing back of Dong-Er Molei and gritted his teeth as he spat, “Dong-Er Molei! This Emperor will definitely kill you!”

This time, Xuan Zhen had deployed his entire troops to surround and kill Dong-Er Molei. While they had wiped out over 2,000 members of the Gold Wolf Riders, there were even more heavy casualties on their own. The 3,000-strong slave army had scattered and they only managed to recover a thousand.

They had lost a quarter of their 4,000-strong 8 Banners Army and at the same time, just like Tong Jia Guo, their strong experts and Enhancers counted amongst their dead.

To think that a force of 3,000 had actually managed to breakthrough a surrounding force of over 10,000 and at the same time, these had damaged the ranks and proper bearing of the troops. Xuan Zhen suddenly felt that he had severely underestimated the might of Dong-Er Molei. If they had equal forces, the Manuchrian army would definitely have lost.

Xuan Zhen’s voice was thick with killing intent. “Shang Ming De, this Emperor wants you to head to Tian Mu Town and tell them that if they surrender to us, this Emperor will bestow riches and women upon them. Otherwise, our army will march in and would not leave a single one of them alive!”

Shang Ming De felt a chill as he kowtowed, “Your servants understands!”

Shang Ming De thus carried a white flag and entered Tian Mu Town.

The moment he entered, he was brought in front of Yue Zhong as well as the remaining leaders of the triads. From the 10 great triads, they were reduced to 6 due to Dong-Er Molei’s slaughter.

Shang Ming De eyed the people present with arrogance and said, “I’m the envoy sent by the Manchuria Empire, Shang Ming De. Who is the leader of Tian Mu Town?”

After all, Manchuria was considered one of the 3 main factions of the Central Plains. Hence, Tian Mu Town was just a gathering of a rowdy bunch. With the Manchurian Empire as his backing, Shang Ming De was naturally arrogant.

Yue Zhong eyed him nonchalantly and ordered, “Go drag him out and chop off one of his arms! Make sure he learns how to speak!”

Li Guang waved his hands and 2 soldiers stepped forward, grabbing Shang Ming De to drag him out.

Shang Ming De immediately turned pale and began to plead, “No! Sir! Spare my life!!! Spare my life!!! Envoys are usually spared during any negotiations! Please!!!”

Ximen Lie immediately stood out and stared at Yue Zhong, “Hold! Alliance Chief, the envoys are usually immune from such treatment. How about just sparing him this once?”

Yue Zhong’s chilling gaze landed on Ximen Lie’s body.

When Ximen Lie was stared at like this by Yue Zhong, he felt his entire back turn slick with sweat and his body trembled, deeply regretting stepping out.

Yue Zhong had displayed his power out on the field for everyone to see. They had seen how Dong-Er Molei who was widely thought to be invincible, had been beaten back by Yue Zhong. At the same time, the 12 Guards who Yue Zhong had initially called out, after having lost 2, leaving 10, were experts as well, each of them not necessarily weaker than the leaders present.

As a leader of a faction, other than being strong, most of them had been involved with women and

managing affairs, as well as other small things. How could they hunt mutant beasts and become stronger as compared to the lone warriors?

Adding on the the many subordinates of Li Guang, Yue Zhong had been viewed as the true alliance chief. He had the strength and

the might of people behind him. His methods were decisive and ruthless when it came to killing and under the stare of such a character, Ximen Lie was afraid that he would be killed in the next instant.

Yue Zhong then turned to Shang Ming De impassively, "Alright! I'll give brother Ximen some face. Shang Ming De, since you're the envoy of the Manchuria Empire, you should kneel and speak. If you're unwilling, I can get someone to help you!"

Yue Zhong had no intentions of killing Shang Ming De in the first place. He just wanted to suppress that attitude of his and make sure this Han that had turned into traitor to serve the Manchurians become obedient.

Having been frightened once, Shang Ming De lost all pretense of his pride and arrogance, immediately kneeling on the ground while his body trembles.

"The noble Aisin Gioro, Xuan Zhen, Emperor of the Manchu Empire had ordered for your surrender. As long as you are willing to surrender, everyone would be able to join the 8 Banners Army, and become noble Manchurians. From today on, there would be riches and women waiting for you. If you choose to reject and disobey, the Emperor would order the 10,000-strong troop of his to charge into Tian Mu Town and will not leave a single living thing behind.

Hearing those words, many expressions changed. The Manchu Empire had actually deployed their 10,000 strong forces. The total strength of the army was more than the survivors inside the town and there were even tanks and cannons in addition to other various heavyweights. Due to the low possibility of victory, the 6 leaders actually had a slight inclination to submit.

The whole point of the alliance was to ensure that they stuck together and prevent themselves from becoming slaves. Now that the Manchu Empire was willing to recruit them and confer titles

upon them, they were naturally moved and wanted to submit.

Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed and he raised his Stinger and instantly fired a shot.

Peng!

Shang Ming De's head immediately became a watermelon that burst, his headless corpse crumpled to the floor. He had never imagined that Yue Zhong would kill him without a word.

“Alliance Chief!”

“Alliance Chief, what're you doing?!”

When the leaders witnessed it, their faces turned ugly. Things had happened too fast and they hadn't had the time to react and could only voice out.

Yue Zhong spoke coldly, “I've killed the envoy of the Manchu Empire. You guys must be hating me to death. However, I've already killed him. According to the style of the Manchu Empire, even if you guys

surrender now, you would only face death. The Manchu Empire will definitely launch an assault on Tian Mu Town. After breaching here, they will not spare anyone. If you want to live, you guys had better muster all your strength to fight and retaliate. Only then, will there be room for survival. Ximen Lie, go tell the survivors in town that I have already killed the envoy of the Manchu Empire. Later on, when the Manchu Empire attacks, everyone would die. Gather them and get started on fortification works. The rest of you, rest well and await further orders! I believe that there will be a tough battle ahead of us soon!”

Ximen Lie could only swallow his bitterness and replied, “Yes! Alliance Chief!”

With a single move, Yue Zhong had tied the fates of everyone in Tian Mu Town together. They would win or lose as a whole. If the town was really breached, then everyone would die. Thus, all the

leaders and lone warriors had to think of ways to defend against the Manchu forces.

The survivors were all shocked to the core when they heard Ximen Lie's words and quickly gathered under him to begin working on the defences and obstacles in Tian Mu Town.

All sorts of vehicles, beds, sandbags, boulders, and broken down television sets were brought to the front to act as obstruction.

As everyone got busy, the chief of the Pink Triad, Zhao Li, came to find Yue Zhong. "Alliance Chief, our Pink Triad is good at setting traps. I have a pair of sisters who had the abilities to set traps easily. We hope you can assign us some manpower to help us set them."

At this critical point in time, Zhao Li could only gather her forces to help defend as well. If Tian Mu Town really fell, the whole bunch of female warriors under the Pink Triad would only suffer a fate worse than death.

Yue Zhong gave an order to Ximen Lie, "Good! Ximen Lie, go deploy a 1,000 men to Zhao Li and assist them with their traps!"

Ximen Lie nodded and swiftly gathered a thousand men for her.

The Heavenly Demon Sect's leader Fei Tu also came up to Yue Zhong, "Alliance Chief, our Heavenly Demon Sect knows how to construct simple landmines. Please grant us 200 men to help lay them."

"Ximen Lie, assign 300 men to Fei Tu!"

Under Yue Zhong's orders, Ximen Lie assigned another 300 men to Fei Tu, who led his men to plant landmines at the entrance of Tian Mu Town.

Everyone within were offering their skills and abilities to help strengthen the defences, in the hopes of raising their chances of survival.

“What’s going on? Where’s that dog Shang Ming De?” After an entire hour, Xuan Zhen frowned, as a premonition crept up in his heart, “Could it be those fellows have captured him or he had been bought over by them and is already indulging in women?!”

After hesitating for a while, Xuan Zhen summoned another Han over, “Geng Da Zhong! Go to Tian Mu Town and get them to surrender. At the same time, find out what happened to that stupid dog Shang Ming De!”

“Your slave obeys!” Geng Da Zhong kneeled down to kowtow before swiftly proceeding to Tian Mu Town.

There, Tian Mu Town’s soldiers soon brought Geng Da Zhong in front of Yue Zhong.

Chapter 615: Geng Da Zhong!

Yue Zhong eyed Geng Da Zhong coldly and said, “Your previous envoy Shang Ming De had been shot dead by me! Do you want to live or die?”

Geng Da Zhong’s back was immediately drenched in cold sweat as he knelt down and kowtowed, “This slave wants to live! This slave wants to live! Please spare my life, Leader!”

Geng Da Zhong wasn’t some person with integrity. Those with backbone would not have ran to become slaves of Xuan Zhen. With a single death threat, Geng Da Zhong had immediately gone weak.

Yue Zhong continued, “I need time. What methods do you have to delay Xuan Zhen’s invasion?”

By now Tian Mu Town’s survivors were all busy with the fortifications and were preparing for a tough battle ahead. Every minute counts, so with every minute of delay, they would be better prepared.

Geng Da Zhong was perspiring profusely while trying his best to think of a way. He knew his answer would decide his fate.

His eyes suddenly lit up as he proposed, “That’s it! Leader, as long as you pretend to be willing to surrender, this slave will head back and tell Xuan Zhen that you’re willing to surrender. However, you need time to organize the belongings and wealth of the survivors and pleaded for another 2 hours of time. He will definitely agree and give you that time. I know his personality and 2 hours will be the maximum he would give. Anymore than that would be pushing it.”

Yue Zhong replied coldly, “Fine! I’ll let you go back. But before that, I will implant some remote bombs in you. The moment Xuan Zhen attacks before the 2 hours, I will set the bombs off. Men, do it!”

2 soldiers stepped forwards to press Geng Da Zhong down as another went to slice his leg open. Then, a small remote-controlled bomb was inserted into his thigh.

An Enhancer stepped forward and pressed the remote-controlled bomb, sending a green light to envelope the bomb.

Witnessing this, the expression of Geng Da Zhong turned pale. Yet, he didn't dare to say anything. The one sitting on the throne in front of him had just killed Shang Ming De without any warning and was obviously short-tempered and vicious. He didn't want to die here.

Another Enhancer with the ability to heal stepped forward and pointed at Geng Da Zhong's legs, patching him up with a bright light. After the wound of the leg healed, the bomb was buried within his flesh.

"I'll let you see the potential of the bomb in your body!" Yue Zhong then took out a similar bomb and threw it at a fake mountain and he pressed a button.

Hong!

After a loud explosion, the entire fake mountain exploded in 2.

Geng Da Zhong immediately turned paler, after all, who could still be happy with such a powerful explosive in their body?

Yue Zhong then replied: "That bomb is easy to take out with surgery. However, I've ensured that my subordinate had attached a sensory ability to it. The minute you dare to take it out or if there are any strange movements, I would be able to tell here and I will immediately press the remote. If you don't believe me, you can go ahead and try it."

Geng Da Zhong immediately promised, "I trust Leader's words, that you will not trick this servant. This servant will definitely not play around with his life and seeks Leader's understanding and be rest assured that I will do my duty."

Yue Zhong replied indifferently: “You’re dismissed! I’ll let you go half an hour later.”

Geng Da Zhong thanked him profusely: “Thank you Leader! Thank you Leader!”

Zhao Jing Lei could not believe her ears and asked Yue Zhong, “Yue Zhong! You’ve gained the sensory trigger bomb skill?”

If the sensory trigger bomb had been invented, then it would truly be a terrifying means to control people. Tenpyo Saka was being controlled by that chain around her neck. As long as it was forcefully removed without the right password, it would blow. Zhao Jing Lei was somewhat skeptical that Yue Zhong had such a skill.

The bomb was so tiny. She found it hard to believe that there was an additional sensory function in it.

Yue Zhong chuckled, “How can it be? It was all to scare him. Of course, the remote controlled bomb is real. However, if he does want to take it out, he could just do a simple surgery.”

Zhao Jing Lei asked incredulously: “Aren’t you afraid that he’ll remove it surgically?”

Yue Zhong answered, “For someone like him who values his own life too much, he would not dare to risk it. Even if he did, so what? All Xuan Zhen could do then is to invade us.”

Zhao Jing Lei pondered for awhile. It was as he said. Even if Geng Da Zhong did figure it out in the end, it wouldn’t matter to Tian Mu Town.

Half an hour later, just as Xuan Zhen was becoming impatient, Geng Da Zhong had returned.

“Congratulations, my Liege!! Tian Mu Town’s leader Yue Zhong is in awe and fear of you and has voluntarily submitted to you. However, he had a few conditions and hope that you will grant them.”

Xuan Zhen was elated and asked, “What sort of conditions?”

Geng Da Zhong responded: “First, Yue Zhong hopes that you can grant him a position as a commander. Secondly, he hopes that his own troops can remain under him and still be under his command. Lastly, he hopes that the personal safety and properties of his and his subordinates will not be touched.”

Xuan Zhen frowned and asked, “How did you respond?”

Xuan Zhen had always not favored the Hans and other races, never allowing them to handle any big things. He preferred to draft them into his army and be under the control of his own troops.

Geng Da Zhong responded: “Your slave deserves death. I had granted him the 1st and 2nd condition. As for the 2nd, your slave had vehemently declined. After much persuasion from your slave, he had agreed to forgo the 2nd condition. However, he proposed that once they have joined us, he wants to choose a 100 beauties to serve him and his faction. Furthermore, they have to be provided resources from the Manchu Empire. Your slave deserves death, as I have agreed to it.”

Xuan Zhen’s frown lessened slightly as his eyes held a more appreciative light, “Well done! You’ve performed well Geng Da Zhong! You’re truly are a loyal subordinate! Since you’ve worked hard for this Emperor, this Emperor will naturally not mistreat you. After we’ve conquered Tian Mu Town, you will be gifted 5 beauties.”

Geng Da Zhong immediately got on his knees: “Thank you, my Liege!”

Xuan Zheng asked, “When will they come out to surrender?”

“Yue Zhong wanted to bring his men tomorrow!”

The moment Geng Da Zhong’s words came out, Xuan Zhen’s frown became deeper.

Geng Da Zhong's face was currently calm as he replied quickly, "Your slave naturally refused his request. Your slave told him that if he wanted to surrender tomorrow, it must be because he was thinking of delaying the time. Yue Zhong and the rest were immediately frightened and pleaded for this slave's understanding. Thus, I gave them some time to handle their affairs. This slave did not want to hurry them too much and allowed them 2 hours to prepare. Yue Zhong and his men would then bring his men out to submit peacefully."

Xuan Zhen pondered a while before replying, "2 hours, right? Fine. This Emperor shall give them 2 hours."

Tian Mu Town was after all a force that had repelled the Gold Wolf Riders led by Dong-Er Molei. If Xuan Zhen wanted this faction to submit peacefully without any losses, he knew he couldn't pressure them too hard.

2 hours wasn't much to Xuan Zhen. If he could obtain Tian Mu Town without any damage, it would be the best. He was even willing to wait a day. At this point, Xuan Zhen frowned and asked: "Where's Shang Ming De?"

Geng Da Zhong immediately became worked up as he replied, "My Liege! You must definitely punish that little shit! When your subordinate went to Tian Mu Town, he was already drinking and partying with a few beautiful ladies, getting himself drunk and forgetting his mission entirely. What's worse is that he had actually fought over your loyal subordinate over women and scolded me. Please remember to punish him, my liege!"

When Xuan Zhen heard it, he relaxed. He knew the problems of his subordinate. Shang Ming De was truly a conniving pervert and lusted after women. In his home, he already had a few women and was exceptionally vile to other women.

Xuan Zhen replied mildly: "I got it! When he's back, this Emperor will definitely punish him! You're dismissed!"

Xuan Zhen knew that while Shang Ming De might be a lowlife, he was an obedient slave. It wasn't necessary to say many things as Shang Ming De would automatically help him settle it. That was why he wouldn't give up on him easily.

Geng Da Zhong replied without batting an eyelid before leaving, "Yes! Your Highness!"

The moment Geng Da Zhong left Xuan Zhen's side, he quickly went to his camp and packed up all his rations and weapons before using an excuse to leave the camp.

2 hours later, Xuan Zhen could not find any sign of Yue Zhong and a bad premonition arose in his heart, "GENG DA ZHONG!!! FIND THAT BASTARD FOR THIS EMPEROR!!!"

Not long after, a guard came up to Xuan Zhen and reported, "My Liege! Geng Da Zhong had escaped!!"

Xuan Zhen slammed his palm angrily on the table, splitting it into multiple pieces, "Fuck! That damned Geng Da Zhong! Damned Yue Zhong! You guys dare to hoodwink me! Convey my orders! We will immediately invade Tian Mu Town, and will not leave a single thing alive! Capture Geng Da Zhong and Yue Zhong alive! Those who would succeed will be raised to 3 military ranks and get some beautiful women. This Emperor wants them to die!!!"

Under Xuan Zhen's order, the Manchu Army that had not moved, immediately set off for Tian Mu Town.

Chapter 616: Battling the White Armor Army!

The first ones to act were the 122 Howitzers of the Manchu Empire, as they launched multiple rockets at Tian Mu Town.

Hong! Hong!!

With the loud explosions ringing and the rain of projectiles from the skies, many places were blasted apart.

Yue Zhong had organized for the survivors in Tian Mu Town to retreat earlier, however, under that blanket of firepower, there were numerous survivors and warriors that were either heavily injured, or killed.

As they were bombarded, the soldiers of Tian Mu Town had low morale. If it wasn't for knowing the fact that everyone will be killed once the Manchu forces invaded, these soldiers would have long fled for their lives.

Li Guang came up to Yue Zhong and muttered, "This cannot go on! Leader! We need to handle their artillery!!"

Li Guang had a resolute look as he said, "Leader, let me take some men to go deal with their artillery! Even if this old one dies, I will go down making sure those Manchu dogs go down with me!"

Li Guang wasn't a man who did not fear death. Initially, he had surrendered to Yue Zhong out of fear for his and his subordinates' lives as well. However, under the relentless attack of the Manchu Empire, he knew that it would be a suicide mission to go and deal with them. Yet, he was willing, purely because he had a strong sense of patriotism.

Pi Jian Yi stood up, "I'll go with you!"

Pi Jian Yi was proud, arrogant, and slightly ambitious. However, he also had the hot-bloodedness that most youths had. Seeing how

Li Guang was proposing to lead the most dangerous mission, his passion was ignited as well.

“I’m willing to go!”

“I’ll follow you!”

“.....”

A number of other Han heroes also stood up as their eyes shined with a clear light. They were already prepared for death.

There were no lack of eager and passionate heroes. There was only a lack of a decent leader.

Yue Zhong had led the forces himself and his actions had spurred their bravado. At such a critical moment, they were ready to spill blood.

Yue Zhong eyed Li Guang and the rest of the men that had rose to the occasion, his eyes flashing with appreciation, “No need! Li Guang, you stay here and take over temporarily. I’ll go destroy the artillery. My command for you is that before I’m back, you guys will have to defend Tian Mu Town with all you’ve got. No one is allowed to fall into the hands of Xuan Zhen. Understood?”

Li Guang was shocked: “Leader! No! That mission is too dangerous. If anything were to happen to you, what would we do?”

Pi Jian Yi and the rest of the Han experts were also staring at Yue Zhong in shock. In most normal cases, the general would stand behind his troops, commanding them from a safe location. Ximen Lie and the rest had always done things this way.

When Yue Zhong had gained the seat as the Alliance Chief and obtained everyone’s cooperation for a short time, he could easily deploy the troops how he liked while staying at a safe place to give orders. Even Pi Jian Yi and the rest had fought at the frontlines and saw what Yue Zhong did. Hence, they had no thoughts to disobey him.

Even so, Yue Zhong was still suggesting to undertake the suicide mission himself. This caused Pi Jian Yi and the rest to be extremely shocked and touched causing their morale to increase even more.

Of course, some of the soldiers also saw the other side of the equation. Should Yue Zhong die, then Tian Mu Town was sure to fall. Just like what happened to Tong Jia Guo.

Yue Zhong stared at Li Guang and said solemnly, “No need for more words. I’ve made my decision. Convey my orders! Tian Mu Town is henceforth under your temporary control. Before I’m back, make sure you stay here even if you die!”

Li Guang responded loudly, “Yes! Leader!”

Yue Zhong then spoke to a corner, “Tenpyo Saka, you lead Pi Jian Yi and the rest to support Li Guang in protecting Tian Mu Town.”

From the shadows in the corner, a slight distortion appeared as Tenpyo Saka walked out and nodded.

After assigning them duties, Yue Zhong flashed and disappeared out of Tian Mu Town.

He had just taken a few steps out when he immediately felt over 20 crosshairs aimed on him. Therefore, he quickly left from his original position.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

20 sniper rounds rained down onto where he was a moment ago.

“Snipers!”

Yue Zhong swiftly activated his Bone Encompassing Armor and his body was encased in a thick layer of bone carapace. At the same time, he activated his Shadow Steps and his speed exceeded 30 times that of a normal person, shuttling for the Manchurian Empire like a specter.

In the center of the Manchu Empire forces, a burly man

possessing huge hands and deep eyes in addition to his bristle-covered face, stared at Yue Zhong coming from the distance with a cold look in his eyes. This man was the top Evolver in the Manchu Empire, Ao Dou. He led the most powerful force of the empire, the White Armor Army!

The White Armor Army of the Great Manchu Empire was like the Special Forces under Yue Zhong, the Saint Wolf Riders of the Gold Wolf Riders. They were a bunch of elites.

They consisted mostly of experts above level 30 and their combat prowess was truly something else.

Ao Dou used his whip and pointed at Yue Zhong, calling out in a deep voice, “Tu Sheng! Take your men and fetch me that man’s head!”

Tu Sheng was one of the 6 main captains of the White Armor Army, leading 80 of the White Armor soldiers. Tu Sheng was a Level 63 Evolver himself.

“Yes! Sir!” Tu Sheng responded before leading his men in a charge towards Yue Zhong.

“An expert is here!” When Tu Sheng and his men moved, Yue Zhong felt danger and immediately whisked out his Stinger.

He eyed the galloping Black Stallions with their White Army soldiers on top, and immediately fired 6 consecutive shots.

The 6 bullets blasted apart amidst the White Armor forces, causing 6 of them to be blasted off their mounts, shattering their bones in the process.

The White Armor soldiers were all wearing Type 3 Mutant Beast hide, which the Stinger bullets could not penetrate. However, their own Endurance could not withstand the force of the blows and their body were hence, wrecked.

It could only be Endurance-based Evolvers like Dong-Er Molei that might stand a chance against any heavy firearms. Even if the

armor on everyone else could block the actual projectiles, their weak bodies could not withstand the force.

Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed, and another 6 bullets were reloaded quickly before he fired again.

This time, another 6 bullets landed on the bodies of the White Armor soldiers, knocking 6 of them off their mounts, with their bones shattered.

In just 10 seconds, Yue Zhong had dealt with 12 members of the White Armor force, killing them in the process. The rest of the soldiers were shocked and furious. Then, they began activating their skills.

A number of fireballs, ice shards, wind blades, air cannons, bullets, blades, darts, arrows, stones, and all sorts of weapons and abilities bombarded Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong dodged about like a ghost and managed to evade most of the incoming attacks. He only suffered 2 arrows that seemed to be slower than the rest, but was fixed on Yue Zhong.

These 2 arrows were from the Level 3 skill, Homing Arrows. The moment they were fired, they would strike their targets. The only weakness was that although they could chase their targets, their speed and power could not compare to the rest of the abilities.

Yue Zhong pulled out his Black Tooth Blade and casually swept them aside before flashing forward. The Stinger in his right hand fired again, killing another 6 members of the White Armor army.

Watching Yue Zhong kill his men easily, shock and fear filled Tu Sheng's heart. "Strong!! This fearsome speed and those accurate shots. What a strong weapon. This fellow is truly a freak. No wonder Ao Dou wanted me to bring my forces to suppress him. He's truly too scary!"

Ao Dou watched as Yue Zhong makes use of his speed and his powerful Stinger to slaughter his White Armor troops. Then his

eyes flashed with a solemn look, “Ming Shu Wu, Wu Tian Dao, the 2 of you, lead some men to go defend the artillery. He Sheng Quan, Ji Wen, Duo Xi. You three take your men and follow me to go kill that fellow.”

“Yes! Sir!”

The White Armor 5 captains responded loudly, and began to move out.

Ao Dou himself led 3 of the captains and 360 Enhancers towards Yue Zhong.

He could already feel the threat of Yue Zhong’s might and he wanted to hurry and take out this problem.

As strong as Yue zhong was, it was hard for him to defend against all the elites of the Manchu army. He didn’t continue engaging with Tu Sheng. Instead, he pushed his speed and charged towards the artillery.

The Black Stallions were instantly left behind to eat the dust and the elites all stared dumbfounded at the extent of Yue Zhong’s speed.

Within 2 minutes, Yue Zhong had reached about 3km, near the artillery. He did not continue his advance. Instead, he pulled out his Level 5 Falcon II Sniper.

He loaded it with a 122 round and fired as a bright flash of light radiated from the Falcon II Sniper. It blasted one of the Howitzers, turning it into scrap metal.

Yue Zhong then continued to adjust his aim and trajectory, firing another round, destroying another Howitzer.

Chapter 617: Tough Battle!

Yue Zhong had spent all of his efforts to aim for another Howitzer and a bright flash shot out from his Falcon II Sniper, blasting the Howitzer.

The Manchu Empire's Howitzers began to retreat.

At this time, Ming Shu Wu and Wu Tian Dao had arrived to provide reinforcements. Each of them possessing the skill Earth Manipulation. They conjured earthen walls, managing to block Yue Zhong's trajectory. The remaining 5 Howitzers stopped their firing and began to move for another location.

"Time to retreat!" Yue Zhong kept his Falcon Sniper, eyeing the approaching Manchurian troops and quickly turned around to make his way back towards Tian Mu Town. No matter how strong he was, it was impossible to deal with the entire elite force.

Yue Zhong's speed had already reached 30 times that of a person which even a Type 3 Mutant Beast would find hard to beat. The White Armor troops on their Black Stallions could only watch helplessly when Yue Zhong destroyed 5 of their Howitzers before returning to Tian Mu Town casually.

Ao Dou looked at Yue Zhong's back, his gaze turning dark, "Within Tian Mu Town, there's actually such an expert amongst the Hans. It truly is a calamity for our Great Manchurian Empire."

After the world changed, many top Evolvers already had the abilities to influence the total might of an entire faction. A single high-level Evolver could potentially wipe out a team of elite soldiers. There were some who could even take on an entire battalion.

Ao Dou reported the outcome to Xuan Zhen, prompting Xuan Zhen to make a decision, "We need to crush their resistance entirely!!"

The Howitzers thus began another volley of blasts, intending to blitz through the defences of Tian Mu Town.

30 IFVs, 8 tanks, 40 gun-mounted vehicles as well as a thousand motorbicycles formed a fearsome armored fleet, charging forwards with the 1,000 soldiers of the 8 Banners Army.

Such formation was already rare and extremely domineering in this apocalyptic world. Few factions could stand up to it. It was through such a method that the Manchu Empire had managed to raze 2 huge factions with over 10,000 survivors to the ground, exemplifying the idiom ‘using a butcher knife for the chicken.’

Xuan Zhen was placing more importance on Tian Mu Town purely because they had been able to repel the 3,000-strong force of the Gold Wolf Riders. Such a combat strength was enough for him to want to strike them down.

Seeing the entire armored fleet approaching, many of the experts of the alliance were dismayed.

Even the countenance of Pi Jian Yi was unsightly. His sword beams were truly overpowering but he had no confidence that he could slice through those tanks and armored vehicles. Furthermore, a single blast from them could kill him on the spot.

Moreover, there were 30 IFV's following behind the tanks, and those IFV's had powerful cannons and heavy machine guns themselves. They were enough to wreck a powerful Evolver's body.

As the armored forces began to charge through Tian Mu Town, the 8 tanks took the vanguard position, blocking all the bullets firing at them. They adjusted their cannons and began to blast the bunkers.

The tanks were the strongest attack force of the Manchu Empire. Many factions would quiver in their shoes when they saw them.

“What do we have to fear?! I'll deal with the tanks. Watch how I

destroy them!”

Yue Zhong pulled out his Electromagnetic Gun and fired at one of the tanks. With a bright flash of light, the shot instantly pierced the tank, leaving a hole.

Yue Zhong continued to fire 5 more shots at that tank. 5 lights blasted through it, causing it to explode soon after.

“Awesome!!!”

“That’s great!!!”

“Long live Alliance Chief!!!”

“.....”

Seeing the fate of that tank at the hands of Yue Zhong, many of the warriors instantly roared out excitedly as their morale rose sharply.

To these Han warriors, the tanks were the cause of their headaches. With the terrifying defence and offensive potential, they were usually helpless. However, Yue Zhong had destroyed one easily. Suddenly, these tanks no longer seemed invincible.

Yue Zhong clapped his hands and Lo Guang led men bringing out 40 anti-tank rocket launchers as well as 60 rocket launchers. “These are weapons I’ve prepared for everybody. Use them to take down the invaders!”

A number of agility-based Enhancers and those with Marksmanship or Firearms abilities stepped up to help themselves to the weapons. They then stepped back to the battlefield with renewed resolution.

Inside Tian Mu Town, the Radiant Sun Triad were fighting a desperate battle as well. Using their rifles and machine guns to attack the tanks and armored vehicles in vain. The tanks could easily destroy the fortifications they had painstakingly built, instantly killing the soldiers within.

As the tanks paved the way, a number of IFV's and gun-mounted vehicles charged in with troops of Manchu soldiers.

Tian Mu Town now had the weapons to counter the tanks and this caused Xuan Zhen to be infuriated. He wanted to hurry and subjugate the troops, hoping to make use of his advantage in firepower to overwhelm them. Every single tank was a precious resource to a faction. The destruction of any one of them caused Xuan Zhen to weep in his heart.

As the Manchu forces began to march through the town, there was a sudden loud explosion beneath one of the soldiers, blasting his legs apart. The shockwave sent him soaring through the air as he screamed.

Upon seeing this, the rest of the Manchu soldiers felt a chill in their hearts, taking more careful steps.

Another 8 were taking careful strides in Tian Mu Town, when large holes appeared beneath their feet and they plunged into the 4m deep holes. Their bodies were then pierced by the steel spikes implanted within. 4 of them were instantly killed, while the remaining 4 screamed in agony.

A small squad were proceeding through the blasted zone, intending to search for survivors.

Peng!

Peng!

Suddenly, gunshots rang out. With 3 soldiers having their heads blasted apart instantly, the rest of them were shocked and tried to duck for cover.

Just as they got behind their covers, to the shock of 3 soldiers, homing arrows appeared beside them and pierced their bodies, as they screamed out.

At another part of town, 10 soldiers led a few IFV's as they proceeded through.

“Manchu dogs! Die!” A single young man suddenly appeared and fired a rocket at the IFV.

With a bright flash of light, the IFV combusted in a ball of explosion. If it were a tank, it might have been able to withstand a few rockets. However, the slightly weaker IFV's could not withstand the blasts.

Peng! Peng!

There were some experts within the 10 of them and they hurried to fire at the youth, turning him into a sieve.

One IFV began to fire wildly with its machine gun chugging loudly, as a rain of bullets struck one Han Enhancer, leaving him deader than dead.

Another Manchu Enhancer waved out his huge blade, decapitating his Han opponent, his head soaring through the air, and blood splattering onto the ground.

The entire Tian Mu Town had now turned into a meat grinder, with numerous soldiers on both sides losing their lives. It was simply a slaughter of both sides. One side, the Manchurians intent on massacring the Hans. The other, the Hans intent on fighting for their lives and honor. With the threat of death, even the most cowardly of men would become fierce beasts.

Yue Zhong had led 10 of his Guards to rush to the frontlines. He was wielding the Electromagnetic Gun, searching for the tanks, blasting them one by one.

Although Yue Zhong had the ability to use his Art of Fear to scare the numerous soldiers to death, the current state of the battle was that the Hans were at a disadvantage, and there weren't any likely candidates to pilot the tanks. Hence, he chose to destroy the tanks.

Yue Zhong charged about on the battlefield, killing numerous enemies with White Bones by his side unleashing its inhuman abilities as well.

White Bones made use of its sharp bone spikes to help it run along certain structures, defying gravity, while its bone blades would slash through the necks of unsuspecting enemies. It was truly like a demon. Its methods of killing was cruel and merciless. From time to time, it could even manipulate 10 sharp bone spikes to shoot out. Its speed was three times faster than Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong and White Bones continued to shine brightly on the battlefield, attracting the rest of the Manchurian experts to target them.

With the majority of the attacks concentrated on Yue Zhong and his team, Tenpyo Saka was free to exhibit her prowess as an unparalleled assassin. From time to time, she would appear behind a White Armor soldier silently, plunging her blades through their necks before disappearing again for another chance.

By the time Yue Zhong destroyed the 5th tank, the elite soldiers of the Manchu troops had already joined in the fray. Sheng Quan, Ji Wen, and Duo Xi led 240 White Armor troops to charge into the fray, making their way of Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong, White Bones as well as the Guards were considered the top Evolvers of Tian Mu Town, and with their insane combat strength, they continued to fight at the frontlines, killing over 200 Manchu elites.

Sheng Quan, Ji Wen and Duo Xi had deployed all their strength entirely to annihilate this group of Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong and his team had already long since become the core and hope of those in Tian Mu Town. If it wasn't for them, Tian Mu Town would have long since collapsed.

If the Manchurian troops could cause Yue Zhong and his group to disappear, then the defence of Tian Mu Town would likely crumble.

“Have you finally arrived? Let me give you a present!” Yue Zhong

eyed the approaching 240 elite White Armor troops and pulled out his Electromagnetic Gun, firing at them.

A bright light flashed, penetrating Sheng Quan's body, making him fall from his mount, leaving a huge gaping hole in his chest. This terrifying Evolver hadn't had the chance to demonstrate his prowess and was instantly killed by Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong then fired at the other 2 who were riding similar mounts as 2 shots that could pierce tanks blasted towards Ji Wen and Duo Xi.

Ji Wen's danger perception was higher and the moment he felt the danger, he quickly got down from his horse. A powerful bright light shot past his body, barely brushing past him.

As for Duo Xi, he wasn't as fortunate as Ji Wen, as his chest was also pierced by that shot, his corpse fell from the back of the horse before being trampled by the other mounts of the White Armor forces.

Of the 3 generals that led the White Armor forces to attack Yue Zhong, 2 had lost their lives to him. One was forced down from his mount, and this greatly affected the morale of the troops.

Yue Zhong continued to fire his Electromagnetic Gun without stop. Each stop blasting apart the bodies of the White Armor elites. Not even the Mutant Beast hides on their bodies could help them.

Ji Wen tore off the eye-catching yellow robe on him and hid behind a troop of his soldiers, pointing at Yue Zhong and shouting loudly, "Charge! Charge for me!!! He's only a single person! As long as we can charge, it would be our victory!!"

As a vanguard, Ji Wen was supposed to charge forth, yet now he was hiding behind his troops and didn't dare to lead.

Under Ji Wen's orders, the somewhat chaotic White Armor troops began to attack Yue Zhong once again. These were after all, the bravest elites of the Manchurian Empire. They ate the best and

slept with the prettiest of women. Even if it were a devil in front of them, they would dare fight.

“Retreat!!!” Yue Zhong had fired off 50 shots of the Electromagnetic Gun, killing his enemies before retreating explosively.

The speed of the Black Stallions were twice as fast as ordinary humans, and if they exerted strength, they would be able to cross a distance of 300m in no time. These 190 White Armored soldiers thus got on their horses and made their way towards the inner parts of Tian Mu Town.

The moment they entered Tian Mu Town, those White Armored Soldiers quickly got down and surveyed the positions, checking the places Yue Zhong and his party had gone through safely and quietly.

5 White Armor soldiers made their way through the street that had been ravaged by the bombs and cannons of their side, when suddenly, a White Bones appeared through a very old-fashioned brick wall, piercing the heads of the soldiers.

Chapter 618: Meat Grinder!

After making short work of 5 White Armor soldiers, White Bones leapt down from the debris and scuttled up a building like a ghost. It continued along the dark alleys, ready to strike out anytime.

3 White Armor soldiers were continuing along the wasted parts of town, when all of a sudden, a dark shadow leaped out from behind them. Their heads flew through the air as their headless corpses slumped to the ground.

Tenpyo Saka disappeared into the darkness again, having killed those 3 soldiers. Her strength laid in assassination and with such a complicated terrain and dark environments, it was naturally the best condition for her.

The 190 members of the White Armor army had scattered around in town and their assault had just gone on for a short while when 30 of their members were disposed of. This forced them to gather again to proceed as a troop.

As they reformed, their speed naturally slowed but their defence became tighter, making it hard for anyone to launch sneak attacks.

Behind, there were another 1,000 Manchurian elite soldiers ready to blitz right through.

Yue Zhong led his Guards to withdraw temporarily, conceding some posts to the Manchu Empire.

There were too many enemy soldiers. If they were to be trapped, as strong as they were, Yue Zhong and his team would definitely die.

“It’s time! They can all go to hell!” Yue Zhong eyed the soldiers from afar, his gaze turning cold as he pressed the remote control in his hands.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Terrifying explosions rang out one after another, as the entire devastated region blew up. Within those explosions, the 1,000-strong Manchu elite forces as well as the 160 White Armor soldiers were either killed instantly or heavily injured. Their wails and screams rang out as the ground was littered with corpses and dismembered body parts.

Ximen Lie wanted to establish the Great Han Alliance and there were plenty of explosives and remote-controlled bombs in his arsenal. He even had talents with the ability to construct bombs in his ranks. While the experts in the Radiant Sun Triad might not compare with the rest, it was still precisely because of their explosives that they carved out a territory for themselves.

Every single faction had something they could boast about in the Central Plains. Some had powerful leaders, some had numerous experts, while others relied on a certain strength of their own.

Yue Zhong brought them all together under the banner of the Han Alliance and forced them to a corner, pushing them to unleash their hidden trump cards and strength.

From afar, Xuan Zhen saw the earthshaking explosion in Tian Mu Town and a bad feeling rose up in heart.

A scout came up to him and kneeled: “My Liege!! Zhao Liang Dong and his team had died, while 500 of his 1,000-strong army had died, 200 heavily injured. Ji Wen and the rest are dead as well!”

When Xuan Zhen heard this, he immediately screamed out in fury and despair, “Damnable Yue Zhong! Bastard! This Emperor will certainly kill you! I will make sure your death doesn’t come easy!!!”

Having lost his 1,000-strong 8 Banners Army, Xuan Zhen truly felt the pinch. These were not some random survivors that had trained to become soldiers. Rather, they had been elite soldiers that had fought along his side ever since he started his conquest.

They might not be comparable to the Gold Wolf Riders but they were still renowned in the Central Plains. With their deaths, Xuan Zhen felt like throwing up blood.

Xuan Zhen roared out in fury: “Kill!!! Kill!!! Kill!!! This Emperor will go out to kill those motherfucking Han dogs!!!”

Xuan Zhen had been an ordinary farmer prior to the apocalypse but this Manchu Empire was carved out painstakingly by him. After he had become Emperor, his skills and level had stagnated a little, being weaker than Quan Sheng but he was still one of the top few Evolvers.

“No!! My Liege, you cannot be rash!”

“Be appeased, my Liege!!! Be appeased! Those Han dogs are just ants. Our army will definitely win. Your precious body cannot be harmed!”

“Be appeased, my Liege!!!”

“.....”

A number of the officials got down on their knees and began begging. The Manchu Empire was also an authoritarian state. Hence, Xuan Zhen held a high position in their minds. If he were to die, the entire country would be plunged into chaos.

The strong preyed on the weak, this was the rule in the Central Plains. If the Manchu Empire was to really crumble, the various factions would gobble them up without leaving anything. For the prosperity of the country and their own sake, they would definitely not wish for Xuan Zhen to be in jeopardy.

One of the officials suggested, “My Liege, it’s been a long day. The soldiers are exhausted. Why don’t we withdraw the troops for today and resume battle tomorrow?”

Xuan Zhen looked at the sky, noting that the sun had already set. There was not much daylight left and the Manchu forces were adept at battles out on the fields, not in city breaches.

Xuan Zhen pondered before giving the order reluctantly, “Withdraw!”

With that order, the Manchu troops that had been subjected to the numerous deaths and casualties quickly pulled out. They were still elite soldiers. After all, even with the withdraw, they didn’t collapse.

The Han forces had similarly lost a lot of comrades and many are heavily injured. Most of them were exhausted and had no energy left to chase after the retreating Manchu forces. Some even directly laid on the ground to sleep right after the Manchu forces withdrew.

After Xuan Zhen obtained the results of the battle, he had been upset. Having activated 4,000-troops to march on Tian Mu Town, they had actually lost 1,900 with 500 heavy casualties. Only the remaining thousand were fine. They had lost 6 out of 8 tanks, 18 of their IFV’s and 20 gun-mounted vehicles. All 3 White Armor forces had been wiped out. This was truly one of the most devastating losses that had struck the Manchu Empire. In addition, over a thousand 8 Banners soldiers lost to the Gold Wolf Riders, cutting the Manchu force by half.

On the other side, Yue Zhong’s forces had huge losses as well. Of the 6 big triads, the leaders of the Pink Triad, Heavenly Wheel sect and Golden Wolf Triad had died and their experts were wiped out. Of the 430 Han independent heroes, 260 had died, and the rest were in various states of injuries. As for the 7,000 survivors, 800 had died to the blasts and gunfire.

Most of the defensive measures of Tian Mu Town had been expended, their bombs utilized, and their landmines together with the traps are fully set off. Even their remote-controlled bombs had been fully spent and the soldiers were all exhausted to the point of collapsing.

The entire Tian Mu Town was in shambles and all the warriors

were tired. They had held on forcefully through willpower as the pressure by the Manchu forces had been too much.

Yue Zhong led the remaining 8 Guards to walk amongst the people, consoling the broken and encouraging the hopeless.

When Yue Zhong appeared, most of these soldiers were all excited. His performance had amazed them. Killing over 200 soldiers, destroying 6 tanks and he had even been fighting at the frontlines the whole time. He led his Guards to provide assistance everywhere they could, repelling many of the Manchu elites. If it weren't for Yue Zhong, Tian Mu Town would have long fallen.

Yue Zhong ordered Ximen Lie to pick out another 2,000 able-bodied people to be drafted into various units. He even provided guns and sabres to equip these temporary fighters.

These survivors were mainly a motley bunch. If it were a clash on the battlefield, they would easily be killed. However, in the current state of Tian Mu Town, it was still possible for them to do battle. Of course, this was discounting skill level.

By the time everything was done and night had fallen, Yue Zhong ordered for food to be distributed to all the soldiers.

The soldiers dug in with gusto, eating their buns and drinking a little hot wine. It would likely be their last meal anyway.

Pi Jian Yi came up to Yue Zhong and asked with concern, "Alliance Chief! What do we do now? If they continue tomorrow, we might not be able to hold on."

Although Tian Mu Town now had an additional force of 2,000 soldiers, they were not versed in their weapons and it was impossible to expect them to fare well against experienced soldiers.

The Manchu forces had about 4,000 even after their heavy losses. If they truly hardened their hearts to go all out, Tian Mu Town was unlikely to remain standing.

After such a tough battle, Pi Jian Yi and the rest of the prideful

experts had no choice but to admit that Yue Zhong was truly strong and had come to obey his commands wholeheartedly.

Yue Zhong's gaze flashed with a solemn light, "I know. Tonight will be the crux. If we want to protect Tian Mu Town, it will depend on tonight's outcome!"

Pi Jian Yi faltered, "Night raid? We have too many clowns and it's not suitable for an extended battle. Chief, isn't it too risky?"

Yue Zhong sat down and closed his eyes: "Rest well and recover!"

"Forget it! At most, I'll just sacrifice this life of mine! In any case, I've killed my fair share today!" After which, Pi Jian Yi also sat down directly.

The rest of the 7 also sat down to regain their stamina. They were all exhausted, after having to run about everywhere to kill their enemies. Even if they were top Evolvers, their expenditure of their spirit and stamina was not low as well.

Chapter 619: Assassinating Xuan Zhen!

As night fell, under the cover of the darkness, Yue Zhong, his 8 Guards, Tenpyo Saka, Zhao Jing Lei and a few others crept out of Tian Mu Town. This was the remaining elite forces that could be activated. The other experts of the remaining 3 triads were too exhausted and needed to rest. There was only the peak-level experts of the Guards as well as Zhao Jing Lei who could still put up a fight.

“Leader!” In the dark, Bai Xiao Sheng leading 80 elites, appeared in front of Yue Zhong.

“So he still had some reinforcements!” Seeing the appearance of Bai Xiao Sheng and the rest, Pi Jian Yi and the other Guards were all shocked and a sense of excitement welled up in their hearts.

Now that the situation was dire, having extra strength was always better.

Yue Zhong nodded lightly and led his men towards the camp of the Manchu Empire forces.

The campsite had thick steel wires set up around it as well as countless sharp wooden fences around it. Outside of the fence, there were sharp roadblocks as well as deep trenches behind the fences. At every major entrance, there were machine guns and defence points ready to engage in any potential enemy. There were countless sentries all around the camp as well, including a number of large lights sweeping the external areas.

Being one of the largest factions of the Central Plains, it was a given that their defence would be tight unlike those miserable smaller factions that lacked proper fortifications.

Yue Zhong ordered: “The whole lot of you, wait here! Tenpyo Saka, come with me.”

Amongst the Evolvers present, only Yue Zhong and Tenpyo Saka

were extremely well-versed in stealth, night combat and assassination. The rest of his elites might be strong enough to deal with all of the guards of the camp but it would definitely alarm the other experts of the Manchu Empire.

Tenpyo Saka nodded expressionlessly and activated her Second Order Stealth, disappearing into the night.

Yue Zhong followed suit and disappeared as well.

“The Alliance Chief truly has many tricks up his sleeves.” Pi Jian Yi thought silently as he watched Yue Zhong fade away.

During the day, Yue Zhong had used his Electromagnetic Gun to take down numerous enemies and his prowess had left deep impressions amongst all those present. Now, during the night, he even had the ability to engage in assassinations. Such an expert was rare to Pi Jian Yi.

Yue Zhong evaded all the searchlights, making use of the darkness to sneak into the camp noiselessly. With the cover of his Second Order Stealth, there was absolutely no way for the sentries to discover his presence.

“That should be the lodgings of an important person. I should kill him.” Yue Zhong wasn’t too sure of the layout of the camp and had to fumble around. Hence, he chose the most eye catching tent and made his way there.

Outside the golden tent, there were 8 guards stationed and they held rifles as they radiated an imposing aura. No one would be able to escape their watchful gaze.

Yue Zhong instantly activated his Art of Fear, as a strong Spiritual blast enveloped the 8 guards, their vision turned black.

Yue Zhong made use of the window to rush into the tent. The moment he entered, he disengaged the Art of Fear and the 8 Guards regained their senses. Due to the short instant, they weren’t affected too badly but they weren’t sure what had

happened either.

Inside the lavish tent, there were luxurious Turkish rugs on the ground and beautiful crystal lamps are hanging around. On a small podium, there was a redwood table with a large and imposing emperor seat. 2 bookcases were right beside the seat, filled with countless books.

Yue Zhong had just entered the tent when he heard a number of hurried footsteps. His heart skipping a beat as he dashed behind one of the bookcases and casted his Second Order Stealth again.

Curtains were pushed to the side as Xuan Zhen walked in from another part of the tent. The other 3 were precisely Ao Dou of the White Armor troops, Duo Ma who led the armored battalion, as well as Bao-Er Tai who led the 8 Banners Army.

Ao Dou and the other 3 were the trusted aides of Xuan Zhen and were the main pillars of the Manchu Empire. They were faithfully loyal to Xuan Zhen.

Xuan Zhen sat on the Emperor seat and looked to Duo Ma as he asked, “Duo Ma? How confident are you in taking down Tian Mu Town?”

Tian Mu Town’s current fighting force was enough to alarm Xuan Zhen and he was worried about the outcome of the battle the next day. Should they fail, they would truly become a laughing stock of the Central Plains and worse, they would lose much of their forces. At the same time, it would cause Tian Mu Town’s prestige to rise and if they don’t manage to wipe the Han Alliance out, there would be many more who might join in the future.

Duo Ma answered with confidence, “My Liege, rest assured, Tian Mu Town is at the end of its ropes. Your subordinate dares to guarantee that the current actual force may not even number more than 300. Even if they equip the survivors with weapons, they’re a bunch of ordinary people and aren’t cause for concern. Tomorrow noon, I will make sure to crush their resistance and present Tian

Mu Town as a gift for you, my Liege.”

Duo Ma was confident of his words based on the intel he had obtained from his subordinates and made a judgement on the current state of Tian Mu Town.

Duo Ma looked at Dou Ao, his gaze unfriendly, “The only variable I’m concerned about is Yue Zhong. His strength is unfathomable. If he brought experts to defend, we might pay a heavy price. Today, if the White Armor Army had taken down Yue Zhong, we could have already conquered Tian Mu Town. As the captain of the White Armor troops, Ao Dou, is there anything you want to say?”

Duo Ma and Ao Dou were both subjects of Xuan Zhen but they had friction between the both of them. Every time there was a chance, they would not hesitate to poke at each other.

Ao Dou glared coldly at Duo Ma, “Tomorrow, I’ll bring all my soldiers to deal with Yue Zhong. Even if we can’t kill him, we will draw him away from Tian Mu Town.”

Ao Dou had seen the insane speed Yue Zhong was capable of. As compared to most other Evolvers, he knew there was no way they could hold him down. However, with the strength of the White Armor forces, it shouldn’t be too much to force Yue Zhong away from Tian Mu Town.

As Ao Dou and Duo Ma were starting to argue, Yue Zhong, who had been hiding behind the bookshelf, activated his Shadow Steps. He burst out with a speed 30 times that of a normal person and in addition to the Accelerate skill, with his Type 5 Treasure Windspeed Boots, his entire person was like a shooting star that shoots at Xuan Zhen. As long as he could take him down, the entire Manchu Empire was sure to collapse.

Yue Zhong suddenly burst out and no one in the tent was even prepared for something like this. Furthermore, his speed was simply too fast and in that instant, Yue Zhong’s blade had already sliced down at Xuan Zhen’s neck.

Xuan Zhen's eyes flashed with shock but he didn't even have the chance to react.

Just as Yue Zhong's blade was sure to decapitate Xuan Zhen's head, a bright bronze light radiated around Xuan Zhen's neck, turning into a shield that protects him.

Yue Zhong's Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade landed on the bronze shield, his 12-times Strength bursting out. However, all it did was to cause a loud 'Dang', and the bronze shield did not budge.

"Truly the head of an empire, with such a life-saving treasure. Killing him is not going to be simple." Yue Zhong thought to himself.

"Stop!" Ao Dou was extremely alarmed and furious. He hurriedly shot forward and activated his Gravity Manipulation ability. Yue Zhong immediately felt a 4-times gravitational force weighing down on him. It felt like he was suddenly carrying a large boulder on his back, making it hard for him to maintain his speed. If it wasn't for his 12-times Strength, he might have already been forced to the ground from that gravity.

"Assassin! Protect the King! Protect the King!" Duo Ma pulled out his handgun and fired a few shots at Yue Zhong as he screamed out loud.

"Go to hell!!" Bao-er Tai roared out in fury, his body suddenly turning large. His clothes ripped apart, and he became a were-bear, his height over 3m and his body covered in powerful furs. His ability was to transform into a were-bear, and with a speed of 12-times that of a person, he pounced towards Yue Zhong.

"You can leave your head behind for this Emperor!" Xuan Zhen had also recovered, and he shot forwards like an arrow, his right hand carrying a powerful bronze-coloured Dou Qi, his fist whistling with a terrifying speed.

"Dou Qi!! This fellow is indeed tough!!" Yue Zhong was taken

aback and immediately pushed the Dark Dou Qi within him. Instantly, the gloomy aura covered his entire body, relieving the effects of the gravitational force on him by over two times. He also swung out with a fist at mach speed to meet Xuan Zhen's fist.

The 2 heads of their respective factions could be considered the peak experts of the current apocalyptic world, and their fists were about to clash!

Following a loud, terrifying sonic boom, Yue Zhong was sent soaring through the air, crashing into the crystal lamps hanging from the roof. The lamps shattered, and he flew out of the tent.

Yue Zhong felt his organs jolted, his breath caught in his chest, as he spat out a mouthful of blood. He had not yet enhanced his Dark Dou Qi, and could not compare to the thrice-enhanced Bronze Dou Qi of Xuan Zhen. If it wasn't for his high Endurance, he would have been pulverized.

Yue Zhong immediately sent out 2 powerful flaming tornadoes right at the tent, engulfing the people inside.

When he set fire to the gold tent, he activated his Shadow Steps and rushed about in the camp, setting fire everywhere while shouting at the top of his lungs: "Emperor Xuan Zhen is dead!! Emperor Xuan Zhen is dead!! Everyone, hurry flee!! Emperor Xuan Zhen is dead!!"

Chapter 620: Burning Camp!

Flames arose from various parts of the Manchurian camp. Soldiers were burnt to crisp amidst their pitiful wails and screams. A number of soldiers managed to escape and were running amok in the camp.

When the soldiers heard Yue Zhong's shout and saw the huge flames consuming the large gold tent, they were all shocked out of their wits, and the camp was plunged into chaos. Many fled in different directions.

"Do it!!!" Bai Xiao Sheng heard the commotion and the shouts of Yue Zhong and his eyes flashed with a cold light as he led the elites under him towards the camp.

The various snipers within the elite team pulled out their weapons and began sniping the Manchurian soldiers.

Peng! Peng!

Following the sounds of gunfire, a number of sentries had their heads blasted into bits and pieces.

Bai Xiao Sheng charged towards the camp with a speed not losing out to Lightning. The blades in his hands swiftly sliced through the various defences, and made his way in.

At this time, the entire Manchurian camp was burning and the soldiers were panicking. They were easily dispatched by Bai Xiao Sheng and his team.

Xuan Zhen leaped out of the burning tent, into the skies with a huge amount of bronze-greenish Dou Qi, as he roared, "This Emperor is right here! This Emperor is not dead!!!"

The earth shook, as a large earth pillar shot towards the skies. After raising about 10 meters, it opened up to reveal Ao Dou and Bao-Er Tao within.

Ao Dou shouted loudly, “We’re fine! Everyone, heed my command! Don’t panic! Regroup and get in your formations!”

Under Xuan Zhen and Ao Dou’s enraged shouts, the entire Manchurian camp heard their words. However, it was burning badly everywhere. All the soldiers were still panicking and no one could remain calm.

Hong! Hong!

Yue Zhong’s Devil Flame managed to consume a particular storage that housed ammunition and explosives, causing it to instantly blow up.

Xuan Zhen watched with horror and screamed out in fury, “Damn bastard!!! Damn bastard!!! Yue Zhong, I want your corpse to be dismembered!!! I will definitely tear you apart!!!”

Those explosives and ammunition were the precious resources of Xuan Zhen. As the army was backward, they could only manually reload those spent bullets and scrap together a few new ones. These supplies were purely from the past and the storage itself housed over 70% of the Manchurians’ supplies. Now that Yue Zhong had destroyed them, his Howitzers were basically useless.

After he roared out with fury, he began chasing after Yue Zhong together with Ao Dou and Bao-Er Tai.

A number of White Armor experts swiftly flocked around Xuan Zhen and his team, forming a fearsome squad.

Yue Zhong did not seem to care about Xuan Zhen as he kept on firing his Devil Flame everywhere, burning through the supplies. Each time he come across a soldier, he would just slaughter the unfortunate soldier instantly. The entire Manchurian camp had been turned upside down because of him.

One White Armor soldier was giving chase when suddenly, a blade noiselessly sliced through his heart from a dark corner.

The soldier heaved his last breath and fell down in silence while

the blade disappeared.

Tenpyo Saka watched the fallen White Armor soldier, silently vanishing into the night to search for a worthy prey. She loved to assassinate powerful experts. Each time she killed one, there was a sense of achievement and superiority.

Xuan Zhen and the rest continued to give chase to Yue Zhong. Although they were beyond being enraged, they were basically helpless.

Ao Dou immediately proposed, “My Liege! This cannot go on! If we continue to chase him, we’ll only be led around by the nose. I feel that we should focus on settling the camp down and regroup the soldiers to deal with the invaders!”

Xuan Zhen seemed to snap out of his blind rage and gritted his teeth to say, “Fine!”

Once they had collected themselves, they swiftly began to reorganize their troops. There were many elite soldiers in this camp site and although many had been slain under the sudden attacks of Yue Zhong, Bai Xiao Sheng and his team, the rest managed to be gathered by their commanders and reformed their squads to launch a counter attack. Under Xuan Zhen’s orders, these squads formed into a large battalion.

The moment these elites were gathered, Bai Xiao Sheng and the rest would not stand a chance.

“Disperse!” Bai Xiao Sheng judged the battlefield and gave the order to retreat. If they forced their way through, there was a chance to kill another 500 soldiers with his team. However, his own team would have to pay a hefty price. Therefore, he chose to retreat.

Under Bai Xiao Sheng’s orders, all those elites who had been following Yue Zhong hurried away from the camp. They were the strongest in sudden attacks, night raids and assassinations.

Forcefully battling out was not something they could or should do.

Compared to the zombies with lack of intelligence, a thousand soldiers were still more than a feat for 100 Evolvers.

The moment the Manchurian forces regrouped, they went to defend the granary. Should the granary be destroyed, then their hopes would be dashed as well. They wouldn't even have enough for the journey back.

The Manchurian troops guarded the granary tightly, with numerous White Armor soldiers stationed everywhere. Even Ao Dou, Xuan Zhen and Bao-Er Tai were standing guard in case Yue Zhong came.

“Do you think that I'll be helpless like that?” Yue Zhong stared at the granary and chuckled coldly, pulling out his Falcon II Sniper and aimed at one of the White Armor soldiers.

A bright flash of light shot out and the unfortunate soldier was blasted into pieces by the cannon round of the Falcon Sniper, his body parts splattered across the ground.

Seeing that, all the soldiers were frightened and quickly dove for cover, not daring to show their heads.

With a thought, Yue Zhong summoned the Type 2 Green Jiao-Python, opened its huge mouth and then he fired poisonous gas at the entire camp.

“Ah!!! Help!!!”

“Save me!!!”

“I don't want to die!!!”

“Help!!!”

“.....”

The poisonous mist of the Green Jiao-Python was even able to turn the rocket launchers and firearms into smoking puddles of liquid. The moment it landed on those soldiers, they began to

dissolve, their eyes blinded and their bodies twisting and writhing. Their pitiful screams echoed throughout the night as their flesh dripped off their bodies.

Ao Dou glared at the Type 2 Green Jiao-Python spitting poison non-stop and he hollered with a furious look in his eyes, “Damn beast!!! You dare summon a Type 2 poison-type Mutant Beast!!! White Armor Troops, kill that beast!!!”

6 White Armor elites with the Enhanced Bullet abilities immediately risked their lives to stand out and began firing at the Type 2 Green Jiao-Python.

6 flashes of lights blasted the body of the Type 2 Green Jiao-Python, resulting in 6 large holes as countless nodes of light dispersed from its body.

Having suffered heavy injuries, the Type 2 Green Jiao-Python writhed in agony and shrieked. Although it was just a summoned spirit beast, it can also feel pain when injured.

The Type 2 Green Jiao-Python twisted about before turning into light, disappearing from its position.

The corners of Yue Zhong’s lips lifted and a cold look flashed in his eyes as he whisked out his Electromagnetic Gun and fired at the soldiers who had stood out.

A beam of light shot through the White Armor soldier, his body blasted apart.

Before the rest could even react in time, another shot from the gun had already claimed the life of another White Armor soldier.

The remaining 4 soldiers quickly dove behind cover again to avoid being hunted.

Yue Zhong then disappeared from his location, quickly moving towards another spot after killing those 2 White Armor soldiers.

“Fuck!!!” Ao Dou watched helplessly as Yue Zhong took out 2 of

his troops which had the Enhanced Bullets ability and cursed furiously.

The skill Enhanced Bullets was a rare Level 3 ability, at the same time, it required the usage of a strong gun. Therefore, hunting strange beasts and zombies might not necessarily be easier for the users to level up as compared to those who used the melee weapons of the God and Devil System. Each and every one of those Enhancers with the Enhanced Bullet ability was treated carefully and in the entire Manchurian Empire forces, there were only 6 of them who had enhanced the skill thrice. Now, they had lost 2, which caused Ao Dou to feel the pang of the loss.

Yue Zhong had killed those 2 Enhanced Bullets experts and was now using his Second Order Stealth to hide in the dark, lying in wait. His eyes were fixed on the granary like a hungry tiger.

While the experts of the Manchu Empire were still there, he would not risk it to blitz into it.

In the dark of the night, the experts of the Manchu Empire did not dare shut their eyes, maintaining their high alert.

All of a sudden, a loud commotion with gunshots happened from a particular corner, attracting the attention of all the experts. By the time the White Armor soldiers got there, there were 5 additional corpses.

When the White Armor soldiers were drawn to that location, at another dark corner, 3 sharp bone spikes suddenly shot out from behind a huge boulder, nailing the soldiers to the ground.

When the elites turned their heads, White Bones had already retracted its bone spikes, leaping behind another huge boulder about 200m away, crawling on the ground like a predator. It disappeared in a few breaths.

Yue Zhong, White Bones and Tenpyo Saka were all adept at assassinating in the night without care for their faces. Every time

they acted out, 2 or 3 would be killed and the pressure on the Manchu elites was mounting.

In the end, Ao Dou could not help but deploy the troops to tighten their perimeters, with the experts at the forefront. Yue Zhong and his team was forced to retract their weapons temporarily.

Early the next morning, many of the soldiers were already beyond exhaustion. They had been on the move since early the previous day, engaging the Gold Wolf Riders in a large-scale battle before entangling with the Hans in Tian Mu Town. They couldn't even get a decent night's rest due to Yue Zhong's pressure on them. Under such circumstances, they were already on the brink of collapse.

Xuan Zhen's eyes were bloodshot as he asked Ao Dou who had come forward to report, "How is it?"

Ao Dou's face was solemn, "We had lost 653 men last night, with 1,200 escaping. Right now, we only have about 2,800 soldiers remaining. With the ammunitions storage destroyed, our Howitzers can only fire another single volley."

When Xuan Zhen heard that, his face turned pale and he spat out a mouthful of blood.

"My Liege!!!"

"My Liege!!!"

The officials surrounding him quickly stepped forwards to support him.

Xuan Zhen wiped the blood off his mouth and spoke with difficulty, "Retreat!!! Convey my orders, we will withdraw immediately to the capital!!!"

One general was shocked and he immediately asked, "Why? My Liege, Tian Mu Town is at its wits' end. As long as we go at it with all our might, we will be able to take them down!"

Xuan Zhen's eyes flashed with clarity as he spoke each word slowly, "Last night, it was a team of 100 elites that had ambushed us. We might have the numbers now, but we are all tired. We can't even bring forth half of our strength. Even if we did conquer Tian Mu Town, we would have suffered greatly ourselves. That would leave us open for the Gold Wolf Riders and the Mongol King. We need to preserve our strength for now."

As the head of a faction, Xuan Zhen knew how to weigh the pros and cons. His troops were already pushed to their limits and were tired. Right now, it was imperative that they head back to their capital.

Following Xuan Zhen's orders, the Manchu Empire forces began to withdraw. They had arrived in arrogance and held the advantage, besting the Gold Wolf Riders of the Huangjin Clan. Yet now, they were forced to retreat in pathetic circumstances, with less than half their forces.

Seeing the Manchu forces withdrawing, Yue Zhong also heaved a sigh of relief. He had employed a number of tactics throughout the night, killing and assassinating them and had spent much of his Stamina and Spirit as well. He was likewise exhausted. If the Manchu Empire had insisted on attacking Tian Mu Town, he would have no choice but to fight it out with them, without any confidence of victory. Their retreat was the best option for both themselves and Yue Zhong.

Chapter 621: Victorious Troops!

“The Manchu troops have retreated!!! We have fought them off!!!”

“We have defeated the Gold Wolf Riders, and defeated the Manchu forces!! We’re the strongest!!!”

“We’re the strongest!! Our Han people are the strongest!!”

“.....”

When the Manchu forces left, a resounding cheer erupted all across Tian Mu Town. All the heroes who had joined in the tough battle felt a sense of pride and elation. They had actually managed to fend off 2 strong factions of the Central Plains, and they could not help but feel a surge of pride. Furthermore, adding on to the brutal nature of the battle, they had gained a valuable experience, forging their mental fortitude and bearing as soldiers.

Only through war and the sweet taste of victory, that a unit could become elite. That was the reason why the troops of the past had such glorious histories, because they had forged themselves through countless battles and emerged victorious, become stronger as a whole.

During the Second World War, the German troops had continually emerged victorious over the British troops in Africa, causing the British troops to retreat constantly. It was because the British troops had their confidence shattered. It didn’t matter even a unit was well-trained or well-equipped, if they had no confidence, it would be for naught. After that, the British troops had regained their confidence under the lead of Montgomery, and it was the same troop that defeated the German troops, flipping the results back on them.

Amidst the cheers, Yue Zhong led the 8 Guards and Bai Xiao Sheng towards the people.

“Long live the Alliance Chief!!”

“Long live Chief Yue Zhong!!”

“.....”

These Han warriors caught sight of Yue Zhong and immediately exploded out with cheers. They wanted to give their excitement and boiling pride a voice.

Yue Zhong had been at the forefront of battle these few days, and it was he who had defeated the Fierce Dong-Er Molei, and destroyed a number of the armored vehicles of the Manchurian forces, as well as leading some soldiers to launch a night raid on the Manchu camp. All his battle records were spread by Pi Jian Yi and the others, causing the various Han warriors to acknowledge him as their alliance chief.

When they had begrudgingly agreed to Yue Zhong as their chief, it was because the situation had called for it. However, now, he had truly won them over.

Yue Zhong looked at all of them with a silent appreciative glance, these 100-over heroes left from the cruel battle were good seedlings for his troops in the future.

Yue Zhong stood among them and his voice boomed out, “I’m Yue Zhong! I’m your Alliance Chief Yue Zhong! You have defeated the Gold Wolf Riders! Defeated the Manchu Empire! You all are the strongest! I’m proud of you!! As a Han, I’m proud to have you all as warriors fighting for us!! You are all heroes!! Without your valiant efforts, the 7,000-survivors here would become the slaves of those animals! It is you all who have protected our comrades!! You guys are heroes! Worthy of pride and our admiration!!”

Many of them began to clap, their eyes brimming with tears. When they had arrived here initially, many of them had their own ambitions and thoughts. At this moment however, they were recognized as heroes, giving them a taste of the honor and glory to

come.

“Let me know announce the establishment of the Victorious Troops! You are all part of this unit, and in the future, under your lead, the Manchu Empire, the Turks, the Mongol King will all be beneath our feet, and all our enemies will tremble at our name! We will use our cannons, and weapons to let them taste our might, and pay their blood debts!! We will use our cannons and weapons to protect our precious comrades!! Victorious troops, VICTORY ALL THE WAY!!”

“VICTORY ALL THE WAY!!”

“VICTORY ALL THE WAY!!”

“VICTORY ALL THE WAY!!”

“.....”

The various Han heroes began to roar out with strong feelings. It was an infectious mood, as everyone, including the gun-totting survivors began to cheer out loudly.

Not long after, all the survivors in Tian Mu Town cheered at the top of their voices, the celebratory mood strong.

Yue Zhong then raised his hands, and the cheers came to a halt. He waved his hands, and a few of subordinates under Bai Xiao Sheng stepped forward carrying 2 large chests to the podium and revealed the contents to everyone.

Yue Zhong pointed to all the Evolving Liquid and announced, “These are Evolving Liquids! As long as you consume one, you can become an Evolver. You guys should be able to recognize the value of these vials. Now, they are yours! You are all heroes! I will grant strength to all of you, and hope that you can make use of this strength to kill our enemies, and protect our comrades!”

Ximen Lie looked at the boxes and his eyes opened wide with fervor and greed, “What?! Evolving Liquid!! There’s actually something like that!?”

There was a vast difference between Evolvers and ordinary Enhancers. Each time they leveled, the distance would be pulled apart. Almost all Enhancers hoped to become Evolvers. However, Evolvers were rare, and even as the leader of the Radiant Sun Triad, Ximen Lie was not an Evolver.

Yue Zhong swept his gaze across the people, “Line up to collect it! There’s only a limited amount on my hands, therefore I can only grant it to those who participated in the defence against the Gold Wolf Riders as well as the Manchurian forces. As for the rest, there will be chances to earn them. As long as you join the Victorious Troops, and obtain enough merits, I, Yue Zhong, hereby promise you that you definitely will become a strong Evolver. It’s easy to use it, just have to inject in. After injection, you will have a fever for a day, and after resting for a day, you will become an Evolver. As to whether you want to accept it, it’s up to you. I won’t force those who aren’t confident to try it.”

The various Han heroes began to line up neatly to accept their Evolving Liquid. Many immediately injected themselves, as they trusted this leader who fought alongside them. However, there were likewise many who doubted. There were 50 of them who stood to one side, not willing to try it, just standing there eyeing coolly.

Since the onset of the apocalypse, and the crumble of society, human nature had truly changed. Although many of these heroes had fought alongside Yue Zhong, they still harbored a slight wariness. It was not easy to just trust someone and inject a substance that had unknown origins after all.

It could be poison, or worse, some form of control agent, then they would become puppets at the mercy of Yue Zhong’s control, turning into a bunch of zombies.

After accepting the liquid, some of the Han heroes felt their bodies shuddering, and they slumped to the ground, panting loudly.

Witnessing this, many of them felt shocked, and turned to look at Yue Zhong, their gazes filled with slight suspicions. If he couldn't explain properly, they would immediately fall out with him.

“Alliance Chief, what is the meaning of this?”

“Alliance Chief, please explain!!”

Facing the scrutiny of the people present, Yue Zhong maintained his calm and said, “I've already mentioned this, in order to transform into an Evolver, after taking the liquid, you will burn with a fever, after a day, you will naturally recover and become an Evolver. All of you can wait a day, and see if my words are true or not!”

Seeing how firm he was, while many of the heroes were still uncertain, they didn't dare ask further.

After all, they have seen how casually he had slaughtered his enemies, and was likewise cruel and vicious in his handling of any resentment at the start. Before anything was certain, they didn't dare to have a falling out with him.

Yue Zhong summoned Ximen Lie, “Go get some nurses to take good care of these heroes!”

Ximen Lie replied courteously, “Yes! Alliance Chief!”

Currently, many of the Radiant Sun Triad's elites had perished in the battles, and there were only some ordinary warriors left. None of them were a match for Yue Zhong nor his Guards. Hence, Ximen Lie had long since abandoned all thoughts of vying for the Alliance Chief seat, instead, choosing to become Yue Zhong's subordinate.

80 women were selected by him to become temporary caretakers, in charge of all the fainted Han warriors. Some of them were worried that Yue Zhong might do something else, thus they offered to protect the their comrades and friends Yue Zhong naturally allowed them.

Early the next day, one burly Han warrior opened his eyes and

immediately exclaimed, “Oh! Where’s this?”

“Li Da Nu, you’re awake!! How do you feel? Have you become an Evolver?”

“Li Da Nu, you’re alright! How’s your body?”

A few Han warriors saw that Li Da Nu had woken up, and immediately crowded around to ask.

Li Da Nu rubbed his eyes and stared blankly for awhile, before a hint of excitement flashed in his eyes, “En? Oh yes!!! HAHAAHAHA!! This Father, I, have become an Evolver!!! This father has become an Evolver!! I even learnt the Werewolf Transformation ability!! This father is invincible!! Hahahaha!!!”

“Werewolf Transformation?! Transform for all of us to see!!”

“Come on, do it! Let’s see if you’re just boasting!!”

“.....”

The crowd immediately hooted and egged him on, they knew while he had always been a Strength-based Enhancer, he definitely did not know the Werewolf Transformation before.

“Fine!! Let me show you guys!!” He roared out in mock fury, and immediately his muscles became ripped, fur grew everywhere on his body, and his frame lengthened itself. Within seconds, he had transformed into a powerful werewolf over 2m tall.

“He really became an Evolver!!”

“Holy, Alliance Chief’s words were not false!!”

“Damn it!! I should have gone to get one!!”

“.....”

Seeing Li Da Nu transformed into an Evolver, and even comprehending the powerful Werewolf Transformation skill, instantly leaping beyond their levels in strength, many of them who did not collect their Evolving Liquid felt regret and envious.

Chapter 622: Situ Jin!

A number of the Han heroes also began to wake up from their coma, each of them having evolved to an Evolver. They had learnt new abilities, and their strength had undergone an earthshaking change.

This situation caused the entire Tian Mu Town to go crazy.

Those who had been eligible, but not did not take the Evolving Liquid due to their misgivings the day before, approached Yue Zhong and pleaded profusely, “Alliance Chief!! On account that I’ve given my all to protect Tian Mu Town, please grant me an Evolving Liquid!!”

Yue zhong eyed them coolly and rejected, “No way! I gave you guys the choice yesterday, and you guys did not treasure it. Let me give you this opportunity then. You have all become commanders of the Victorious Troops, I hope that you will use your strength to obtain merit in order to exchange for the Evolving Liquid. As long as your achievements are sufficient, I will grant you the Evolving Liquid, and help y’all become Evolvers In my hands, there are even better versions! As long as you accumulate merits! Spread the mighty name of the Victorious Troops and let our enemies fear us! Only then, I will gift you these precious gifts.”

After they were rejected, those warriors began to join the Victorious Troops to undergo strict military training.

When they saw the astonishing effects of the liquid, many survivors were also tempted, and wanted to join the Victorious Troops to gain strength and make a name for themselves. The signup rate for the unit suddenly increased explosively.

Yue Zhong chose a good 2,000 seedlings to join.

After establishing the Victorious Troops unit, Yue Zhong then led the rest of the survivors back towards Qi Mu County.

Arriving there, Yue Zhong got Bai Xiao Sheng to train those 2,000 survivors, while assigning others to go collect the survivors of the other 10 Han factions.

After the battle in Tian Mu Town, the matter of Yue Zhong's leading of the Han Alliance to repel the Gold Wolf Riders and Manchu Empire soon spread throughout the Central Plains like wildfire.

Of the 10 Han factions, the Radiant Sun Triad had already become part of Yue Zhong's faction, while the chiefs of the Green Bamboo Triad, and Heavenly Demon Sect began to lead their 4,000 survivors to join Tian Mu Town. The Blue Triad, Red Triad, Golden Wolf Triad and even the Pink Triad also submitted to Yue Zhong, bringing their own survivors, instantly growing the faction to a mighty size of 30,000 people.

The attention of all the powers in the Central Plains soon fell onto these huge Han Alliance, and everyday, there would be solo warriors who arrived to join them.

Out in the Central Plains, besides the 3 large empires, the Han Alliance had suddenly become the 4th faction.

“Alliance Chief! Someone requests an audience!”

On a particular field, Ximen Lie came running, noting Yue Zhong training his body by carrying a large boulder. At the same time, he was under the pressure of 4-times gravity while activating his Dark Dou Qi.

Every day, after settling his affairs, Yue Zhong would use this method to train his Dark Dou Qi, in order to get a better sense of it. Sometimes, employing an additional skill that was familiar would mean an additional trump card on the field.

Yue Zhong threw the huge boulder to the ground, and took a deep breath, his eyes turning to fix on Ximen Lie, “Who's looking for me?”

Ximen Lie replied: “It’s from the People’s Army! The Mongol King Hu-E Ran’s subordinate Guo Ming had led a troop of a thousand soldiers to attack them. The envoy is here to seek assistance. Chief, are you going to grant him an audience?”

Yue Zhong frowned as he pondered, before saying, “Let him in!”

A man in tattered clothes that looked dusty and pitiful, yet his stature straight and his gaze resolute came before Yue Zhong. He spoke, “Lieutenant Ying Kong of the Border Guards greets Chief Yue. I came seeking your assistance in deploying your troops to rescue our Huyan Town.”

Yue Zhong looked at this man with appreciation and said, “Can! I can deploy my troops to your town. However, I want the survivors to all come under my faction, including your troops!”

Ying Kong stared right back at Yue Zhong without any fear, “I would like to ask Chief Yue a few questions!”

“Please ask!”

Ying Kong immediately shot, “First, If you were to lead the Han Alliance to defeat the Mongol King, the Manchu Empire, the Turk Empire, how would you deal with the survivors from these 3 factions?”

Yue Zhong did not hesitate and immediately replied, “Those whose hands had been stained by Han blood would be executed. Their families would become slaves. As for those ordinary citizens, as long as they did not partake in any activities in harming the Hans, and surrender, I can treat them as ordinary citizens as well. However, there will not be any privileges. In my Han Alliance faction, all citizens are equal, I would not mistreat any particular race just because. Likewise, there would not be any pardon any offences. Even any Hans within the 3 main factions, as long as their hands are dyed with their fellow Hans’ blood, they would not be spared!”

Yue Zhong's principle had always been an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth. He would handle violence with violence, and repaid evil with evil. He had no particular hatred for the rest of the races, after all, when he was in university, he had many friends of different races as well.

However, in this apocalyptic world, there were many nationalistic or racist people. In the west, there was the Nazi Germany, the Japanese right-wing faction, the brutal nature of Country A, as well as the white supremacists of America and Europe as well. They all felt their own race to be the strongest and viewed other races with contempt.

During peace times, they already had a certain degree of power. In this world where trust was lacking, any nationalistic person could quickly gather like-minded individuals like a beacon.

Ying Kong then continued, "Second, half of the survivors in Huyan Town are Mongolians, how do you intend to deal with them?"

Yue Zhong replied indifferently, "If they didn't do anything wrong, they are still eligible to become my citizens. I'll treat them fairly just like the rest of the survivors, as long as they're willing to work, I can guarantee that their quality of life would not be worse off. If they have committed any major offences, then, they will be dealt with. This has nothing to do with their racial background, just themselves and their conduct. Same goes for the Hans in my camp."

Ying Kong looked at him fearlessly and said, "Good! Chief Yue, in that case, as long as you keep your promise and treat everyone fairly, the People's Army would join you. I, Ying Kong, am a Mongolian myself."

Many Mongolians had aspects of their lives that intertwine with the Hans, therefore, marriages between both sides were common. Not every Mongolian wanted to capture a Han to be a slave.

Although Ying Kong was Mongolian, he was a Border Guard with a strong sense of honor. He and his comrades had continued to protect the 800 survivors of Huyan Town through their resolute wills. To them, there were no distinction between Mongols or Hans, it was just Chinese and foreign invaders.

The actions of the self-proclaimed Mongol King of raiding various places to get slaves crossed a line with Ying Kong. He did not approve of it. Somehow, Guo Ming, Hu-E Ran's subordinate, had set his sights on Huyan Town and the 800 survivors there, intending to subjugate them. Since Ying Kong and the rest of his comrades were at their wits' end, they could only approach Yue Zhong for help.

Yue Zhong made the decision to assist, and immediately deployed Bai Xiao Sheng, Yin Shuang as well as 50 Special Forces Evolvers towards the base of the People's Army.

The Victorious Troops were still undergoing training, and under the guidance and instructions of the various elites who had been through battles, they were all slowly but surely getting stronger. Before their training ended, Yue Zhong wasn't willing to send them on a live exercise.

In his plans, this Victorious Troops will be one of the strongest armies he had to sweep through the Central Plains. He needed to ensure that they were of the highest standards.

Huyan Town was a small town in the Central Plains, with a population of about 2,000 in the past.

With the apocalypse, the Border Guards that had been stationed nearby managed to save 500 from the zombies. Due to their protection, the survivors from the surrounding areas began to come, and boosted the population to 800.

This small town had led a life of little conflict, and now, their peace was about to be disrupted. A thousand-strong unit of riders kicked up a storm of dust as they arrived in front of the town.

Guo Ming, as the leading captain of this unit, pointed to the town and ordered coldly, “Kill! The first person to make his way in will be promoted 3 ranks, and given 5 bulls, 10 beauties. After the town is ours, other than the Mongolians, everyone else is to be our slaves! Kill!!”

“Kill!!”

“Kill!!”

“Kill!!”

“.....”

The riders charged forth with bloodthirsty looks towards Huyan Town!

Peng! Peng! Peng!

From Huyan Town, there were suddenly loud gunshots that rang out, instantly killing a number of riders.

However, due to the lack of firearms, as well as the absence of heavy firepower, there were only about 60 .81 rifles. Furthermore, having been utilized often, the bullets remaining were very limited.

A soldier came up to a man with a burly frame, a huge moustache and beard, and said, “Captain! I only have about 5 magazines left!”

This bearded soldier was the leader of the the Border Guards, Situ Jin.

Situ Jin replied, “Save the ammunition, let them come closer, then we fire!”

Another soldier had a face of concern, “Captain! The bullets are dwindling! I don’t think we have more than 200, but they have a 1000 people, what do we do?”

Situ Jin looked at all of them, a grin on his face, “What’s there to be worried about? Once the bullets are out, we still have our blades! Without our blades, we still have our teeth and fists!

Protecting the people of the country is our duty! There are 800 of our fellow countrymen relying on us! Protecting them is our duty, our responsibility! I know it will be hard for us to live past today, if you want to leave, I won't blame you! You all have been the best soldiers this country could have gotten, and are my good brothers! Whether you choose to die here with me, or to leave and live on, you will forever be my close friends and brothers!"

Chapter 623: The army of the Mongol King!

One soldier replied passionately, “Captain! What’re you saying? Those who wanted to leave would have long gone!”

Another chuckled and said, “Precisely! Since we all stayed on from the beginning, we knew this day would come sooner or later!”

Situ Jin looked at these 60 soldiers who had stayed behind with him with a gratified expression.

At the beginning, there were a total of 200 who had followed Situ Jin. However, 140 of them could not stand the slow decline of the town, nor were content with the status quo, hence they chose to head for greener pastures with other factions. Only Situ Jin and the remaining 60 of them held onto their beliefs resolutely, silently keeping guard over the survivors.

Situ Jin roared out and fired at one rider, shooting him down, “Great!! Then let’s show our them fighting spirit!”

Following that, a number of gunshots rang out, and a few more riders fell from their horses.

Outside of Huyan Town, a huge ditch had been dug surrounding the entire town, forcing the riders of Guo Ming to get down from their horses to charge at the town Huyan Town was about to be embroiled in chaos.

Ying Kong and the rest saw the town about to be breached, and his face fell, “Shit!! Leader! Guo Ming and the rest had reached first!!”

“Do it! Kill anyone that resists!” Yue Zhong waved his hands and muttered coldly.

“Understood! Leader! Brothers, charge!!” Bai Xiao Sheng licked his lips, a fierce glint flashing across his eyes, as he led his men towards Huyan Town.

Following some gunshots, more soldiers under Guo Ming fell, their heads blasted.

Bai Xiao Sheng's team was made up entirely of elites, and they charged right at the troops of Guo Ming like a hot knife through butter.

The soldiers of Guo Ming were suppressed and had no choice but to seek cover. Their combat experience and ability was vastly inferior to the elite Evolvers under Bai Xiao Sheng, and were quickly at a disadvantage.

"Father!! I'll go help Father kill those baddies!" Yin Shuang smiled radiantly, before turning into a gust of wind and charging right for the enemy troops.

The moment Yin Shuang reached their area, many of the soldiers' heads were blasted by her fists.

At a glance, it was truly a horrible sight to witness heads exploding out of nowhere.

Ying Kong watched in shock, as Yin Shuang continued to tear through the enemies, "Strong!! How can there be such a strong existence?"

With just her ability alone, she could easily kill all the soldiers defending Huyan Town.

"The princess is still too strong! There's no chance for us to act!"

"Yes!! The princess is too overbearing!"

"....."

The elites under Bai Xiao Sheng could not help but discuss softly when they saw how tyrannical Yin Shuang was. It wasn't the first time they had seen her displaying her crazy strength, but each time they saw it, they were reminded of how pathetically weak they were.

"Strong!" Yue Zhong watched Yin Shuang annihilate the

subordinates of Guo Ming with a complicated expression. If there were a hundred of organisms like her, Yue Zhong did not dare imagine what faction could possibly stand up to them.

If he were to exchange blows with Yin Shuang, Yue Zhong felt that he might still be able to hold on, but if there were 2 of her, he would be killed, without even a chance to flee.

300 soldiers died like ants, while the rest lost their will to fight, and quickly got on their mounts to escape.

Those on the horses were even more obvious targets, they had just come out of their covers, and were instantly shot down by Yue Zhong and his men.

Guo Ming roared in fury and activated his Second Rank Werewolf Transformation, turning into a powerful werewolf that charged right for Yin Shuang, “Beast!! I’ll KILL YOU!!”

With a gust of wind, the little fist of Yin Shuang came blasting right at Guo Ming’s head, causing this high-level Evolver to lose his head, his body crumpling to the ground.

With Guo Ming ended in one blow, the rest of his subordinates instantly lost their minds and hurried to flee. Some even threw their weapons down to surrender.

The soldiers that tried to flee didn’t get very far, as they were quickly shot down by Bai Xiao Sheng and his team. This was a team that could take on over a hundred Evolver enemies, and it was not a problem to hunt down those fleeing soldiers.

After killing them, Bai Xiao Sheng and the rest then sent troops to go and collect those who had surrendered.

Situ Jin looked at Yue Zhong and the rest of his team that did not even number more than a hundred, his heart shaking with shock, “Strong! What vicious methods!”

The rest of the soldiers stared at that pretty and adorable Yin Shuang, whose white dress fluttered in the wind, her eyes filled

with wonder. This was a girl that was cute and incredibly dangerous at the same time. The stark contrast between her and the bloody scene behind her was extremely obvious.

Ying Kong came up to Situ Jin in excitement and introduced Yue Zhong to him, “Captain! Captain! I’m back!! This is the leader of Qi Mu Town, Chief Yue Zhong of the Han Alliance!”

When the soldiers around Situ Jin heard this, their eyes flashed with a strange glint, as they looked towards Yue Zhong with caution. They were of different descent and were slightly wary of this Han.

After all, the Turk Empire, Mongol Empire and even the Manchurian Empire had acted out against one another, fighting for slaves. They were worried that this Han Alliance would turn out to be another racist hegemon.

Situ Jin saluted Yue Zhong and spoke, “I’m Situ Jin of the Borders Guard, and we’re extremely grateful for your reinforcements.”

Yue Zhong spoke warmly, “No need for thanks! This time, I’ve come with the invitation for Captain Situ to lead your troops to join us. Our Han Alliance do not segregate people by their descent or race. It all depends on your conduct and behaviour. I admire your efforts in protecting the survivors, and sincerely hope that you would join us.”

Situ Jin thought for a long while, before replying, “And if I say no?”

The moment his words landed, Bai Xiao Sheng’s eyebrows arched, and his eyes flashed with killing intent.

The rest of the Evolvers beside him also stepped forward with billowing killing intent. The moment Yue Zhong gave the command, they would immediately eradicate these people.

Situ Jin and the rest truly did respect command, however to Bai

Xiao Sheng and the rest, Yue Zhong's words were the absolute. They had brought their own troops to rush here and rescue them, in the hopes of salvaging the situation and getting the survivors.

Yue Zhong looked at Situ Jin and said slow:” If you’re not willing, then forget it! As long as you promise to not be enemies, you’re free to go. I can support you by giving you a 1,000 bullets and some other food stuff. However, the 800 survivors in Huyan Town have to become my citizens. There’s no leeway for this. This is my bottom line.”

It was rare for someone of such morals and virtue like Situ Jin even prior to the apocalypse.

With regards to this type of people, Yue Zhong was extremely favourable towards them. As long as they didn’t get in his way, he was willing to take a step back for them, as an expression of his goodwill.

Hearing Yue Zhong’s words, Situ Jin and the rest heaved a sigh of relief. They knew they weren’t a match for Yue Zhong or his men. The moment there was a clash, they would undoubtedly die. They weren’t afraid of death, but who was willing to die for naught? Furthermore, they could detect Yue Zhong’s respect and admiration for them, and this caused them to have an increasing admiration for this young leader.

Situ Jin furrowed his brows slightly, as he stared straight at Yue Zhong and asked: “More than half of the survivors in Huyan Town aren’t Han, how’re you going to deal with them?”

Yue Zhong had a serious face, “Equal treatment! I’ve said this before, I will treat them like how I treat the Hans.”

Situ Jin then expressed his agreement, “Good! I, Situ Jin, am willing to join you! I hope you will stick to your word and treat them all equally!”

“Good! Good! Good!” Yue Zhong saw how readily Situ Jin had

decided to join in, and he immediately broke out in an appreciative grin. With all sorts of talents under him, as well as the addition of such exemplary soldiers, who were willing to die for their beliefs, it was truly a terrifying force to have.

Although Situ Jin and his troops were not much different from normal soldiers, with the Evolving Temple under Yue Zhong's control as well as the Evolving Liquid, in a short while, he could easily cause them to all undergo heaven-shaking transformations. All he lacked were people that he could trust, until now.

Yue Zhong eyed them and spoke, "Situ Jin, you've been in the service for quite a while, you must be quite clear on the various locations of the armories. I want to know the weapon and storage facilities you and your brothers are in charge of."

Yue Zhong wanted to get these soldiers into his wing because he knew they were privy to the locations of various military facilities. These facilities were definitely full of decent firepower. They were his targets.

As of now, a small portion of Yue Zhong's current firepower had been brought from Hunan, whereas the rest was won through battles.

Although there were already large scale manufacturing lines set up over at Guang Xi and Hunan, both bases also require the firepower. He had hoped to gain another large supply over here in the Central Plains. If he was successful, it would help with his conquests.

Situ Jin frowned and began to ponder, in his mind, those facilities were national treasuries, and were considered national secrets.

Ying Kong saw Situ Jin's hesitation and immediately spoke, "Captain! What are you still hesitating about? The country is already destroyed, and now, we're all struggling for survival! We need to protect the country, but how can we just rely on our

bravery and fists? We can't protect anything like that!"

Ying Kong's words were like a bolt of the blue that shook Situ Jin, who remembered that they were almost prepared to go against the enemies with their melee weapons. He immediately understood.

"According to what I know, there're a total of 13 military facilities, located around these areas." Situ Jin brought out a map and started pointing at certain locations. "This place is small, and there had been a platoon stationed there. The things inside are most likely taken. These 2 are also bases of company-level, the items inside also likely claimed. This camp had been opened by the Mongol King. There's one location which I'm fairly certain that no one has touched yet, it's this!"

Situ Jin pointed to one particular valley, "In this Ulan Mountain Range, there's a field regiment secretly stationed there. In the past, I'd been deployed there once, and it's a very secretive location. There shouldn't be many who know of it. There's still a regiment's worth of equipment there."

When everyone heard it, their eyes lit up, their expressions excited.

In this apocalypse, a single IFV could cause a small-sized faction to quake in fear. 4 tanks were enough to plow through a 10,000-strong faction.

There were many tanks within a regiment's station, with assault helicopters, IFVs to boot. If they could gain the base, then Yue Zhong's Central Plain faction would grow yet another level of strength.

Situ Jin reminded them, "However, Leader, the Ulan Mountain Range is truly dangerous! According to what I know, there are plenty of Mutant Beasts lurking there, and it's a location of peril for humans. Many experts had tried to go there to hunt the Mutant Beasts to level up, but those who went had not come back. They're

mostly like dead, having become meals for the Mutant Beasts!! It's extremely dangerous there!!”

Yue Zhong pondered a while before replying, “I got it!”

Situ Jin had become Yue Zhong's subordinate, thus the survivors in Huyan Town were automatically Yue Zhong's citizens. They were then herded out of the town, making their way for Qi Mu Town.

Yue Zhong had just arranged for the 800 survivors to move to Qi Mu Town, when there was a sudden appearance of a dust cloud about 10 miles in the distance from Qi Mu Town. A huge force had appeared.

One sentry caught sight of them, where there were plenty of riders, tanks, IFVs, gun-mounted vehicles, Howitzers, and his face fell, “No good!! It's the Mongol King's troops!! Quickly, report to the Leader!!”

“What? The Mongol troops are already here to attack?” The moment Yue Zhong heard it, his expression turned ugly, “What a timing. The Mongol King is truly not simple! Fuck!”

At this time, the Victorious Troops were still undergoing training, and the rifles in his hand numbered only about 3,000, but there were about 300,000 rounds. They lacked heavy firepower, there wasn't even a single rocket launcher. It was the time where Yue Zhong's Central Plains forces were still weak, and Hu-E Ran's chosen timing of attack was too perfect.

Chapter 624: Grey Wolf Rider and Blood Eagle Rider!

After taking in all the survivors of the different triads and factions of the Han Alliance, Yue Zhong had a sizeable number of survivors. What he lacked now was time, the time for these people to become decent fighters.

It was at this crucial period that Hu-E Ran had suddenly launched his attack. If Yue Zhong chose to run, then a few tens of thousands of Han people would land in his hands. Yue Zhong had not yet established his position in the Central Plains, and he had no choice but to engage Hu-E Ran's forces.

Atop the city wall around Qi Mu Town that was built not long ago, many commanders and their subordinates had caught sight of the approaching Mongol troops. Their faces were all unsightly.

"It's the Blood Eagle Rider!! That's the Blood Eagle Rider!! A-Mu Xidai!!" One commander, whose eyesight was decent, caught sight of the Blood Eagle banner and his face fell.

Upon hearing this name, the soldiers who had just joined Yue Zhong all had pale faces.

The Blood Eagle Rider A-Mu Xidai was a powerful expert on par with Dong-Er Molei of the Gold Wolf Riders. The Blood Eagle Riders under him were the strongest force under Hu-E Ran, used frequently in his battles to expand.

A-Mu Xidai had followed Hu-E Ran on his many conquests, and in each territory, as long as there was a male over 1.2m, he would kill them. The number of people that had been slaughtered at their hands were over 20,000. He was one of the most renowned generals in the Central Plains, and had defeated Dong-Er Molei in countless clashes before.

"Grey Wolf Rider Bo-Er Zi! He's here too!!"

“Tyrant Bear Bo Lei! He’s here as well!!”

“And Grey Panther Wu Liang Shu!”

“Red Wolf Shi Yi Xin!”

“Venomous Dog Shu A-Tai!”

“.....”

Looking at the various flags, the commanders all became extremely agitated. The Mongol King had over 40,000 troops, and this time, he had actually deployed half of them, especially the appearance of Blood Eagle Rider A-Mu Xidai and Grey Wolf Rider Bo-Er Zi. Other than these 2 leaders, the appearance of the other infamous generals sent shivers down the spine of the soldiers present.

Within Qi Mu Town, the Victorious Troops had not even trained for more than 10 days, and they were still lacking in skills and firepower. The Mongol King Hu-E Ran had decided to use the butcher knife to slaughter the chicken, and deployed 20,000 elites to assault Qi Mu Town. A dark shadow was cast over the entire town.

Yue Zhong looked out at the approaching troops and laughed, “The number of animals that had arrived is truly high! As long as we take them out, we will become the largest faction out here in the Central Plains! Everyone, rest assured, this time, since they dare to come, they will not get to go back. They will become the fertilizer for the grounds of Qi Mu Town!”

Li Guang gazed at the 20,000 Mongolian troops, and spoke confidently, “That’s true! At that time, when the Golden Wolf Riders and Manchurian Empire had wanted to attack our Victorious Troops, we still managed to beat them away! These are just 20,000 pigs. It would just take a longer time to kill them!”

An elite troop needed self confidence. After becoming the commander of the Victorious Troops, Li Guang had also gained

some pride. As long as Yue Zhong was around to maintain the morale, he was certain Yue Zhong could lead them to victory. There was almost a blind reverence from Yue Zhong's abilities already.

“Yes! Those are just 20,000 pigs! We can simply take them out!!”

“The Mongol King had barked up the wrong tree!! In front of us, they're just ants!”

“.....”

Seeing the confidence of Li Guang and Yue Zhong, the officers who had been riled up because of the appearance of those Mongolian experts began to calm down, and started to point at the enemy. Their confidence came from Yue Zhong himself, as long as he was around, they would not lose.

Situ Jin eyed those commanders and was secretly in admiration of their bravery. Even he himself was perspiring when he heard the names of Blood Eagle Rider A-Mu Xidai and Grey Wolf Rider Bo-Er Zi. These were the top generals of Hu-E Ran, and they were basically seasoned murderers, many experts having fallen at their hands.

One rider came from the Mongol Troop and shouted out in an arrogant tone, “Those inside Qi Mu Town, listen up! General A-Mu Xidai is ordering you to put down your weapons and surrender unconditionally! Otherwise, we will breach the defences, and not spare any living or moving things!!”

Peng!!

The moment his words left his mouth, his head was blasted apart like a watermelon.

Yue Zhong placed the sniper rifle down, eyeing the corpse of the rider with a cold smirk. This was his response.

Killing the envoy of the other party, this was the most blatant challenge.

Usually in a war, the envoys were never mistreated. Yue Zhong had outright disregarded that rule, and killed the envoy, expressing his desire to fight.

At the Mongolian side, a burly man decked in a black cape, and an armor made out of a Type 3 Mutant Beast hide, riding a rare Type 2 Black Stallion, its head possessing a single horn, its body covered in scales, roared out in anger, “That Han dog dares kill my envoy! When I capture him, I will chop his head off to be my toilet seat!”

This burly man atop the Type 2 Black Stallion was precisely the Blood Eagle Rider, A-Mu Xidai, one of the peak-level Evolvers in the Central Plains.

A man in blood-red robes, a helmet as well as curved blades by his waist got down on a single knee and spoke to A-Mu Xidai, “General! I’m willing to lead the men to go and get Yue Zhong’s head for you!!”

A-Mu Xidai had a face of appreciation, “Good!! Bo Lei!! You shall lead the troops to get Yue Zhong’s head for me!”

Bo Lei was one of the strongest generals under A-Mu Xidai, and had obtained much merits on behalf of his general. His conquests were second only to A-Mu Xidai.

“Yes!! General!” Bo Lei replied respectfully, immediately deploying his troops.

A thousand riders all in blood-red robes suddenly broke out from the enemy troops, and headed for Qi Mu Town under the charge of Bo Lei.

“Fool!! Riders are not meant to be used like that!” Yue Zhong eyed them and a gloating look flashed in his eyes, “Bai Xiao Sheng! Wipe them out!”

“Yes! Leader!” Bai Xiao Sheng laughed coldly and ordered, “Fire at will!”

The elites that had followed Yue Zhong all the way began to fire their weapons.

Peng! Peng! Peng!!

Following the clear and loud gunshots, Bo Lei's riders began to fall from their horses.

Bo Lei's countenance turned unsightly and roared out, "Not good!! Retreat!! Retreat!! All retreat!!"

Although there were a hundred Evolvers firing, Bo Lei felt that they were more frightening than a 1,000 normal soldiers. Every second, more than dozens of his men were shot down. He was afraid that by the time they reached the entrance, their numbers would have been reduced to nothing.

The Blood Eagle Riders quickly turned around and galloped back, leaving 500 corpses, their figures pathetic.

Bo Lei, who had been confident and proud earlier, was now ashen-faced as he knelt in front of A-Mu Xidai, "General! Your subordinate is useless, and cost the lives of 500 brothers. Please punish me!"

A-Mu Xidai glared at Bo Lei coldly, "Get up! This is not your fault! I didn't expect for them to have so many shooters as well. I've seen it, they have at least a hundred marksmen. Your defeat was not unreasonable."

A-Mu Xidai had partially allowed the 1,000 riders to go first to test the strength of Yue Zhong's troops. With this, he was clearer on what Yue Zhong was capable of.

He then turned to another man who was decked in traditional Mongolian wear, his figure slightly rounder and said, "Bo-Er Zi, this Yue Zhong is truly not to be underestimated, let's have the artillery team rain fire upon them."

Bo-Er Zi nodded and replied, "Fine!"

He then turned to give the order to his cannon troops.

Hong! Hong! Hong!!

Round after round of heavy firepower rained down on Qi Mu Town, causing multiple explosions and the destruction of some buildings. The survivors in the town could only tremble in fear and pray for their lives.

Yue Zhong had already gotten men to evacuate the survivors, and many of them had been sent into various disaster shelters. However, there were still survivors and soldiers of Yue Zhong who were blasted to death by the artillery fire.

6 assault helicopters then suddenly flew out from the Mongol camp, and begun to fire at Qi Mu Town's fall as well.

Under the continuous firing, a hole was blasted into Qi Mu Town's wall.

The 6 assault helicopters then flew over the air space above Qi Mu Town.

As long as those 6 assault helicopters could enter Qi Mu Town, they would rain hell on the entire place.

“Do it!!” Yue Zhong watched them appear about 800m from Qi Mu Town, and he immediately ordered, while firing his own Electromagnetic Gun at one of the assault helicopters.

A single blade slash sliced through one, causing it to be heavily damaged. However, the slice missed the pilot and the fuel tank, weapons dock, and it was somewhat possible for the assault helicopter to still fly.

A number of shots strengthened by Enhance Bullets were fired as well, aiming for the helicopters.

Since controlling the Evolving Temple, Yue Zhong could easily support a number of Evolvers to purchase the Strengthen Bullet ability, and push it to their Level 3 stage. Although they might not

be comparable to peak-level gun experts, they were still more than enough to destroy ordinary assault helicopters.

Chapter 625: Defeating the Grey Wolf Riders and Blood Eagle Riders!

Under the assault of the enhanced bullets, the 6 helicopters in the sky combusted into balls of flames and descended rapidly.

From afar, the faces of A-Mu Xidai and Bo-Er Zi were extremely ugly. Those assault helicopters were part of their trump cards, and it was enough to use 2 to subjugate an entire town. In this single battle, they had actually lost 6, this caused them to feel the pinch.

A-Mu Xidai gritted his teeth and spat, “There’re a bunch of powerful Evolvers in there!! That damned Yue Zhong, how did he get so many experts?”

The Mongol King Hu-E Ran had about 400,000 people under him, and there were not more than 50 Enhancers with the Strengthened Bullet skill. Even more so, there were only about 15 of them that were above Level 30. A-Mu Xidai could not understand how Yue Zhong had gotten so many experts.

Bo-Er Zi spat out in fury as well, “Yue Zhong, that Han, is one of the most fearsome enemies I’ve ever met. We definitely cannot let him grow. Otherwise, our Mongol people will become his slaves!! He has to die today!!”

Yue Zhong had only been active around the Central Plains for a short while, however, the battle prowess he was exhibiting was incredible, and it was enough to cause the 3 major factions to sit up and take notice.

Bo-Er Zi was unwilling to let such a big enemy run rampant.

He immediately gave another order, “All troops, attack!! Grey Wolf Riders!! Charge forwards!!”

With 4 tanks, 15 IFVs, 30 gun-mounted vehicles bringing up the front of the convoy, over 10,000 Grey Wolf Riders surged forth towards Qi Mu Town.

As the Grey Wolf Riders began to attack, the cannon firing did not stop. The heavy fire continued to suppress Yue Zhong and his troops.

The Grey Wolf Riders weren't a motley bunch, having undergone several battles.

Yue Zhong held his Electromagnetic Gun and fired at an incoming tank.

A bright flash occurred, and the shot from the Electromagnetic Gun pierced through the tank, before another 3 consecutive shots killed the driver, halting its advance.

As the rest of the Evolvers were unable to stop the tanks, their objectives thus fell unto the gun-mounted vehicles. Following a bright flash, a number of the gun-mounted vehicles exploded in flames.

Li Guang roared out loudly, his bow firing at the Grey Wolf Riders, "Kill!! Kill these pigs! They're all a bunch of animals!! We can just slaughter them as such!!"

"Kill them all!! Our Victorious Troops are undefeated!!"

"Our Victorious Troops are the strongest!! Whatever bullshit Blood Eagle Riders and Grey Wolf Riders, they aren't our match!!"

"Kill them all!!"

The commanders of the Victorious Troops that had undergone the horrors of the Tian Mu Town battle began to join in the battle cry, firing at the Grey Wolf Riders.

Shouting like this was able to give vent to their fear, at the same time, raise the morale of the other soldiers. If they maintained their silence, some of the newer recruits might not be able to withstand the pressure.

"Kill those Han dogs!!"

"After we breach the walls, we will slaughter them for 3 whole

days! Everybody charge!!”

“There are countless women in Qi Mu Town, after we breach through, we can play with them however we like!! Charge!! Kill those Han dogs!!”

“.....”

The Grey Wolf Riders were truly elites of the Mongol King's troops. They continued on their charge towards Qi Mu Town, facing the attacks and trudged on. As they retaliated, many soldiers of the Victorious Troops fell as well.

“We can't go on like this!!”

Yue Zhong watched this and let out a shrill howl towards the skies.

In the sky, Greenie came swooping down, and made a grab towards the ground, pulling a IFV up into the sky with it. It then released it, swinging the unfortunate vehicle towards another, causing both to explode powerfully.

After destroying 2 IFVs, Greenie then soared into the sky, and with its powerful wings, it conjured up tornadoes with its innate ability, blowing up dust storms all around the forces of the Grey Wolf Riders.

As the wind blew, many riders could not open their eyes, whereas Yue Zhong's forces were not affected, they could continue to pick off the Grey Wolf Riders with ease.

With Greenie dominating the skies, sending gusts of winds at the Grey Wolf Riders, it affected their firepower greatly, diminishing their damage output.

A-Mu Xidai's face was ugly as he looked at Greenie, “Type 3 Mutant Beast! Damn it, he could actually control one!”

The threat of a Type 3 Mutant Beast was pretty clear to all the factions. However, humans likewise possessed numerous experts

and had intelligence. The Mongol King Hu-E Ran had organized a hunt of a Type 3 Mutant Beast before, and under the joint attacks of the experts, they had managed to hunt one. That was why A-Mu Xidai knew how terrifying a Type 3 Mutant Beast could be.

His own Type 2 Black Stallion was tamed under a chance encounter. He did not know how to let it evolve into its Type 3 Stage, and he had no confidence he could control it even.

“Monster! How are they able to receive the help of such a monster?!”

“It’s too scary!! I’ve only heard of such beasts in the myths, how could one appear here?”

“.....”

The Grey Wolf Riders hid behind covers in the surroundings, and watched Greenie flapping its wings of over 80m, their eyes filled with fear. Such a beast had surpassed their knowledge and imagination, and what was worse, this beast was helping the enemy. Their morale plunged.

Bo-Er Zi looked at Greenie in the sky and roared out furiously, “Fuck!!! Kill that beast!!”

A thousand warriors of the Grey Wolf Riders began to fire into the sky, blanketing the area Greenie was in.

Greenie’s speed was naturally fast, having reached the sound barrier, and none of them could even graze it. The main threat about aerial Mutant Beasts were because they were hard to hit. Their only weakness was their low defences, unable to compare to the land-based Mutant Beasts.

Greenie continued to soar around the skies, blowing up huge tornadoes, landing from time to time to grab a few of the Grey Wolf Riders.

The Mongolian warriors were basically helpless against Greenie, and could only fire into the sky, though their efforts were in vain.

Yue Zhong was relying on Greenie to distract the Grey Wolf Riders, while he raised the Electromagnetic gun to blast the tanks and armored vehicles into oblivion.

Greenie continued to harass the 9,000-strong Grey Wolf Riders for half an hour before flapping its wings and disappearing into the distance.

The tornadoes also came to a halt. After all, continually releasing its innate ability would take a toll on Greenie's Stamina and power, it could not last forever.

However, the moment the dust storms disappeared, the armored division that was supposed to spearhead the assault had been completely destroyed. The Grey Wolf Riders could only rely on themselves to charge in.

Having lost the protection of the armored vehicles, the Grey Wolf Riders became ashened, their advance fraught with more dangers. Every step required them to pay a huge price.

From time to time, Greenie would suddenly appear and grab a warrior and soar into the sky, before releasing the warrior, causing the morale to plunge even further.

However, the Grey Wolf Warriors were truly the elite force of the Central Plains, even under such duress, they continued on resolutely towards Qi Mu Town.

The Red Wolf Shi Yi Xin roared out loudly, "Everybody charge!! Victory is right in sight!! Charge!!!"

At this time, loud motor sounds roared out from the distance, as 8 Thunder Fighters shot towards them from the distance.

The 8 Thunder Fighters swiftly flew over the Grey Wolf Riders and dropped cluster bombs into their midst.

Hong!! Hong!! Hong!

Following loud explosions, the Grey Wolf Riders were instantly

plunged into a scene right out of hell.

After one round of cluster bombs, the 8 Thunder Fighters shot towards the heavy cannons team of the Grey Wolf Riders. After all, those artillery weapons were a bigger threat compared to ordinary soldiers.

The 8 Thunder Fighters quickly locked onto the artillery team of the Grey Wolf Riders, and fired a massive amount of rockets at them, causing the entire land to be obliterated.

“Retreat!! Everybody!! Retreat!!” Seeing this, Bo-Er Zi’s face was pale as a sheet, and he hurried to scream!!

A-Mu Xidai saw the terrors of the 8 Thunder Fighters as well and he ordered the same, “Retreat!! Everybody retreat!!”

The Mongol King’s forces were helpless against aerial enemies. If A-Mu Xidai insisted on battling on, their forces would definitely be annihilated.

Hearing the orders, the Grey Wolf Riders and Blood Eagle Riders quickly retreated pathetically.

Having destroyed the artillery camp, the 8 Thunder Fighters continued to give chase, killing the warriors of the Mongolian forces. Yue Zhong also made use of the chance to lead the elites of the Victorious Troops to pursue them, killing over a thousand warriors of the Grey Wolf Riders and Blood Eagle Riders, capturing 200 of them, resulting in a heavy defeat for the Mongolian troops.

Chapter 626: Refining the Blood Lotus!

Zhao Tian Gang came out from one of the thunder Fighters, hurrying to Yue Zhong as he saluted, “Zhao Tian Gang greets Leader!!”

Yue Zhong patted Zhao Tian Gang’s shoulders and laughed, “Good timing! This time, if it wasn’t for you guys, we would have been in danger.”

If Zhao Tian Gang had not brought the 8 Thunder Fighters to provide reinforcements, Yue Zhong would definitely be in for a tough battle. He might have to sacrifice numerous soldiers to protect Qi Mu Town.

Another charismatic commander came forward with 100 elites as they all saluted to him, “Lie Ming Yi greets Leader!”

Lie Ming Yi was the powerful expert that Yue Zhong had recruited from Port Fang Cheng. He had already risen to the rank of Lieutenant Colonel. Amongst Yue Zhong’s forces, rising in rank relied on merits and contributions.

Guang Xi and Hunan were expanding quickly. Within a short span of time, there’s no means of moving their troops.

Lie Ming Yi was extremely clear that Yue Zhong intended to expand into the Central Plains. That was why he had brought his troops to support Yue Zhong. Each of his soldiers were powerful Enhancers of above Level 30.

Yue Zhong looked at Lie Ming Yi and his troops, smiling slightly, “Very good! Your timing was impeccable! I’m currently lacking manpower, your arrival is just too timely!”

With this 100 Evolvers, Yue Zhong had a force of over 300 Evolvers and it was a force to be reckon with. If they were to clash against the Blood Eagle Riders, Yue Zhong would not be worried.

Zhao Tian Gang chuckled and turned his body slightly, “Leader,

look who's here! Hehe!"

From behind, 2 beauties stepped out. One older and the other one, younger. The older lady possesses a head full of lush black hair, her features exquisite and perfect, with a hint of valiant aura about her. The younger one was likewise pretty, with intelligent eyes and her skin as fair as snow. She was truly a sight to behold.

"Qing Wu, you've recovered!!!" Yue Zhong saw them and a jolt of happiness hit him, and he could not help but walk over.

When Ji Qing Wu was gravely injured by the Type 4 Flame Bird previously, Yue Zhong had placed her inside the Biological Armor to be treated. When he headed back to Long Hai City, he had left her in Yao Yao's care under the heavy protection of the camp's defences.

Ji Qing Wu looked at Yue Zhong with a complicated look as she replied mildly, "En! I'm alright now! Thank you!"

Ji Qing Wu knew Yue Zhong had been forced to Japan because of her and had given her the precious Level 7 Biological Armor. She was full of gratitude. However, her character was cold. So even though she was touched, her expression was still cold.

Yao Yao hugged one of Ji Qing Wu's hands and stared at Yue Zhong hatefully. She had treated Ji Qing Wu as her most special person, yet Ji Qing Wu had specially travelled from Hunan to meet Yue Zhong. This caused her to be slightly jealous.

Li Guang and the rest of the subordinates of the Central Plains watched the 8 Thunder Fighters in excitement. The moment these metal behemoths appeared, it had allowed Yue Zhong to defeat the Blood Eagle Riders and Grey Wolf Riders. They were extremely curious about these machines as it was obvious that these were not made in China.

Defeating the Grey Wolf Riders and the Blood Eagle Riders was a huge matter. Yue Zhong had thus thrown a celebratory feast,

inviting all the officials to participate.

Yue Zhong had then introduced his subordinates from Hunan to Li Guang and Situ Jin, before pointing to Ji Qing Wu, “This is Ji Qing Wu! If I’m not around, she can represent me. If I’m not around and there are things you guys need clearance, you can run it by her. In this short period, I will be heading to Ulan Mountain Range. She will take over my duties here.”

Hearing Yue Zhong’s orders, the subordinates from Hunan had no issues. They knew fully well that Ji Qing Wu had been part of the first few members of Yue Zhong’s conquests and is a reliable partner of his. Many of them were in fact under her once and they knew her strength. Hence, there were no opposition to this order.

However, the people from the Central Plains had strange glints in their eyes. If it was Yue Zhong himself, they were definitely ok with him. However, if it were someone else, furthermore, it happened to be a woman, they were unable to accept it.

Li Guang, who had one too many drinks, could not help but blurt out, “Leader! Who is she?”

The moment he said, he regretted it a little.

Li Guang’s words caused everyone’s gaze to fall on Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong eyed Ji Qing Wu and spoke bluntly, “She’s my woman and my future wife!”

When Ji Qing Wu heard that, her face flushed slightly from the joy and embarrassment and did not refute him.

Hearing his words, the rest of the general from Central Plains did not have any more complaints.

Yue Zhong’s might was truly fearsome. Not only did he arrange for a large number of experts to be sent from Hunan, he also brought ammunition. Many of the Central Plains generals were full of respect and awe of him. Since Yue Zhong had made his decision, they could only follow his orders.

After the feast was over, Yue Zhong went back into his room and pulled out a Blood Lotus, hesitating for a while, ‘This time, the expedition might be fraught with dangers. I’d better take one first.’

Yue Zhong had managed to steal the 4 Blood Lotus seeds from the lair of the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger. He handed one to Ou Ming to run some research and one with the Long Hai City Research Center, while he himself was in possession of 2.

As to its effects, Yue Zhong was uncertain and dared not take it recklessly. Now that he had established so much, it would be a joke if he died from consuming something wrong.

In this apocalyptic world, there were many strange treasures that could empower people. At the same time, there were equally potent poisonous plants. Everyday, there would be people dying from mistaking poisonous flora as food. Yue Zhong did not want to be one of them.

The Blood Lotus was something rare and it didn’t seem to be plentiful. After a long time of research, all Ou Ming had been able to discern was that it was definitely not harmful to humans. It was just that the effects of it was uncertain.

Yue Zhong had been safe in Long Hai City then and thus there was no rush to enhance himself so he had kept it with him all this while.

After a short moment of hesitation, he popped it into his mouth.

The moment the Blood Lotus entered his abdomen, it transformed to a warm surge of energy and coursed throughout his body. It was violent, as though it wanted to tear apart his body.

Yue Zhong felt his chest aching badly and spat out a mouthful of blood. He thrashed about in his bed and smashed out with his fist as a powerful dark Dou Qi was sent out, destroying the door.

“Assassin?”

“Assassin?”

“.....”

20 experts immediately charged out and surrounded the place. They only saw White Bones standing quietly near the door while Ji Qing Wu was hugging Yue Zhong who would not stop vomiting blood.

Ji Qing Wu ordered with a stricken expression, “Prepare yourselves! Sound the alarm! Everyone is to be on alert! Get Bai Xiao Sheng to send some men to guard the area!”

“Yes!”

Upon her orders, Bai Xiao Sheng immediately led 100 peak Evolvers and stationed them at various places, heightening security.

Lie Ming Yi and Li Guang led their own troops and started patrolling. The entire Qi Mu Town was plunged into a nervous atmosphere.

The terrifying Blood Lotus was truly overbearing, causing blood to seep out his skin. He could not help but struggle in the pain. His entire body is heating up and even his perspiration was dyed with blood.

Ji Qing Wu watched Yue Zhong who was in obvious agony, her heart anxious. She was intelligent though and immediately thought of the Biological Armor, “The Biological Armor, it can save him!!”

She placed him down carefully and hurried to her own room, preparing to bring the Biological Armor over.

“No need! I can withstand it!” Just as she reached her room, she discovered that Yue Zhong had propped himself up and managed to holler hoarsely.

After trying his best for that single sentence, he closed his eyes

and quickly channeled his Dark Dou Qi to refine the powerful effects of the Blood Lotus.

The medicinal effects of the Blood Lotus started to be refined by the dark Dou Qi, nourishing it and enhancing it.

Yue Zhong finally understood the usage of the Blood Lotus. It wasn't meant to strengthen a biological entity but rather, its innate abilities. It might be the dark Dou Qi or some other inner strength, even some miraculous innate talents.

If it was given to someone who didn't practise Dou Qi or an ordinary person lacking any innate abilities, their body would explode immediately if it's not strong enough or bleed to death even with a high endurance.

Ji Qing Wu continued to hug Yue Zhong tenderly even as his pores ooze out dirt and blood, hoping to ease his pain.

After two hours, Yue Zhong slowly opened his eyes as a bright light flashed. An indication of yet another increase in his strength.

"Congratulations. Your dark Dou Qi has gained +2 enhancement!"

Within his mind, the notification rang out.

When Yue Zhong heard it, a smile broke out on his face, "Great! Now I can save on 4 points of skills."

The dark Dou Qi was a powerful ability. Each time he channeled it, his entire body would be strengthened by many folds in a short time. The amount his body could be strengthened by was dependent on the strength of the dark Dou Qi. The more powerful his body and the Dou Qi, the more exponential the increase in strength.

With this dark Dou Qi skill, Yue Zhong's strength had increased another level and he had another means of preserving his life.

When Yue Zhong opened his eyes, he immediately noticed Ji

Qing Wu whose countenance was full of worry. He was immediately filled with warmth and tenderness. Although he wasn't some saint, had killed many people and done many bad things, the fact that he still had someone who cared for him, caused him to feel contented.

Ji Qing Wu caught sight of Yue Zhong's passionate stare. Her face flushed, intending to push him away, but at the same time, she was afraid of aggravating his injuries.

Yue Zhong looked at this incredibly beautiful woman in front of him and felt his heartbeat quicken. Initially, back at the university, Chen Yao and Ji Qing Wu were the top beauties of the school and were the dream girls of every boy. Yue Zhong had seen Ji Qing Wu a few times but he knew that they were of different worlds and that there was no chance of them ever getting together. However, he was now actually propped up on those tender legs of hers and he was incredibly excited at the twist of fate.

Yue Zhong struggled out from her embrace and reached to embrace her back.

Ji Qing Wu fell into his embrace with a whiff of her fragrance. She could detect his eagerness and her face flushed slightly, "No! Yue Zhong, you're still not alright. I'm not ready as well. Once your injuries are ok and you're back from the Ulan Mountain Range, I'll give myself to you then."

"Deal! You cannot go back on your word!" When he heard it, his heart leapt with joy and he hurriedly planted a kiss on that smooth face of hers before charging into the bathroom to clean himself.

By the time he had washed himself clean and ran out, the beauty was long gone. Yue Zhong stood there, forlorn.

Early the next day, Yue Zhong summoned Lie Ming Yi, "Do you want to be promoted?"

"I'm willing to die for Leader!" Lie Ming Yi was incredibly excited

when he heard that and he immediately saluted him and announced.

Lie Ming Yi was an ambitious man who sought fame and fortune. He wanted to climb up and gain a post that was worthy of respect and admiration. Of course, he was enticed by a position that overshadowed most of the other subordinates of Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong fixed his gaze at him, “You know our rules! To promote, you’ll need to gain more merits! I’ll entrust you with some responsibilities. If you can complete it, you’ll be the main commander of the Central Plains 1st Cavalry Brigade! If you think the mission is too tough, you’re free to turn it down. I hope that you can start organizing a guerilla troop, focused on destroying the forces of Manchuria, Turks and Mongolia! I want you to strike hard and fast, chipping away at their supplies as much as possible. Whatever means you have to utilize, you’re free to do so. I can give you 50 Evolvers and the necessary equipment and resources. Anything more than that, you’ll have to provide them yourself. If you can cause them so much trouble that it will be impossible for them to recover, I’ll immediately make you the commander of the 1st Cavalry Brigade! You’ll be in command of over 300 people! Next time, when it’s time to consider someone for the Regiment Commander, I’ll definitely keep you in mind!”

When Lie Ming Yi heard this, a strong sense of excitement and unbridled hot-bloodedness arose, “Your subordinate promises to finish this!”

Being ambitious required taking risks. Lie Ming Yi knew the dangers involved. However, he was fairly determined to complete it. After all, he had risked so much just to become a high ranking officer. He wanted to be part of Yue Zhong’s core team as well and be a part of the founding team of a future country.

Chapter 627: Mutant Army Ant Colony!

Lie Ming Yi was definitely an expert with a charm. He had brought his own 50 Evolvers as well as recruited over a hundred Hans who had recovered from their mistreatment and were vengeful against the 3 great factions. After that, he prepared enough equipment and led the men to set off.

Out here in the Central Plains, the usage of the Black Stallions was more widespread than cars. They didn't need fuel and could eat anything. They would even eat corpses. On the other side, Yue Zhong led Bai Xiao Sheng and 50 Evolvers towards the Ulan Mountain Range.

Ji Qing Wu was an extremely capable woman with intelligence. After Yue Zhong left, she intensified the training of the Victorious Troops and according to Yue Zhong's instructions, she quickly organized the Central Plains 1st Battalion made up of the old warriors.

Other than the reorganization of the army, Ji Qing Wu had managed to pull out 10,000 men to form a secondary troop and made them go through training. In the event that there was a situation, they could directly be drafted into the troops.

The secondary troops were mostly made up of civilian militia. In Hunan and Guang Xi, Yue Zhong had 20,000 elite troops but the secondary troops numbered over 100,000.

In this apocalyptic world, not only did the humans need to fend off against the Mutant Beasts and zombies. They needed to protect against other humans as well. Military might could not be compromised. The matter of the Blood Eagle Riders and Grey Wolf Riders being defeated by Yue Zhong soon spread all over the Central Plains.

Every single faction in the Central Plains began to take notice of the Great Han Alliance situated in Qi Mu Town and everyone

recognized it as the 4th largest faction.

Every day, there would be wandering lone warriors seeking to join the Han Alliance. There were even a few smaller factions with dozens of people who quickly joined them, begging for protection.

Many still felt that it might not necessarily be better but since the other 3 factions were well known to be horrendous, the moment those factions attack, other than the women and kids, all the males would be killed. If not, they would be branded as slaves and treated as such.

Other than the Hans, the other lesser races also swarmed over to join the Han Alliance established by Yue Zhong.

The main difference Yue Zhong's Han Alliance had with the Turks, the Mongolian Empire and the Manchurian Empire was the equal treatment of all races. Many of the sub-races and clans of the Central Plains had married and merged bloodlines and family lines so everyone was somehow already related to one another. It was hard to draw a clear distinction. Hence, many chose to rely on the Han Alliance.

Deep in the Central Plains, within a mansion, the Manchuria Emperor, Xuan Zhen, glared at his subordinate who was kneeling on the ground, "What? Yue Zhong had managed to defeat the Blood Eagle Riders and Grey Wolf Riders?! Is your news reliable?!"

The slave quickly kowtowed profusely, "I swear upon my life, my Liege!! This news is definitely correct. Your slave had managed to find this out after much efforts!"

"Damn bastard!!" Xuan Zhen gritted his teeth and smashed down on a table beside him, causing the table to shatter into dust.

One particular slave came up and said, "Your Highness! An envoy from the Mongolian Empire had arrived and requested an audience!"

Xuan Zhen's face regained his 'kingly' aura and declared coldly,

"So he's finally here? Let him in!"

Out in the Central Plains, there was a vehicle convoy on the move, consisting of a large fuel truck, 2 gun-mounted vehicles and 10 Hummers. This was Yue Zhong's expeditionary fleet.

Situ Jin pointed to a particular direction, "It would be Ulan Town right up ahead! After we cross it, we'll reach Ulan Mountain Range!"

Yue Zhong sat in one of the Hummers and looked out the glass window, only to see multiple mountains in the distance formed and closely linked to one another, thus, its name.

The Ulan Mountain Range was one of the greatest protected natural locations of China. There were plenty of biological life forms within. It was a treasure trove of research for biologists and yet now, it had transformed to a hell for humans. The mutant plants within were the scariest.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

Yue Zhong and the rest headed in and immediately heard dense gunshots. The intense gunshots rang out through the Central Plains, travelling far.

"Enemies!" Yue Zhong's face turned and he quickly leaped out his Hummer.

Yin Shuang, who was in Yue Zhong's arms, also stuck with him as he dashed out.

With Yue Zhong's current strength, he could easily burst out with an acceleration faster than a Hummer. In fact, sitting in the Hummer was more dangerous for him.

At the same time, other than the 2 gun-mounted vehicles, soldiers quickly jumped out from all the Hummers while their eyes were fixed in front.

Without Yue Zhong giving the order, Bai Xiao Sheng had already

led 5 soldiers with him as they charged towards the direction of the sound.

Not long after, a soldier came up to Yue Zhong and said, "Leader! It's the soldiers from the Kingdom of God fighting against an unknown faction."

"I got it! I'll go take a look, you all wait here for further orders!"

With that, Yue Zhong brought Yin Shuang and quickly made his way forward.

His speed enabled him to quickly make his way up a hill, where Bai Xiao Sheng and the other 4 soldiers laid prone on the ground.

Yue Zhong also crawled and looked below, only to discover 2,000 Judges currently launching an attack on Ulan Town.

In the skies, 12 Tiger Assault Helicopters fired rockets without stop, blasting the structures of Ulan Town.

On the ground, a number of Howitzers and rocket launchers began to blast the town.

The entire Ulan Town was covered in a sea of flames and within the flames, there were some armed militants seen struggling. They were putting up a brave fight but under the intense assault of the Kingdom of God, they had no choice but to retreat slowly. When Yue Zhong saw this, they were already beginning to collapse, with a majority of their numbers lost and 2,000 Judges still making their way in.

Yue Zhong looked down and sighed, "We were too late!"

If they had been here a day earlier, they might have been able to cooperate with the militants in Ulan Town to fight against the Kingdom of God.

However, now, the Kingdom of God had already obtained victory and if Yue Zhong were to charge in right now, it was likely that both sides would suffer greatly.

It was a force made up of Judges after all. Each of them having undergone a job change and had combat strength vastly superior to an ordinary soldier. Furthermore, they were well-equipped with countless threatening and fearsome weapons and explosives. Even someone as strong as Yue Zhong might die if not careful.

Right at this time, something strange happened. A huge sea of something brown began to charge at Ulan Town from the distance.

"Level 8 Strange Beast: Mutant Army Ant! They devour everything in their path!"

Yue Zhong fixed his gaze on them, noting that each of them were only about the size of a human's fist, and the swarm was frighteningly large. There was a strange sense of his hair standing, as he could tell that with the size of the swarm, it was like there were over a billion ants within. Such a swarm was even more terrifying than a horde of zombies. The 12 helicopters in the skies began firing down at the Mutant Ants, blasting them with explosives and fire, consuming the Mutant Ants.

Under that powerful assault, most of the Mutant Ants turned into ashes. However, all of a sudden, a particular Mutant Army Ant flew out of its swarm with wings! It flapped its wings before soaring towards one of the assault helicopters. These flying Army Ants began to fire corrosive acid to burn through the covers of the tanks, before using their sharp jaw to tear the armor open.

Not long later, the helicopters began to lose their outer hulls, as the Mutant Army Ants tore into the metal and ripped the pilots into shreds.

Following the miserable screams, the helicopters that lost their pilots began to wobble and crashed towards the ground in powerful explosions.

If the 12 helicopters had been utilized properly, they could easily turn the tides of any battle. However, such powerful equipment were actually torn like paper by the small Mutant Army Ants,

causing Yue Zhong to feel a chill in his heart.

Yue Zhong looked at the 12 helicopters being destroyed and hurried gave an order, "Quick, retreat! Retreat!!! Bai Xiao Sheng!!! Lead the men away!!! Towards the North!!! Wait for further orders!"

Bai Xiao Sheng waved his hands and led the elites away from the place hastily. Yue Zhong's body had evolved to a terrifying degree. It would be hard for him to protect his soldiers but if he was alone, he had confidence that he could break away if things get rough.

The Judges of the Kingdom of God within the Ulan Town had quickly received the news of the Mutant Army Ants colony and they hurried to escape from the town as well.

However, what caused them to be despondent was that all the tanks, IFVs and motorcycles had already long left the place, abandoning their own comrades.

The speed of the Mutant Army Ants was fast. Although their defence was weak and could be slapped to death by an ordinary person, their speed was fast, reaching 80km/hour and thus, the armored troops didn't dare stay behind to wait for their friends.

Chapter 628: Rescue!

"Damn it! Those white bastards! They should all fucking die!"

"Fuck! Damn white apes! This senior had already given my life to them and they dared to betray us?! Fuck!!! If there's a next life, this senior will fucking kill them all!!!"

"..."

The Judges that had been abandoned were the black and asian people.

In this apocalypse, whoever could provide the milk would be one's mother. As long as one could live, there were many who chose to rely on their old enemies. Selling themselves out for foreigners wasn't a big issue. Not everyone was adamant on nationalism anyway.

In the Central Plains, the Kingdom of God had managed to form a few units made up of Chinese. Now that the whole unit was in danger, the Europeans had chosen to abandon their comrades that weren't of the same race as them.

One of them who obviously had a commanding aura about him hollered out, "Retreat! Back into Ulan Town! We will defend ourselves there! Only then there might be hope!"

Under his lead, the 2,000-strong unit quickly went back into the town.

The colony of Mutant Army Ants seemed to have smelled the scent of humans and began to swarm towards Ulan Town.

The Judges started firing wildly as they found positions.

Amidst the dense firing, many of the Mutant Army Ants were quickly killed but their speed was simply too fast. After paying the price of numbers, they managed to pounce onto a particular Judge and their sharp mandibles quickly tore into him.

"ARGH!!! IT HURTS!!! IT HURTS!!!" The soldier screamed out as a huge chunk of flesh were torn by the Mutant Army Ants. With a slap, he managed to flatten one.

"AH!!! AH!!!" However, when the ant was smashed, the innards splashed out like acid, corroding his right hand, causing him even more agony.

"NO!!! NO!!!" Right after that, a dozen other ants had pounced on him and were already tearing into him, as he screamed out and struggled futilely.

More ants swarmed his body, covering every inch as they bit him and the unfortunate soldier soon stopped moving.

By the time the Mutant Army Ants moved on, there was only a bunch of bones left, without a single shred of flesh.

Under the pressurizing march of the Mutant Army Ants, many of the elites of the Kingdom of God were quickly reduced to bones, their screams ringing out throughout Ulan Town.

"Should I save them?" Yue Zhong eyed the abandoned elites of the Kingdom of God, feeling conflicted. He then charged over towards the colony.

Seeing Yue Zhong approach them, a number of the Mutant Army Ants began to crawl towards him. However, Yue Zhong had already swapped out his Hurricane Necklace and activated the ability, sending gusts of tornadoes out in all directions, blowing the ants away.

The number of ants might be crazy, but their strength wasn't too high. Thus, it was easy for them to be blown away.

By now, the gunshots in Ulan Town was practically deafening. There was no stop to them and all the Judges within were putting their lives on the line. They didn't care about the expenditure of the bullets and their guns continued to fire without stop. Hand grenades were utilized freely, blasting patches of the ants to

oblivion.

These soldiers were truly the elites of the Kingdom of God, if an ordinary person were to fight this seemingly unending swarm of ants, they might have lost all hope. However, these Judges were still fighting on with a resolute will and it was truly something to admire.

Yue Zhong blew a large number of ants away and this scene attracted the attention of the Judges in Ulan Town.

Yue Zhong barked out loud, "I'm Yue Zhong! I know you guys are the Judges from the Kingdom of God. I have an enmity with the Kingdom of God and thought they have abandoned you, I'm here to rescue you! Let me ask you this, if I were to save you guys, are you all willing to work for me?!"

Yue Zhong did not want to expend his strength for no reason so he opened with this negotiation.

"I'm willing! As long as you save this senior, this senior will definitely give my life to you!"

"Great! Yue Zhong, just based on your actions of charging here to save us, as long as you can cover this ass of mine, this senior will serve you for life!"

"..."

A number of the Judges began to shout back. After all, they had sold themselves to the Kingdom of God purely to lead better lives. There was no true loyalty in that sense. Thus, they had no qualms switching sides to serve Yue Zhong.

This was the problem with a lack of unity or bond. Such a situation would not have happened in the Mongolian Empire, Manchurian Empire or even the Turkic Empire. They were all of one race and one mind. The nationalistic view of their respective groups serve to bond the people together. Even if they were to be defeated, they wouldn't serve Yue Zhong so easily.

Yue Zhong had captured many of the Mongolian elites, but almost none were willing to serve him. This was part of the advantages of being in a nationalistic group.

The middle-aged man who had first led the troops shouted loudly, "I am Chen Hong Yi, Deputy Commander of the Kingdom of God's Mongolian Branch 2nd Battalion. Yue Zhong, as long as you save all of us, the entire unit here will serve you!"

"Good!" Yue Zhong waved his hands and sent out his Devil Flame, as a flaming tornado took form in his hands. He then slapped out at the hands and the powerful fire swept towards the colony and started to consume them.

To these Mutant Army Ants, the fire was their strongest bane. With a single sweep of Yue Zhong's Devil Flame tornado, huge patches of the colony started to burn. The crackling of the ants in the fire resounded throughout. Just this attack alone easily caused over 3,000 of the Mutant Ants to be cooked.

After Yue Zhong had enhanced his Devil Flame to its Second Order stage, it was truly much more fearsome. He could conjure up a Devil Flame tornado without expending much Spirit. Because of this trump card, he dared to step forward to save the elites of the Kingdom of God.

"Awesome!"

"We're saved!"

"..."

Witnessing this, the Judges quickly broke out in cheers. There were only 4 of them who had flame-based skills and even then, there was no way to compare against Yue Zhong. They knew that even if the Mutant Ants feared fire, they could not rely on their own flame attacks to defeat the ants.

"Gather towards me! All of you!" Yue Zhong looked everywhere and saw a patch of grass that had been cleared and quickly ordered.

Chen Hong Yi roared out loud, as he swiftly made his way towards Yue Zhong, "Everyone, blitz towards Leader Yue Zhong's position!!! Everyone, on me!!!"

Gunshots, explosions and all sorts of abilities were launched as the remaining 1,800 or so swiftly broke through and charged towards the field.

Yue Zhong's hands lit up as a long Devil Flame defensive barrier was conjured around the field.

The Mutant Army Ants swarmed over and surrounded the place. After waiting a while, they lost their patience and launched an assault.

The moment they went through the fire, their bodies started to burn as crackling sounds rang out, their bodies turning into ash.

The remaining soldiers continued to watch from their positions in fear, uncertain if they could hold out.

Should the Mutant Army Ants breach the flames, they would become food for them.

Although the Devil Flames did not seem to burn high, they burned strong, incinerating the tens of thousands of ants, without any sign of extinguishing.

As the ants continued to launch themselves into the fire, the flames continued to consume them. After burning for 20 minutes, half the colony had been wiped out and the remaining ants turned around, swarming towards another location.

Seeing this, the soldiers all heaved a sigh of relief. Many slumped to the ground, gasping for breath. Their backs were drenched in their cold sweat.

The retreat of the Army Ants left behind a huge amount of Survivor Coins, 20 White Boxes and a few blue crystals.

Yue Zhong, whose countenance was slightly pale as well, went to

collect all the drops and walked towards the field.

Yue Zhong looked at them and declared solemnly, "I have already made good on my word! Are you guys willing to fight for me?"

One bearded and burly man laughed savagely, "Hahaha! Yue Zhong, you're really stupid! You actually believed what we said? What a fool! I know you! You're the highly sought after enemy of the Kingdom of God! As long as we kill you, we will be received into the European quarters and lead a good life! You have just used up so much of your strength, as long as we all attack you, we can become revered! Everyone! Attack! We'll live like kings and enjoy ourselves!"

Chapter 629: Taking in the defeated!

The burly man was pretty insidious. Before he finished speaking, he had already retreated. He was extremely clear about Yue Zhong's strength and he wanted to incite the rest of the judges in killing Yue Zhong, whereas he didn't want to engage him personally. After all, no matter how strong Yue Zhong was, against 1,800-experts, it was impossible for him to win.

"If you want to enjoy riches, you must be alive to enjoy!" Yue Zhong activated his Shadow Steps and immediately made to grab the neck of that burly man, before pulling him out from the crowd.

His right hand then slashed down at the arm of the burly man, covered with Dark Dou Qi and combined with his 12-time Strength, he dismembered the burly man's arm.

"Ah!!! My hand!!!" The burly man screamed out in agony.

Yue Zhong then flung the offender forcefully to the ground like a broken toy, smashing him. The impact caused the insides of the warrior to jolt violently and he began retching blood while twitching on the ground.

Seeing how vicious and decisive Yue Zhong was, the rest of the Judges sucked in cold air and retreated involuntarily.

Yue Zhong swept his gaze across the Judges, "Who else still want to try and take my head?"

One Judge came out and spoke loudly, "I'm willing to work for you! However, you must ensure that I'm fed! As long as I have food, I'm willing to serve you! Those assholes from the Kingdom of God do not treat us like people! If it wasn't for the fact that I needed to eat, this senior would have long fallen out with them."

In this apocalypse, many people were willing to go sacrifice or bend their principles just for a meal. Women were willing to sell their bodies for a single bun, while men were willing to bow and

serve others just to eat.

The Judges present were mostly Chinese and many had been recruited by the Kingdom of God purely for the sake of survival. Their equipment were very ordinary ones, or those which had been disposed by the Kingdom of God. Most of the heavier and more powerful weapons were in the hands of the Europeans and thus, these Judges were usually treated as cannon fodder.

Under such circumstances, it was natural that these Judges were unhappy. However, because of their fear of the Kingdom of God, they didn't dare to rebel and could only continue to serve obediently.

Yue Zhong looked at the elite soldier who had pledged his services first and said appreciatively, "Good! What's your name?"

The Judge replied, "I'm Yu Wen Ying!"

Yue Zhong chuckled, "Alright, from now on, you're a Battalion Commander of Major rank!"

He had always treated the first one to submit to him well, this would thus ensure the ones behind to be more motivated to do the same.

Yu Wen Ying immediately got down on one knee in joy, "Many thanks Leader! Yu Wen Ying is willing to die for Leader!"

"Zhang Wen is willing to serve Leader!!!"

"Liu He is willing to serve Leader!!!"

"..."

With a way out, many of the Judges began to submit to Yue Zhong. Since the Kingdom of God had abandoned them, they had nowhere else to go and could only choose to go with Yue Zhong.

Over 1,300 of them chose to follow Yue Zhong, whereas the remaining 500 stood by in 5 groups and watched coldly.

One burly man with a fierce face, eagle-like eyes and a hooked

nose was silent for quite a while before saying, "Brother Yue Zhong! This time, I, Niu Da Li, am grateful to you for saving us I'll be sure to repay this in the future. I'll say my goodbyes for now! Brothers, let's go!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed dangerously, "Wait! Niu Da Li, what did you promise earlier? Are you trying to go back on your word?"

Niu Da Li turned to stare at Yue Zhong, his own eyes flashing coldly, "Yue Zhong! We've gathered here amicably, let's leave here amicably! Don't force my hand! I know you're strong. However, I have over a hundred brothers who're willing to go through hell with me!"

Niu Da Li had over a hundred of elites of the Kingdom of God and he wanted to make use of this chance to start his own faction.

After he finished speaking, the hundred Judges stepped forward with their guns aimed at Yue Zhong and the atmosphere turned extremely heavy.

Of those who had chosen to submit to Yue Zhong, many hesitated. Only Yu Wen Ying and a dozen others raised their guns and pointed back at Niu Da Li.

Yu Wen Ying was of a mind to rely on Yue Zhong, whereas the rest were still unprepared for such a critical situation.

Yue Zhong then pointed to Niu Da Li and spoke coldly, "Since this is the case, you can take your 100 brothers with you to hell! Yin Shuang, wipe them out!"

"Yes! Father!"

Following a bright, clear laughter, Yin Shuang shot towards Niu Da Li like a tornado as a small fist blasted towards his head.

Niu Da Li was also a Level 30 Evolver and his danger perception was pretty high. The moment Yin Shuang moved, he was overwhelmed with hair-raising sense of danger and his hands had just moved slightly. However, Yin Shuang's snow-white fist had

already arrived at his head, blasting it apart.

Killing Niu Da Li with a single attack, Yin Shuang continued to fly about, her fists being weapons of mass destruction. They continued to rain blows on Niu Da Li's brothers, causing many of their heads to explode in a shower of blood and brain.

"No!" After another 10 soldiers had their heads exploded, the rest of Niu Da Li's men finally responded and they started to fire wildly in the skies to no avail.

Yin Shuang's speed had already exceeded the sound barrier and the Judges having gathered together looked just like a bunch of fat sheep. In just 20 seconds, Niu Da Li's 100 brothers were all wiped out. Not a single one of them could withstand a blow from her.

After she had easily disposed of those soldiers, Yin Shuang ran back to Yue Zhong with a wide and innocent smile, saying, "Father! Father! I've killed them all! Did I do well?"

The rest of the Judges watched in horror as this little girl in white with a sweet smile walked away from destruction and their skin crawled, as though they had just seen a demon.

Yue Zhong grinned and ruffled her hair, before giving her a lollipop, "Well done! My Yin Shuang is the smartest and the best! This is your reward!"

Yin Shuang grabbed the lollipop and leaped into his arms, before pecking him on the cheeks, "Thank you Father! Father is the best!"

As he held her, he turned around to eye the rest of the 400 soldiers still standing on the fence, "What are your plans then? Submit to me or choose to die here?"

The Kingdom of God elite soldier whom the rest had gathered around decided not to hesitate anymore and kneeled in front of Yue Zhong, "Zhang Liu Bo is willing to serve Leader!"

"Zhao Yi is willing to serve Leader!"

"Ma Dong is willing to serve Leader!"

"Liu Xuan is willing to serve Leader!"

The rest of the little ring leaders did not dare to bargain further and immediately submitted. They did not want to become cold corpses.

Yue Zhong asked, "Good! I want to know, why does the Kingdom of God want to attack Ulan Town?"

The Kingdom of God had a motive behind every operation. If it wasn't for expansion, there must be some technologically advanced blueprint.

"Leader! I do not know! I think the same goes for everybody here." Zhang Liu Bo hesitated before replying, "The Kingdom of God is cautious against us as we aren't of the same race as them. We only have to follow their orders and the end goal or motive is never made known to us."

Yue Zhong's gaze fell upon Yu Wen Ying.

Feeling his gaze, Yu Wen Ying immediately responded, "Leader! It's true! All the higher-ups in the Kingdom of God are Europeans. Our Chinese, Japanese, African, Thai and other counterparts are only eligible to become heads of our own units. All the secrets are held in the hands of the western people. They have never told us anything."

The Kingdom of God viewed all other races with contempt. They would delegate tasks that they didn't want to these people and would not tolerate their existence within the upper echelons.

Even within the westerners, there were different tiers as well. The highest level was the Aryans, while the lowest was the Jews. However, even then, the Jews were of a higher standing than any other non-white race.

Yue Zhong could not help but frown.

"Leader! I know!" Right at this time, a small voice resounded.

Yu Wen Ying cast a suspicious glance at that soldier as he reprimanded, "Yang Xiong! Are you for real? Don't make some wild guess and mislead the Leader!"

The handsome Yang Xiong flushed as he said, "Yesterday, I slept with a white chick. She spoke some stuff in her excitement. Within the Ulan Mountain Range behind Ulan Town, there's a hidden military facility. This time, we were sent here to obtain the equipment inside there!"

Yue Zhong immediately clenched his fist, "Indeed! They had also received the news then?"

The Kingdom of God had already begun large-scale revitalizing works and could manufacture things like the Thunder Fighter. However, they had to face the whole world, thus, they still required some of the legacies left behind from prior to the apocalypse.

They already had a large amount of info with regards to major facilities as well as satellites. This was how they could monitor the entire Earth.

Yue Zhong then asked, "To whom does the territory of Ulan Town belong to?"

Zhang Liu Bo laughed bitterly and shook his head, "Not too sure. Based on my conjecture, I think they should have been some Border Guards as well as some survivors."

Yue Zhong then surveyed the area and spoke solemnly, "Yu Wen Ying, Zhang Liu Bo, Zhao Yi, Liu Xuan, Ma Dong, go get some men to scout out the town."

"Yes! Leader!" The 5 of them immediately organized small search teams and set off.

Ulan Town still had a number of survivors hiding earlier but with the march of the tens of thousands of Mutant Army Ants,

everything had been consumed, leaving only bones behind.

Seeing the bones, Yu Wen Ying and the rest had horrid expressions. At the same time, they could not help but rejoice for the timely arrival of Yue Zhong. At most, they could have killed over a thousand more but they would definitely have died if not for him.

Going back to Yue Zhong side, Yu Wen Ying had an unsightly expression, "Leader! It's bad! All the rations have in Ulan Town had been consumed by the Mutant Army Ants. There's not even a rat left. What do we do?"

Zhang Liu Bo and the rest also looked at Yue Zhong anxiously.

Each time the Kingdom of God sent a large convoy out, there would be food trucks that accompanied each mission. Since those trucks had been driven away by the other elites of the Kingdom of God and the entire ration supply of Ulan Town had been wiped clean, these ex-KoG soldiers were getting worried.

They had brought along dried biscuits and chocolates but it wasn't much. Without enough nourishment, they would succumb to hunger and be unable to utilize more of their strength.

Yue Zhong pointed to one room, "Don't worry about food! I'm prepared! The food over there is enough to last for 3 days."

Zhang Liu Bo and the rest looked at the room suspiciously. They had searched the place once but there was nothing. However, since Yue Zhong said so, they could only send someone to go search.

Yu Wen Ying came out with an excited expression, "Rations! Plenty of them! Leader, you're truly something else!!"

He had discovered over 3 tonnes of rice, which was enough to last them for 3 days.

The eyes of the soldiers were also filled with a newfound respect. They knew that it had been Yue Zhong's doing. Being able to conjure up so much, it proved that Yue Zhong's strength was

unfathomable and his ways, mysterious.

One sentry came rushing up to the group, warning, "Not good! Leader! There seems to be a division making their way over here. Their aim seems to be the Ulan Town as well."

Yue Zhong frowned, and walked over to the border, "What? Come with me! Make sure to maintain your cover. Don't let the enemy discover we're here."

Coming to the side, Yue Zhong noticed a number of riders atop Black Stallions, kicking up clouds of dust as they galloped towards Ulan Town.

"The Gold Wolf Riders! The Turkish forces!" Yue Zhong could see the Gold Wolf emblem on the uniforms and his expression turned unsightly.

Chapter 630: Ulan Mountain Range!

"What should I do?" Yue Zhong pondered while clenching his fists tightly.

There were over 1,700 soldiers that were above Level 20. Their strength was formidable. However, in the earlier clash against the Mutant Army Ant, many have spent their bullets and abilities. Without their bullets, they were just ordinary Level 20 Enhancers.

Other than the lack of ammunition, many of the soldiers had taken part in the battle in Ulan Town. After that, the clash with the Mutant Army Ants had exhausted them. Furthermore, the most important thing was that, they had just swore fealty to Yue Zhong and he had no confidence of fully controlling these men. He was worried that the moment the battle turned for the worse, they might lose their will and order will collapse.

Yue Zhong then ordered, "Convey my order! Everyone is to hide and not to reveal your traces. Wait for further instructions!"

"Yes! Leader!" Yu Wen Ying and the rest quickly hid themselves in Ulan Town.

The Enhancement level of these soldiers weren't high but they had undergone special training while under the Kingdom of God. Covering their traces while hiding was one of the basic skills.

Soon, Ulan Town became a dead town without any movements.

"This is Ulan Town!" Within the Gold Wolf Riders, one particular male who looked about 27 or 28, with a huge beard and a towering frame, muttered as he looked coldly at Ulan Town.

Another Turkic general spoke with a feverish look, "General Abudidama! This is Ulan Town. Once we have crossed it, we will have reached the Ulan Mountain Range. As long as we can gain that facilities' supplies, our Gold Wolf Riders would become the strongest faction out here in the Central Plains!"

Abudidama was one of the strongest Evolvers in the Turk Empire. He and Dong-er Molei were 2 powerhouses under Wu-er Tuotuo. He had followed Wu-Er Tuotuo throughout all his battles and conquests and had torn countless experts apart.

For the mission to obtain the regiment's worth of equipment, Abudidama had brought along 2,000 elites of the Gold Wolf Riders.

The possibilities on possessing an advanced battalion with sufficient supplies and firepower was endless. Yue Zhong had demonstrated this by making use of the Thunder Fighters he procured from Qi Mu Town. In that battle, because of the 8 Thunder Fighters, they had managed to destroy the Blood Eagle Riders and Grey Wolf Riders. Otherwise, it wouldn't have been that easy for Yue Zhong to repel those forces.

Abudidama's cold voice rang out, "En! This time, the Mongol Empire and Manchurian Empire had also obtained the same news. We need to be the fastest, the first ones to obtain those supplies. Convey my order. No one is to remain in Ulan Town for more than a second necessary. We have to make haste for Ulan Town!"

One Turk general had an expression of concern, "General! Isn't this too dangerous? What if there are people lying in wait for us in Ulan Town?"

Abudidama calmly replied, "Impossible! Those Mutant Army Ants had just gone through this town. Those fearsome creatures would have already cleaned the entire area of living things. Even if there were people here, they would be a pile of bones by now."

The Mutant Army Ant colony was one of the most feared entities out here near the Ulan Mountain Range. Abudidama had come across them once and other than himself and a few other Agility-based Evolvers, everyone else had been consumed entirely. Remembering the terror that those creatures posed, he couldn't help but feel a chill.

The Turk general immediately chose to kiss ass, "General is

wise!"

Under Abudidama's lead, the 3,000 Gold Wolf Riders immediately kicked up a cloud of dust and charged through Ulan Town, following the road towards the Mountain Range.

When they had left, Yue Zhong came emerged from a building. He had decided not to ambush them, because Abudidama would fulfil the role of being cannon fodder, testing the depths of Ulan Mountain Range.

Yue Zhong then gave an order to Yu Wen Ying, "Convey my orders! Everyone is to begin fortification works on Ulan Town! As for food and other resources, I will arrange for supplies to be transported here!"

There were all sorts of Mutant Beasts and Plants within the Ulan Mountain Range, and it was a good training ground. If those Evolvers of above Level 40 and above wanted to improve themselves, they could only head over to the mountain range to train.

Upon controlling Ulan Town, in the future, Yue Zhong could use it to produce Level 40 Evolvers.

"Yes!"

Yu Wen Ying and the rest immediately got to work the moment Yue Zhong passed his orders and began work in Ulan Town. They had undergone basic structural works and practice under the Kingdom of God as well and many had tools on them. Adding on to the fact that they were Enhancers, their Strength being higher than ordinary people by more than 3 times, the works went easy.

At the same time, Yao Yao began to lead an expedition to transport resources and supplies from Qi Mu Town to Ulan Town.

Bai Xiao Sheng quickly brought 50 elites towards Ulan Town and Yue Zhong handed the defence of the town to him, before he chased after the Gold Wolf Riders by himself.

Yue Zhong was not confident in leaving the town to Yu Wen Ying and the rest. Hence, he got Bai Xiao Sheng and Yin Shuang to stay behind.

With Yin Shuang, that fearsome girl-demon staying put in Ulan Town, even if any of the soldiers from the KoG had any strange thoughts, they could only harbor it in their hearts. Bai Xiao Sheng and the 50 elites were thus also part of the control Yue Zhong had designated.

These 1,700 ex-KoG soldiers were all trained and changed classes to soldiers. With enough ammunition and supplies, they were fearsome soldiers.

They were not some motley bunch and although there were only 1,700 of them, with enough logistics and supplies, they could take down over 5,000 elite Japanese soldiers of the Takama-ga-Hara. Not even 10,000 ordinary soldiers were a match for them. The moment they came under him, Yue Zhong finally possessed enough manpower to go against the other factions in the Central Plains.

Since he wanted to power these 1,700 soldiers and didn't want to abandon the regiment's worth of supplies in the Ulan Mountain Range, he could only go after Abudidama by himself.

Currently, Yue Zhong had already enhanced himself to be equivalent to an elite battalion. It can be said he was a one-man army himself. He had the might to contend against small factions.

He did not have any Black Stallions but with his Swift Shadow Bike, he soon managed to catch up to the forces of Abudidama.

The 3,000 Gold Wolf Riders had been diligent and rushed all the way, choosing only to rest for the night at the foot of the mountain range. Abudidama had then brought them in after they were well-rested.

3,000 people proceeded slowly in the forest with all of them on

high alert. They had followed the road that was already carved out, not daring to step out of line.

In this apocalyptic world, the forests and jungles were dangerous places. It is equal to city areas with dense populations. In the wilderness, there were all sorts of terrifying Mutant Beasts. If one wasn't careful, even a peak-level Evolver could possibly die at the hands of a Mutant Beast.

The scent of these 3,000 people had obviously attracted some of the powerful hunters within the forest and following some rustling sounds and movements, multiple pair of eyes with ferocious glints stared out at Abudidama and his men.

Abudidama could sense the danger as a high-level expert and he instantly felt a bad feeling, "Not good! We have been targeted!"

"AHH!!!" At this time, from behind the troops, a scream resounded as a Mutant Wolf leapt out from the tall grass, pouncing onto one of the Gold Wolf Riders, tearing into his throat. The scream was the last sound he made.

At almost the same time, over a hundred wolves that had been hiding in the grass leaped out, and they began to attack the various warriors of the Gold Wolf Riders, ripping their throats.

Over 200 members of the Gold Wolf Riders were taken out within that instant and some were even injured from the swipes and slashes.

"Damn it!" Abudidama was furious and he shot through the Mutant Wolves with his speed of 26 times, waving his gold-coloured curved blade as a number of sword beams slashed out at the Mutant Wolves. Many of them were easily slashed in two by him, their blood dying the ground red.

Yue Zhong, who had activated his Second Order Stealth and was hiding in one corner watching, felt a chill in his heart, "Agility-based Evolver! He must be a peak-level one!"

Yue Zhong's own speed was 25 times that of a person, having exceeded a Type 2 Lightning and few Evolvers could match up to him. The fact that Abudidama's speed could rival his and be even faster was proof that he definitely was an Agility-based Evolver that focused on the development of speed.

Abudidama entered the fray and together with a few other experts, they managed to quickly clear the Mutant Wolves pack. However, they paid the price of over 300 people.

"AH!!! Help! HELP!"

"Save me! Save me!"

Suddenly, screams of help erupted from the Gold Wolf Riders.

Chapter 631: Man-Eating Mutant Flower!

Yue Zhong caught sight of countless Mutant Mountain Leeches the size of 3 fingers, falling like rain, landing on the bodies of the Gold Wolf Riders.

They crawled all around the bodies of the Gold Wolf Riders who were screaming out and struggling, helpless as they were sucked dry of their body fluids before crumpling to the ground.

The warriors of the Gold Wolf Riders tried to slap the leeches away to no avail. Each time they slapped out, part of their flesh would be ripped off together with the leeches, their blood flowing profusely. It was a horrific sight.

Another hundred or so of the warriors struggled frantically and were unfortunately sucked dry by these Mutant Leeches.

Just as these Mutant Leeches managed to suck those Gold Wolf Riders dry, they slithered towards the remaining Gold Wolf Riders with insane speed, looking like little snakes.

After their mutation, these Mutant Mountain Leeches had undergone drastic changes, reaching powerful suction speed and movement.

When they saw the emaciated corpses of their comrades, the Gold Wolf Riders were terrified and began to back up as they hacked and slashed at the Mutant Leeches, slicing them in half.

The life force of the Mutant Leeches were stubbornly strong. Even after being sliced in two, they still wouldn't die. Many had even managed to latch onto more Gold Wolf Riders, their sharp teeth sinking into the bodies and began to suck greedily.

The warriors were getting frightened and many started to fire their weapons.

These Mutant Leeches might be small but their numbers were vast and the whole swarm of them moved towards the warriors,

looking like a sea.

"Help!"

"AHHH!"

"..."

From time to time, screams would ring out from the group of Gold Wolf Riders, many of them becoming dried corpses.

Abudidama looked at the densely packed Mutant Mountain Leeches and roared out, "Guxianli! Eradicate these damned worms!"

Abudidama's main strength was slaughtering on the battlefield. As for the clearing of such creeps, it would be like slapping flies.

One particular beautiful woman stepped out, her nose high and sharp, her skin fair. Her eyes were bewitching and her figure voluptuous. She waved her hands and a terrifying flame was conjured out of thin air, burning the entire patch of worms.

Those Mutant Worms were the most afraid of flames and the moment they were burned, they shriveled up and died, emitting crackling sounds as they were burnt.

In the Turkic Empire where experts were numerous, Guxianli happened to be a top expert fighting with fire. She was a Spirit-based Evolver, a genius amongst genius. However, her combat strength was slightly inferior to both Dong-Er Molei and Abudidama.

After eradicating the swarm of Mutant Leeches, the Gold Wolf Riders continued their advance. However, their morale was low. After all, they had not yet engaged in any true battle or fights, but they had already lost over 400 people with 50 injured. It was about 1% of their strength and they naturally could not muster any fighting spirit.

Abudidama looked at them and opened his mouth to say, "This

time, everyone had worked hard. Once we complete this mission, I will ask the Emperor to open the Red Inn and let everyone enjoy themselves for 10 days!"

"What? The Red Inn! For real?!"

"That's great! This time, I'll definitely do my best for the mission!"

"..."

Hearing the words of Abudidama, all the Gold Wolf Riders became excited.

The Red Inn was a sort of attraction place of the Turkic Empire, where many beauties of different races and descent were placed. They were all beauties in the world before the apocalypse and each of them had the aura of top beauties. This place was only reserved for those who had obtained huge merits for the army and could enjoy the women inside.

When the Gold Wolf Riders heard that they were allowed to head to the Red Inn, everyone suddenly seemed to be excited. It was a sacred place where only generals were allowed. Now they could go and have a taste themselves.

The soldiers of the Gold Wolf Riders became excited and continued through the forests, easily defeating a group of Mutant Monkeys before reaching their destination.

Surrounded by many trees, a huge barracks the size of hundreds of hectares appeared in front of them.

Abudidama's eyes narrowed and he saw 2 rows of tanks sitting neatly within the camp and his eyes immediately lit up in joy, "Tanks! We've struck gold!"

Out here in the Central Plains, a single tank possessed the strength to wipe out a faction of over a thousand people. Abudidama could tell that there were about 8 tanks right outside and there were definitely even more supplies within.

"Charge! Everybody charge in!" Abudidama roared out as he waved his curved blade, charging into the camp.

A regiment would not exceed ten thousand people. With Abudidama's current strength, even if there were ten thousand zombies inside, it wouldn't be an issue to kill them.

The 2,000-over Gold Wolf Riders immediately charged into the huge barracks.

The moment the forces of Abudidama charged in, they realized there were no zombies anywhere. Within the huge barracks, there were thick vines growing and large, vibrant flowers grew on them.

Abudidama had sensed a strange atmosphere the moment he stepped into the barracks and he was overwhelmed by a strong sense of danger, causing him to shout involuntarily, "Retreat! Retreat!"

Under his orders, the 2,000-over Gold Wolf Riders began to retreat out.

Right at this moment, a long vine covered in fresh and pretty flowers shot out and the huge flower seemed to bloom with life opened, revealing a deep dark hole that had no end and rows of sharp teeth.

This huge flower clamped down on the head of a few Gold Wolf Riders like a specter. With a powerful thug and a 'kacha' sound, the heads of those Gold Wolf Riders were torn from their bodies, their corpses slumping to the ground.

The rest of the Gold Wolf Riders began to slash the flowers with vigor. When suddenly, a few vines shot out from the ground, piercing some of the Gold Wolf Riders, absorbing their innards greedily.

In an instant, over 400 Gold Wolf Riders had their heads torn off by those fearsome flowers, turning into fertilizer for the monstrous Mutant Plants.

"Fuck!!!" Abudidama's blade slashed out in bright flashes, chopping the vines while sounds of metal hitting metal resounded. The Type 4 Treasure that was his weapon had no means of cutting through those vines.

"Guxianli! Burn these fucking plants!" Abdudidama tried to dodge the attacks of the vines, as he roared out.

Guxianli's eyes flashed coldly, as she retreated and waved her hands about, a strong flame tornado firing out towards the vines.

When the burning hot flames landed on the flowers, the vines instantly burnt and sounds of crackling were heard.

The vines seemed to be able to tell that Guxianli possessed the means to threaten them. Hence, all the vines near the entrance let go off everyone else and made to claw towards Guxianli.

Countless vines shot towards her, intending to slap her to death. Witnessing this, Guxianli immediately felt despair. Her ability was strong, but her personal combat skills were not as strong, the vines would be able to slap her into meat paste.

"Guxianli!" Abudidama roared out and finally revealed his trump card. His face turned pale as 2 sharp fangs revealed themselves in his mouth. With a flash, he disappeared from his location and surpassed the speed of the Mutant Vines, instantly appearing beside Guxianli and grabbed her to disappear from the location.

His trump card was the Second Order Vampire Transformation. Turning into a vampire could push his speed to an insane limit, reaching 34 times that of a normal person. His transformation gave him a speed that was even few times faster than Yue Zhong.

The speed of those vines weren't slow and Abudidama was forced to evade as much as he could. In the end, he was still struck heavily by 2 of them, causing him to soar in the air for over 20m, spitting blood.

Abudidama didn't dare to stay a second longer within the area of

the vines and quickly appeared outside of the barracks in a few breaths.

The remaining thousand over warriors of the Gold Wolf Riders also ran out pathetically. However, just as they managed to escape, countless bullets rained down upon them, ripping into their bodies.

2,000 Manchurian forces had teamed up with the Mongolians as they established some form of formation, hiding behind cover as they fired bullets wildly at the Gold Wolf Riders.

Ao Dou stood with the Manchurian forces and cold out coldly, "Abudidama, I'm very thankful that you guys have fulfilled your roles as cannon fodder so perfectly. You've actually helped us discover the secret of this base! Now that you're useless, you may die!"

The Turkic Empire had always been vicious and ruthless, killing many Manchurians as well as their elites. That was why Ao Dou was full of hatred for Abudidama as well.

Abudidama saw the numerous Gold Wolf Riders under him in their own pools of blood and roared, "Ao Dou, you fucking animal! You actually are in cahoots with the Mongols! You'll die a horrible death! Today's matter, I'll definitely not forget this! You'd all better remember this!"

Chapter 632: Trap!

Ao Dou laughed cruelly, "Hmph! This time next year will be your death anniversary! Abudidama, when you're dead, I'll help you 'take care' of Guxianli, I will get ALL my subordinates to help take good care of her!!"

Under that barrage of bullets, a large number of Gold Wolf Riders were riddled with bullets, and the remaining survivors quickly retreated back toward the barracks.

A number of snake-like vines wormed their way towards the soldiers, and the Mutant Man-eating Flowers bloomed and devoured the retreating soldiers.

"No!! No!!" One particular vine snaked around the legs of an unfortunate soldier and dragged him towards the flower to be consumed.

The Gold Wolf Rider turned to fire at them flowers and vines, firing madly. He managed to blast the petals and mouth of the flower, when suddenly, a huge sharp tendril shot out from within, piercing his throat.

After killing that Gold Wolf Rider, other tendrils shot out and pierced his body, as they started to absorb his bodily fluids.

"Go to hell! Go to hell!!" Another soldier that had rushed into the camp began to fire wildly at the Mutant Flowers, to no avail.

A Mutant Flower suddenly dropped down from the skies, enveloping the head of one Gold Wolf Rider, and with a 'kacha' sound, his head was instantly bitten off.

As the screams rang out, many of the Gold Wolf Riders were being killed off, their bodies devoured entirely.

"Die!! Die!!" One blade-wielding Saint Wolf Rider finally snapped, and he began to lash out, slicing out madly. Under his enraged attacks, nothing could not be destroyed.

After slicing through about 10 thick vines, over a hundred vines suddenly burst forth like cannons from all directions and pierced towards him.

The moment the vines attacked, they turned the Saint Wolf Rider into a sieve. Although he could easily slash through some of the vines, with an assault like this, it was impossible for him to evade.

Another Saint Wolf Rider utilized his Ice Manipulation skills and blasted out with his fists. A strong freezing energy enveloped one of the vines. At the next instant, with a loud 'kacha', the ice broke apart and the Mutant Man-eating Flower opened its huge mouth to swallow the head of the Saint Wolf Rider.

The entire barracks was like a scene out of hell, with numerous Man-eating Flowers gobbling up Gold Wolf Riders everywhere, and even the Saint Wolf Riders could not hold out any longer under the countless tendrils and vines.

Abudidama carried Guxianli and retreated all the way into the midst of the barracks, and felt his Stamina dropping like crazy. He could only roar out, "Charge out!! Charge out and have it out with them!! There's only hope if we do that!! Saint Wolf Riders, on me!!"

The Gold Wolf Riders in the barracks all had bloodshot eyes, their expressions like cornered beasts, and with a resounding, unified roar, they all charged out.

They had been pushed to desperation, and remaining in the barracks would just spell death.

As they charged out, bullets met them.

The remaining 120 Saint Wolf Riders braved the rain of bullet, charging forth towards the Manchu and Mongol allied forces. Since they were already desperate, there was nothing to do except charge headlong.

These Saint Wolf Riders were all wearing Type 2 Mutant Beast hide and some other armor made out of high-level Mutant Beast

hide. They could withstand ordinary bullets.

The dense barrage of bullets only managed to kill 20 of the Saint Wolf Riders, their bodies slumping to the ground.

The remaining Saint Wolf Riders managed to reach the allied forces and began to unleash a massacre on them. These were all enhanced above Level 20, and easily slaughtered 30 soldiers of the allied forces.

"Kill!" Ao Dou waved his hands and ordered coldly.

The White Armor Army's leader, Ming Shu Wu, who wielded a large curved blade of over 2m led a hundred members of the White Armor Army and charged right for the Saint Wolf Riders.

Ming Shu Wu was an Agility-based Evolver and had over 18 times speed of a normal person. Each time he slashed out at his maximum speed, his strikes would exceed the sound barrier. As he met the Saint Wolf Riders, many of them were instantly sliced in half.

He was like a gust of wind, and each time he flashed past, there would be a spray of blood and a body that was split in half. It seemed that no one could withstand a single hit from him.

On the Mongol side, there was also a peak-level expert by the name of Hahn, who led his own forces to attack the Saint Wolf Riders.

The man called Hahn was a 2m-tall warrior who wielded a huge hammer of over 600 kg. In his hands, it was like a needle, and he waved it about easily, smashing his enemies into pulp.

Ao Dou and the general of the Mongol Army, Zheli Mu, just eyed Abudidama coldly. As long as he moved, they would join hands to attack him.

As a peak level Evolver, Abudidama was a threat and his strength was higher than most of the fighters on the field. The moment he escaped, the Manchuria and Mongol Empires would have another

strong enemy to deal with. Ao Dou and Zheli Mu would definitely not let him get away.

Although they didn't yet move, their fixed gaze was like a strong pressure on Abudidama. He was extremely clear that these 2 were just waiting for a good opportunity, to make him stay, once and for all.

Zheli Mu eyed Abudidama and called out, "Abudidama! I actually do admire you and your talents. If you surrender to me right now and swear loyalty to our Mongol Empire, I can let you and Guxianli off. Otherwise, today will be the day you die. You guys are still young, it would be such a waste to die here!! There're countless things in this world still meant to be enjoyed!"

Beside Ao Dou, a crafty-looking man by the name of Niu Dong laughed out lewdly, "That's right! Abudidama, even if you don't care about yourself, you should think of Guxianli in your arms right? If you were to die here, and she lands up in our hands, all our brothers here will really 'take care' of her, you know? I wonder how long she will be able to last?"

Niu Dong was a lustful and low man, his mouth extremely sharp and poisonous. He was also utilized by Ao Dou to either convince enemies, or to curse at them.

Abudidama could not help but tremble slightly. If it was just him alone, he would definitely not think of surrendering. With his agility and power, even if he couldn't fight them, he could definitely outrun them. However, with Guxianli in his arms, it was harder.

Ao Dou and Zheli Mu were both experts on par with Abudidama. Other than them, there was the White Armor Army, and the Qie Xue Army to consider. If he was surrounded, it would be impossible for him to break out.

Guxianli raised her head to look at Abudidama, and pleaded, "Dama!! I don't want to die!! Let's live on together."

Some people would choose to end their lives themselves at the face of death, yet more would want to live. Even if it was at the cost of their pride and dignity, they would still want to live.

Guxianli's words broke Abudidama's final line of his psychological barrier. He really loved this woman, whose figure, behaviour and sultriness in bed thoroughly mesmerized him.

He gritted his teeth and made the decision, "Fine!! Ao Dou, Zheli Mu! I can take my men to surrender. However, you have to promise the safety of my troops and immediately cease all attacks!"

"Stop all attacks!"

With a single command, the allied forces stopped attacking the Gold Wolf Riders.

The remaining 300 Gold Wolf Riders panted, looking at their fellow comrades who laid dead all around them. Many of them weren't willing to die.

One Saint Wolf Rider charged at Abudidama with a savage look, "Abudidama!! How could you betray us?! You fucking traitor!! I'll kill you!!"

"We'll kill you!!"

"Kill this traitor dog!!"

"..."

There were many loyal Turks amongst the Gold Wolf Riders, and they were of one mind for the revival of the Turk Empire. Witnessing Abudidama's betrayal, they could not help but launch their attacks.

"Seeking death!" Abudidama carried Guxianli and his eyes flashed coldly. In a flash, he charged into the midst of the Saint Wolf Riders, slashing at the loyal Saint Wolf Riders and killing them.

After killing dozens of experts instantly, Abudidama kneeled in front of Zheli Mu on a single knee and proclaimed, "Abudidama is

willing to serve the Mongol Empire!"

The enmity between the Gold Wolf Riders and Manchuria was extremely deep, furthermore, since the largest faction was the Mongol Empire out here in the Central Plains, it was natural that Abudidama chose to serve the Mongol Empire compared to Manchuria.

"Good! Good!! Good!!" Zheli Mu's face had a smile, before it suddenly twisted into a savage grin, and he activated his own killing move, Second Order Explosive Fist. His right fist suddenly swung towards Abudidama's head with a terrifying speed, as well as raging flames.

Since Abudidama was a peak Evolver, the moment Zheli Mu moved, he had already felt a premonition, and he twisted to evade the blow.

Unfortunately, Abudidama had kneeled on one knee, and although his speed was almost unparalleled, it was still slightly slow. The blow from Zheli Mu managed to strike his right shoulder. An explosive strength burst out, blasting the Abudidama's shoulder together with the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide into pieces.

The flames burned his face, resulting in an ugly charred look. He could not open his eyes as well.

He gritted his teeth and bore with the pain, retreating backwards like a squid. He knew it was a critical moment and he might die if he wasn't careful.

Abudidama retreated with his eyes squinted, and a sharp blade whistled through the air, threatening to split him at the waist.

Facing that impending blow, Abudidama was somehow still able to twist his body and dodge that powerful killing move.

"You can die without regrets!" Following an icy tone, Ao Dou immediately stabbed down with a silver curved blade, piercing

Abudidama's heart. With another bright flash, his large blade then split his body in two.

"Kill them all!!" After taking care of Abudidama, Ao Dou ordered coldly.

The allied forces then raised their guns immediately and fired wildly at the Gold Wolf Riders, who were caught off guard and died.

In an instant, the powerful Que Xie Troops and White Armor Army charged at the Gold Wolf Riders, targeting the stronger Saint Wolf Riders.

Ao Dou's gaze was cold as he walked towards Guxianli.

Guxianli kneeled on the ground, her face full of fear as she pleaded, "Don't kill me! Don't kill me!! I'm willing to do anything for you! You can get me to do anything. Please, don't kill me!"

Ao Dou looked at her with contempt, "For such a woman, Abudidama actually died, what a fool."

Zheli Mu laughed, "He's truly stupid. With his standing, he could get any women he wanted, he actually lost his life for this bitch. What a waste. If it wasn't for his stupidity, it would have been harder to kill him. Although she's a stupid bitch, she actually did managed to help us with this, even though it was unintentional. Let's spare her. She still has some use!"

Ao Dou looked at her and said, "Fine! Guxianli! We won't kill you. Get up!"

Guxianli stood up, twisting her snake-like waist as she smiled seductively at Ao Dou, "Yes! Sir Ao Dou!!"

She had relied on her attractive charms to thoroughly capture Abudidama's heart, keeping him deep in her pockets.

The allied forces thus wiped out the rest of the Gold Wolf Riders with ease, and there were corpses everywhere, with blood and

organs splattered all around. A number of vines shot out from the barracks, piercing the corpses, sucking them dry.

Chapter 633: Treants!

Ao Dou looked at the tendrils and vines stretching out all over the ground within the barracks and frowned, "Those Mutant Plants are truly something else, any suggestions?"

Zheli Mu thought deeply before replying, "Bullets! Weapons are ineffective. Fire, they seem to be afraid of fire! We can get those with fire-based abilities to deal with them."

Ao Dou countered, "That may be true, but they are too numerous, even if all the flame users were to expend all their energy, it's impossible to burn the entire thing."

Zheli Mu laughed out confidently, "No need to worry! I've observed for a while. They might look like countless vines, in fact, they're all from a single source. As long as we can take down the main trunk of the Mutant Plant, all the vines will die out."

Zhemu Li didn't only possess strength, he had high intelligence and was always observing the battlefield, quickly discerning the crux of the problem.

Ao Dou spoke solemnly, "To deal with those vines, ordinary soldiers aren't going to be of help. We need to form a proper task force, and eliminate the vines before slowly making our way in, and destroying the main trunk."

Zheli Mu nodded slightly, "En!"

If ordinary soldiers were to step up to fight against those vines, they would just die. Zheli Mu didn't want to squander their lives just like that.

Ao Dou turned to glance at Guxianli coldly, "Guxianli, you're coming with us!"

Guxianli replied warmly, "Yes!"

Soon, a force of over 200 White Armor soldiers and Que Xie

troops were gathered, and led by Ao Dou and Zheli Mu, they entered the barracks.

The moment this troop of over 200 elites entered the barracks, countless vines and tendrils shot towards them.

This time, Ao Dou and the rest were prepared, as they got into a formation that supported and protected one another. With Ao Dou and another 3 powerful blade experts as the vanguard, they slashed through the incoming vines, constantly making their way deeper into the army camp.

The vines were being chopped up by Ao Dou and the rest, as they forcefully carved a bloody path towards the center.

Yue Zhong had activated his Second Order and was following behind Ao Dou.

After cutting through countless vines, Ao Dou finally managed to arrive at the deep parts of the camp. The troops immediately saw a huge tree that stood tall, reaching the clouds, with a trunk so thick that not even 20 people could wrap their arms around it. Numerous vines as thick as water buckets hung from the branches, as a number of Man-eating Mutant Flowers bloomed all over the vines. A strong flowery fragrance was in the air as well.

As they arrived in front of this strange giant tree, all of the people had shock in their eyes when they saw it. Not even Yue Zhong was unaffected.

On top of the tree, there was a strange woman with absolutely stunning looks that wore countless leaves woven together as a top. Her legs were uncovered, and her hair was a thick lush green color. Her eyes were clear, and her figure was extremely sexy and attractive. She looked down at the soldiers quietly.

Seeing such a beauty sitting atop the Mutant Plant that consumed humans, this caused everyone to feel a sense of shock and mystery.

The green-haired woman continued to eye all of them, her eyes

sweeping across them, before landing on Yue Zhong who was hiding in a corner while in stealth.

"I was discovered!" Yue Zhong saw that he was found out immediately by the bewitching beauty and felt his hairs stand.

"Female Tree Spirit, a high-intelligence biological entity among the Mutant Plants."

Yue Zhong looked at the green-haired beauty as a notification resounded in his mind.

As the beauty continued to survey the troops below, the vines on the tree did not attack them.

Ao Dou did not really react much to the beautiful tree spirit, instead ordering loudly, "Guxianli!! Set fire to the tree!! Hurry!!"

"Yes!" Guxianli gritted her teeth, and activated her Flame Manipulation. A powerful fiery tornado conjured out of thin air and shot towards the trunk of the tree.

With Ao Dou in the centre, 7 other Enhancers with Flame Manipulation skills began to fire at the huge tree trunk.

As the flame skills blasted the huge tree, it began to catch fire and burn.

The seemingly immobile vines immediately shot towards the people below. Ao Dou and the rest began to exhibit their skills and abilities, chopping the various tendrils and vines.

The green-haired beauty had a cold look flash past her eyes, and she leaped up, emitting a sharp howl towards the skies.

Immediately after that call, numerous round fruits of about 1.45m dropped down from the tree, landing on the ground.

When they landed, they split apart to reveal strange creatures within with yellow hair, ugly looks, green skin, thick and coarse legs, as well as sharp claws.

"Level 30 Strange Beast, Low Level Treant! Extremely agile, its

sharp claws can tear an armored vehicle apart!"

When they appeared, they immediately charged right at Ao Dou and the rest, a number actually routed around them and aimed for the allied forces outside.

With a flash of his silver curved blade, Ao Dou managed to kill another 3 low-level Treants, as he shouted out, "Set fire!! Set fire and burn that damn tree!!!"

Guxianli and the rest of the Enhancers quickly channeled their abilities, and sent as much as flames as they could towards the huge towering tree.

Under the burning, the huge Mutant Tree seemed to be writhing in agony, thrashing about, as countless fruits rained down on the ground.

As the fruits landed, more treants jumped out, and immediately launched an assault on the soldiers.

They were incredibly ferocious, and their combat strength high. As they surrounded the warriors, some of the Evolvers began to suffer serious injuries.

One particular Enhancer managed to kill one of the low level treants, but immediately, 7 pounced on him. Beside him, there were 2 other experts, 1 used his blade to kill a treant, while the other swung his hammer to send another flying. However, the rest of the 5 managed to latch onto the unfortunate warrior, and tore into his head with their sharp claws, twisting and slicing his head off.

The remaining treants then leapt to the sides, jumping onto the dead warrior's comrades, and did the same to them, sticking their claws into the necks and decapitating the warriors.

These low level Treants continued to attack Ao Dou and the rest. There were a few that swarmed towards Yue Zhong, together with a few thick vines.

Yue Zhong looked at these low level Treants and a strong killing intent burst out of him. He whisked out his Level 5 Black Tooth Blade, and sent out a few blade beams at the tree vines.

With the sharpness of the Black Tooth Blade, the vines and treants were all chopped in two.

"Yue Zhong!!!" This action immediately shocked Ao Dou, as he turned around to ascertain that the man wielding the Black Tooth Blade was really the greatest enemy of their Manchuria Empire.

Ao Dou looked at Yue Zhong, a chill creeping in his heart, "He had always been following behind us, and we actually did not discover anything! He's too frightening!"

Ao Dou's danger perception was extremely acute, and he actually did not discover someone following them from behind. This caused some fear to take root.

Right now, the low-level Treants dropping from the huge Mutant Plant was growing in numbers, reaching over a thousand. At the same time, there were others converging on their location from all directions. It seemed that it was an impossible battle.

Ao Dou was being bogged down by those Treants, and had no way of attacking Yue Zhong.

He immediately changed his way of thinking and his voice rang out, "Leader Yue ZHong! Why don't we work together to eradicate these evil things? Our enmity can be left to when we leave this place, how about that?"

These low-level Treants were currently the headache for both sides. If Ao Dou and the rest did not take down the tree, they would all die. Upon weighing the pros and cons, he made the decision to forget about their enmity and focus their strength on taking down the huge Mutant Tree.

Yue Zhong also barely paused for a moment and came to a decision, "Alright! I'll help you guys out!!"

Yue Zhong pulled out his Electromagnetic Gun, and fired at the trunk of the huge tree.

A terrifying burst of light exploded on the tree trunk, directly piercing it, forming a hole the size of an adult fist.

The wound immediately began to ooze with green sap, as though it was injured heavily, just like a person.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, as he waved his blade to chop the vines away, instantly killing many of the low level Treants. His right hand continued to fire, as many burst shots from the Electromagnetic Gun continued to fire holes into the tree trunk.

As more holes appeared in the tree, the tree trunk begun to bleed more furiously, trembling uncontrollably. More Treants continued to drop from the tree.

As the beautiful Female Tree Spirit looked on, its face flashed with anxiety, and it suddenly emitted a loud shriek towards the skies.

Hong!!

Suddenly, from the roof of the tree, 6 huge round fruits about 8m each dropped down.

These fruits split apart, revealing 6 powerful looking treants, of about 8m and bark covering everywhere.

"Level 80 Strange Beast: High Level Treant, possessing incredible defense and combat strength.",

The 6 Treants immediately charged forth at Ao Dou and the rest like tanks.

Although these 8m-tall Treants were huge, their movement was incredibly agile, and they burst forth with 18 times speed of a normal person. They charged right through the troops and immediately began to massacre the soldiers.

The various abilities of air, wind, ice and flames all continued to

blast at these high level Treants, causing their bark to chip and fly away. However, a single fist of these Treants could instantly flatten the soldiers into meat paste.

"Go to hell!!" 4 Enhancers with large blades immediately charged forth at one of the high level Treants without fear, slashing at its legs. They were all Strength-based Enhancers, and after activating their ability, they had dozen times Strength. With each slash, they could easily slash apart an armored vehicle.

The 4 large blades only managed to slice into 1cm of the bark of the Treant, and could not penetrate further. The high level Treant coldly slapped down with its hands, and instantly pulverized the 4 Enhancers into meat paste.

The attacks of these Enhancers had no way of breaking past the defence of the Treants. As long as they charged forwards to attack, they would almost instantly be slapped dead.

The 6 powerful treants managed to breach the formation of Ao Dou's troops, and many of them were forced to flee in different directions, before being surrounded and ripped apart by the low level Treants.

The flame users were the targets of those 6 high level Treants, and the moment they charged through the troops, they made a beeline for the flame users!

"No!!" Despair was written all over Guxianli's face, but before she could do anything, a huge palm came down from the sky and flattened her into a meat paste.

The rest of the flame users were also quickly killed by these high level Treants/

"Damn it!!! Damn it!! Damn beasts!!" By now, Ao Dou's eyes were bloodshot and he had charged in front of a high level Treant like an enraged bull, slashing out furiously. His silver curved blade unleashed a few more blade beams onto the thick legs of the

Treant.

The silver blade beam managed to leave a deep 1m scar on the legs of the Treant, but it didn't seem to affect the Treant, which shot out a palm to slap towards Ao Dou.

A bright shield suddenly appeared in front of Ao Dou, defending him.

The huge palm slapped onto the bright shield, which trembled a little, before it crumbled and disintegrated under the absolute strength.

Ao Dou then borrowed that moment of reprieve to retreat backwards rapidly.

Right at this time, 10 low level Treants pounced towards Ao Dou. As long as he was subdued by them, the high level Treant could easily flatten him into meat paste.

"Mad Bull Charge!!"

At this critical moment, Ao Dou roared out in rage and activated his skill, his entire person seemingly charging towards the distance in fury.

2 low level Treants were instantly sent flying from his charge, however, they managed to tear apart his clothes with their claws, revealing the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide within his clothes.

Ao Dou charged out for 30m, before he pulled out his silver curved blade and fired a few more blade beams to escape out.

The high level Treant that had been slashed by Ao Dou quickly grew a new layer of bark over its wounds, and within 20 seconds, it had recovered fully.

Chapter 634: Tree Spirit Bi Lù!

The 6 Treants all had monstrous strength, formidable defense, as well as perverse recovery. They were even more fearsome than L4s. The experts of the White Armor Army and Que Xie Troops could only flee and evade.

Right now, the entire military base was crawling with those low level Treants, and the warriors of the allied forces had to deal with the random assaults from them. Every step they took was fraught with danger. They were surrounded on all sides, and would be slapped to minced paste the moment they got caught by the high level Treants.

Yue Zhong wielded his Electromagnetic Gun and continued to fire at the tree trunk without stop. Each blast caused more holes, with sap oozing out without stop.

Yue Zhong's marksmanship was extremely accurate, and he continued to fire up the tree trunk in a single line, causing a huge tear in the Mutant Plant. If he continued this way, he would definitely be able to cause the tree to be split.

Currently, he had activated Shadow Steps and Bone Encompassing Armor. The layer of bone carapace covering him would constantly sliced out with 10 sharp bone blades, twisting and slashing the vines and low level Treants trying to surround him.

Since Yue Zhong and White Bones were linked mentally when he activated Bone Encompassing Armor, he could also hand the control of the armor to White Bones, allow it to battle automatically. It was truly overpowered. It was precisely due to this skill and utilization of it that allowed him to fully focus on damaging the Mutant Plant while under the attacks of the Treants and vines.

Outside the camp, there could be loud and rapid gunshots heard,

it was obvious that the allied forces outside were facing off against the treants.

It seemed that there were a large number of humans being torn apart by the Treants and vines every second, as both battlefields became even more intense.

Feeling the threat of Yue Zhong, 2 of the high level Treants came charging towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong felt a chill in his heart when he saw them coming towards him, and he disappeared from his location. He started to weave in and out of the swarm of low level Treants, all the while firing at the gigantic Mutant Plant.

He activated his Shadow Steps, pushing his speed to 30 times that of a normal person, and as the Treants were only 18 times as fast as a person, while they might be terrifying to most ordinary soldiers, they could not compare with Yue Zhong.

Those low level Treants that tried to surround him were instantly sliced apart by the bone blades emerging from him. Even if they were fortunate enough to hit Yue Zhong, they could only cause small white scars on the bone carapace.

A number of blood-filled corpses were sent flying through the skies, while Yue Zhong weaved in and out of those.

"Strong!" Ao Dou looked at how easily Yue Zhong was handling himself, and his face fell.

Ao Dou was also a peak level Evolver, but against the multitude of attacks from these low level Treants, he had to exert all his might. Even then, he felt at a disadvantage. His body was ridden with wounds and scars, and if it weren't for the protective Type 3 Mutant Beast covering, he would have been split apart countless times.

Kacha!

The Electromagnetic Gun fired out over a hundred beams, and

finally, the extremely valuable Type 3 Nuclei within it shattered after dimming, turning into dust.

Yue Zhong swiftly switched out another Type 3 Nuclei. Each of these were extremely precious, but under the current circumstances, he could not afford to care.

He swiftly resumed his firing and soon expended the 2nd Type 3 Nuclei. By now, the huge Mutant Plant had lost most of its vitality. Many of the vines had crumpled to the ground, and the numerous Mutant man-eating flowers had wilted and dropped to the ground.

The green-haired Tree Spirit who was atop the tree had a huge change in expression as she caressed the tree, her eyes full of tears as she seemed to speak to the Mutant Tree in some strange language.

"It's time!" Yue Zhong looked as the countless vines drooped, his eyes flashing, and he charged towards the trunk.

A number of the low level Treants roared out and tried to block in front of him, but were quickly sliced apart due to his strength.

It was as though the 4 high level Treants could detect Yue Zhong's intentions, as they quickly let go off their current targets, and made their way towards him swiftly.

Yue Zhong appeared right in front of the tree trunk in the blink of an eye, the bone spike beneath his feet shooting out. It supported his climbing up the trunk, as he made for the green-haired Tree Spirit.

He already had the young Mermaid Queen Hai Lan, and the young zombie girl Yin Shuang, he knew that these strange biological entities of the apocalyptic world were powerful and had high intelligence. If he could control them, he could utilize them well in future battles.

The green-haired Tree Spirit looked at Yue Zhong, a strange rune shooting out from between her brows with bright green radiance,

and Yue Zhong raised his right hand to deflect it.

"So you still have some moves left!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed, and he activated his Gravity Manipulation.

A two-fold gravity suddenly enveloped the Tree Spirit, her body trembling slightly and the green radiance dimmed.

Yue Zhong then sent out a fist with a speed that broke the sound barrier, together with his Dark Dou Qi, and his might caused the green radiance to be shattered. He then grabbed the woman's neck, and a strange and smooth sensation travelled up his fingertips.

Yue Zhong eyed the Tree Spirit, his voice icy cold, "Do you understand my words?"

There was a look of fear on her face, her lips did not move, but a mental message appeared in Yue Zhong's mind, "Of course I understand! Human, don't kill me!! I don't want to die!!"

Yue Zhong looked at her, his heart full of joy, but he maintained his mask of indifference and threatened, "I won't kill you! But from today onwards, you must listen to my every command!!"

She immediately replied, "Alright!"

Yue Zhong pointed to the countless treants below, "Can you control them?"

She replied, "Yes! As long as they're from the mother tree, all treants, tree spirits are under my command."

"This time, I've gained a treasure!!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with excitement.

The number of treants below was staggering, reaching over thousands, and were all strange beasts of over Level 30. The 6 high level Treants were even more terrifying, and the White Armor Army and Que Xie Troops could not do anything to them. This was a mighty force, and the moment it came under Yue Zhong's control, his military might gained another boost.

The green-haired Tree Spirit eyed Yue Zhong and asked, "Do you want me to order them to stop?"

Yue Zhong looked at the elites of the White Armor Army and Que Xie Troop struggling, and ordered coldly, "There's no need! Order your subordinates to wipe them out!"

These White Armor and Que Xie warriors were all irritating Enhancers to deal with. If he allowed them to live, in the future, there will be countless warriors that might fall at their hands. Since there was a chance now, Yue Zhong would rather eradicate them.

The Tree Spirit eyed Yue Zhong with a look of understanding, saying, "Yes!"

Yue Zhong eyed the dying troops below, and spoke, "You mentioned the mother tree, is it this Mutant Plant?"

The Tree Spirit's eyes dimmed as she looked at it, before looking at Yue Zhong, tears flowing down her cheek, "Yes! It had already been killed by you!"

Hearing her cry, Yue Zhong felt ashamed. When he had treated it as an enemy initially, he had not held back and was focused on destroying it. If it wasn't for the fact that he had destroyed its life essence, it would not have been easy for him to capture this beautiful Tree Spirit in front of him.

With the death of the mother tree, the vines had withered, that was how Yue Zhong could get close to the mother tree and the Tree Spirit. If it wasn't dead, with the protection of the countless vines, Yue Zhong would never have been able to take a step close.

Yue Zhong was slightly embarrassed and asked, "Can the mother tree recover?"

The beautiful Tree Spirit hesitated before replying, "It can! As long as its core is undamaged, it can grow again! However, it requires a large amount of nourishment in blood to swiftly grow. It

also requires flesh and blood to produce those treants."

Yue Zhong pointed at those 6 high level Treants and asked, "What are the conditions in producing those Treants?"

The might of the 6 Treants was terrifying, and they were like 6 humanoid tanks. If a 100 of them could be produced, then against zombies, humans, or any Mutant Beasts, it would be an overpowered trump card.

The beautiful Tree Spirit said, "The production of those high level Treants is extremely difficult. The mother tree would require to swallow a large amount of blood essence as well as special materials and infected bodies. It would be even tougher to produce anything larger or more powerful. It would require at least a month's time as well as enough blood essence, special materials and nuclei. My mother tree had never produced a Treant General before, otherwise, you guys wouldn't be able to defeat me.."

"Strong!! This time, I truly obtained a treasure!" When Yue Zhong heard it, he looked at this beautiful Tree Spirit, and smiled, "From now on, you're my subordinate. Do you have a name?"

"Nope!"

Yue Zhong chuckled, "Then, you're called Bi Lǔ from now on."

Bi Lu nodded slightly, "En! I'm called Bi Lǔ."

Chapter 635: Heart!

Yue Zhong eyed Ao Dou below and pointed at him while giving Bi Lǔ a command, "Get 4 of the high level Treants to surround that one and kill him!"

Ao Dou was truly a peak Evolver, having survived countless attacks even when surrounded by those low level Treants. He was still slashing out at them, while dodging the attacks of the single high level Treant. The silver curved blade in his hands slashed out with multiple blade beams, slicing up the little treants. It was a spectacular sight.

The allied forces had another peak level expert outside, Zheli Mu, who had been beaten badly by the 3 large Treants outside. He had then utilized some strange skill to disappear from his location.

Bi Lǔ replied softly, "En!" before pointing at Ao Dou.

At that moment, 4 of the large Treants threw aside their targets and made for Ao Dou in a mad dash.

Ao Dou was not stupid, the moment he saw Bi Lǔ standing with Yue Zhong, he felt a bad premonition arise in his heart, and he shouted, "Leader Yue Zhong, let us leave here alive! As long as you do, from now on, our Manchu Empire will be your Great Han Alliance's friend!!"

The corners of Yue Zhong's mouth twitched in a cold smile. This Ao Dou looked like a valiant warrior, but he was in fact pretty crafty.

Ao Dou had lured Abudidama into surrendering, then went back on his word and executed him just because there was no certainty of his loyalty. This had already showcased his viciousness and craftiness. Yue Zhong would definitely not let this tiger back into its mountain.

Yue Zhong looked at the countless warriors being torn apart and

replied coldly, "Ao Dou! There's no need for more bullshit! Today will be the day you die! At least you won't be alone down in the Yellow Springs! Your subordinates will follow you!"

Ao Dou continued to slash at 8 low level Treants and shouted back, "Yue Zhong! Those who aren't of our race will be treated as such! You have colluded with these strange beings, you will definitely not have a good ending!!"

Yue Zhong laughed coldly and pulled out his Electromagnetic Gun and aimed, "The one who will not have a good ending is you!"

Ao Dou immediately felt a surge of danger in his heart, he had seen for himself the might of the Electromagnetic Gun. A single shot could cause him to explode.

With his attention on Yue Zhong, he lost concentration for a moment was slashed on the face by a low level Treant, a huge chunk of meat torn from his face.

The 4 high level Treants quickly surrounded him.

"Damn it!! Yue Zhong, I'll let you witness my true strength! As long as I escape from here, you and I will forever be enemies!! Berserker Transformation!!"

With a loud roar, a powerful blood-coloured Dou Qi surrounded Ao Dou, as his muscles became taut, and his veins threatened to pop. His eyes became bloodshot, and his entire being emitted a violent and oppressive aura. He had activated his strongest skill, Second Order Berserker Transformation.

Ao Dou was, after all a, peak expert, his natural awakened ability was the Second Order Berserker Transformation, furthermore he cultivated in the Battle Blood Dou Qi ability.

The moment he activated his Berserker Transformation together with his Battle Blood Dou Qi, his entire being would go through a scary change. Even a Type 2 Mutant Beast would explode from a single fist of his.

However, while the might of the skill was strong, its backlash was equally terrifying. Ao Dou's Endurance was not strong enough to withstand the backlash from the simultaneous usage of both skills. After the skills ended, he would always suffer from the pain, and he could not recover from the injuries for at least half a year.

Upon activating both the Berserker Transformation and Battle Blood Dou Qi, he instantly soared to possessing a 27-times speed, and made his way for the exit. The silver curved blade in his arms slashed out constantly, and the low level Treants around him were sliced to pieces before even getting close to him.

The moment he reached his peak combat ability, the low level Treants could not do anything to him. While the 4 high level Treants were terrifying, their speed could not compare to Ao Dou after utilizing his skills, and could only watch helplessly as Ao Dou continued to flee.

Just as he was about to escape successfully, a small odachi appeared out of nowhere, slashing down at Ao Dou's body.

"Who?!" Ao Dou roared out in anger, pushing the Battle Blood Dou Qi to its maximum, and twisted slightly while still fleeing.

The odachi that had a strange dark light trailing behind it also gently twisted, tearing into the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide on Ao Dou's body, and slashed out a large wound in his waist, causing him to bleed.

After successfully landing this hit, Tenpyo Saka, who was the assassin in the dark leaped gracefully, and disappeared into the darkness again.

"Fucking die!!" Ao Dou's eyes were bloodshot as he bore the pain and sent out a few blade beams in her direction.

Ao Dou was one of the top experts of the Manchu Empire, and after he gained the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide, no one could hurt him. However, he actually suffered a blow from Tenpyo Saka, even

if he made it alive, with his current injuries, he would not recover properly within a year. This enraged him to no end.

Ao Dou's slashes carried with them terrifying force, empowered by the tyrannical Battle Blood Dou Qi, and they could even slash through Type 3 Mutant Beast hide. They were not something Tenpyo Saka could possibly withstand. He wanted to kill her instantly with this strike.

Suddenly, he felt an intense sensation of danger, and had to twist his body once more, as a bright light flashed and his right hand was blasted into pieces.

"Yue Zhong!! I'll remember this!!" Ao Dou roared out in pain, and didn't dare to chase after Tenpyo Saka, instead, turning around to flee, in a few seconds, he disappeared.

Yue Zhong saw how Ao Dou flee without carrying for the troop, and could not help but frown at his decisiveness, "This fellow is truly ruthless!! He could abandon all his subordinates!"

Outside the army camp, there were still a thousand soldiers of the allied forces. Ao Dou could actually bear to abandon them and flee on his own, it showed his callousness.

Bi Lǔ asked Yue Zhong, "What do we do with the people outside?"

Just like Hai Lan and Yin Shuang, Bi Lǔ had no particular attachment to human lives. As long as Yue Zhong gave the order, she would not hesitate to pass the order to eradicate the allied forces.

Yue Zhong pondered for a moment, before hugging Bi Lǔ close to him and leaped down the tree, "Follow me!"

Bi Lǔ settled in his embrace without a look of shyness on her. She was incredibly calm.

The moment Yue Zhong landed, all the low level Treants parted, forming a path for him.

The 6 high level Treants also stood by one side obediently.

Yue Zhong carried Bi Lǔ out the camp, only to come across the allied forces being forced back by the low level Treants. Many had been sliced apart by the treants, while many others were desperately fighting back.

Yue Zhong eyed the troops and ordered coldly, "I'm Yue Zhong! I'm now ordering you to throw down your weapons, and surrender unconditionally. Otherwise, you will all die here today!"

One of the commanders, Cheng Ye Shu, hollered, "Don't listen to his bullshit! Kill him! Everybody attack! As long as we kill him and that bitch, we can leave this godforsaken place!"

The remaining soldiers began to fire wildly at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong conjured up his Light Shield, blocking all the bullets, his face becoming dark, "Imbeciles! Don't leave a single one alive!"

"En!" Bi Lǔ nodded and pointed at the thousand soldiers.

Immediately, the 6 large Treants charged out from the camp, and headed for the thousand soldiers.

"Monster!!"

"There can be such strange monsters?"

"We're doomed!!"

"..."

When the thousand allied forces saw the powerful-looking Treants coming at them, their eyes flashed with despair.

Cheng Ye Shu's face was pale as he screamed out, "Attack! Shoot down those fuckers!! Hit their heads! That must be where the weak points are at!! Use the explosive rounds!!"

Under his orders, bullets began to rain upon the 6 high level Treants, although they only served to bounce off the bark. The explosive rounds managed to blast some of the bark away as well.

The 6 high level Treants were like invincible tanks that charged through and slapped everything around them. Causing the soldiers to die like flies.

The leader Cheng Ye Shu was slapped by one of the Treants, and he died instantly, without a chance to defend.

The 6 high level Treants soon demolished the defense line of the allied forces, and the low level Treants joined in the fray and chased after them, tearing their bodies apart.

"Ah!!"

"Don't kill me!!"

"I surrender!! Ah!!!"

"..."

The soldiers quickly dispersed in all directions, it was just that their speed could not match those little Treants, and were quickly devoured.

Yue Zhong watched the soldiers being slaughtered and could not be bothered to stay on as he told Bi Lǚ, "Take me to the mother tree's heart!"

"En!" Bi Lǚ immediately led Yue Zhong to the core of the tree.

She came to the tree and reached out to touch it. With a bright flash of green light, the bark split open.

There were numerous tendrils wrapped around a strange and beautiful jade-like object, which was radiating green light. It was truly an amazing sight.

Chapter 636: Underground Lab!

Bi Lǚ wrapped her hands gingerly around the green heart core, and her hands emitted a light green radiance. The tendrils around the heart core began to retract, and the heart core fell into her hands.

She then brought it in front of Yue Zhong with a little reluctance, "This is the heart core! By placing it in the ground, and using a huge amount of biomatter as nourishment, it will quickly grow again. Zombies, humans and Mutant Beasts are all suitable nutrients."

Yue Zhong had maintained his caution and did not receive it, instead, looking at it contemplatively.

He then asked Bi Lǚ curiously, "How did you come about?"

It had been slightly over a year since the change of the world, and a miraculous being like Bi Lǚ could only appear after the apocalypse. In such a short time, she actually possessed such a frame, it was truly unbelievable.

She did not hide anything as she pointed to the large tree and replied, "I came out from here?"

He continued to ask, "Do you have any partner then, or others like you?"

Bi Lǚ was a rare intelligent biological life form, and she could control a small army of treants. If it wasn't for her naive heart and pure mind, unlike the crafty and wily humans, it would have been hard for Yue Zhong to subdue her.

Bi Lǚ's eyes flashed with a little hesitation, "There should be! Although I haven't seen them, I can faintly sense their presence."

When Yue Zhong heard this, his heart sank. The fact that even plants could produce such life forms was not good news for humanity.

The countless evolved zombies were already a huge threat to the human race. Adding to the emergence of the intelligent Sea Clan, as well as the intellectually advanced zombies, if the Mutant Plants were to give rise to another intelligent life forms, the Earth was definitely going to be more chaotic and treacherous.

Furthermore, the system had already given the notification, the 2nd stage would happen in 2 years time. Although Yue Zhong did not know what it entailed, it was definitely not good news for the human race.

He then continued asking, "How long can the treants last? What do they eat?"

The thousand low level Treants and the 6 high level Treants were a decent sized force, he did not want to waste them, and sought to look after them.

Bi Lǚ pondered before replying, "The low level Treants just need water and sunlight on normal soil. They can live for about 20 years or so. The same goes for the high level Treants, however, they can live for up to 80 years. The tree spirits like to consume flesh and blood, that way, they can continue to evolve. If the high level Treants want to evolve into the Tree Generals, they would need the help of the mother tree."

Yue Zhong was elated, in such a short time, he had gained an additional force of over a thousand powerful entities.

"Leader! Are these strange things under your control?" Bai Xiao Sheng had quickly led men to the army barracks, and looked at the treants with a look of shock and bewilderment.

The same went for those soldiers who had followed Bai Xiao Sheng. They could never have imagined for Yue Zhong to actually subdue so many strange and powerful-looking beings.

Yue Zhong replied, "En!" before ordering, "Go search the camp properly!"

"Yes! Leader! Brothers, come with me!!" Bai Xiao Sheng saluted Yue Zhong, before leading the soldiers towards the camp. To the soldiers, military equipment was always a source of excitement.

"An IFV!! The Type 92 version!!"

"Tanks!! Oh my goodness!! The 96 and 99!! THIS IS A FREAKING 99!!"

"Are my eyes playing tricks on me?! Is that...a CAIC Z-10?! I've only ever seen one online! Awesome!!"

"..."

Very soon, cheers could be heard from within the camp. As the army barracks were filled with various powerful equipment, to Yue Zhong's forces, it was incredibly valuable.

After all, there weren't many places of cover out here in the Central Plains. 8 Thunder Fighters could easily kill off a force of 10,000 soldiers solely because they lacked anti-air defence as well as cover. If they could add in 20 tanks to the force, they could easily flatten an enemy with 3,000 riders.

While possessing enough military equipment did not mean invincibility, without them, it was definitely much tougher and a higher price would have to be paid.

The transportation of the military equipment out from the camp soon began, with the Treants acting as manual labour. Especially the larger Treants, it was easy for them to lift up a tank each, without spending much energy.

Yue Zhong watched the flow of work and felt satisfied. He had enough manpower, and this regiment's worth of equipment would definitely be put to good use.

Bai Xiao Sheng came up to Yue Zhong in excitement, "Leader! We discovered an entrance to an underground area."

"Oh! Take me there!!"

Yue Zhong followed Bai Xiao Sheng and his men as they came to an underground lab beneath a building. There was a huge electronic door, with an electronic lock that required a passcode, thumbprint, and an iris scan. It was incredibly advanced and secure.

Bai Xiao Sheng ordered a skinny and gangly Evolver, "Ah Tu, you're up!!"

Ah Tu chuckled and raised his hand to press the door, as a bright light flashed, and the electronic door immediately opened up.

There were many different abilities, and Ah Tu's happened to be the manipulation of electromagnetic force, allowing him to control such doors.

The moment the door was opened, a huge tunnel was revealed.

"Wait a moment!! Split up!" Yue Zhong barked, stopping Bai Xiao Sheng who was about to rush in. He then threw a wooden bench in.

Dang!

Immediately, countless panels slide open in the tunnel, revealing automatic machine guns that began to fire wildly.

A dense rain of bullets buffeted the area, leaving behind countless marks on the walls.

After firing for about 10 seconds, the guns immediately retracted back into their panels, leaving behind smoke and empty bullet shells.

Bai Xiao Sheng looked at the wall, his back full of cold sweat, "That was close!! Lucky for you, Leader, otherwise, I would most likely be dead! Those bastards truly set in some irritating mechanisms!"

If Bai Xiao Sheng had just rushed in, by now, he would have been turned into a sieve. While the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide might be

able to block the bullets, the moment his head was hit by one, he would also die. In that narrow tunnel, there was no space to hide, even if he was fast, it would be useless.

Another soldier asked, "What do we do? Leader? Do we try and waste their bullets?"

There was definitely a limit to the ammunition, once they are spent, the automatic rifles would become useless.

Yue Zhong ordered, "No need. White Bones, go destroy the mechanism!"

White Bones' eyes flashed and it charged right through the tunnel.

The automatic rifles appeared once more, trained on White Bones as they began firing.

White Bones continued to charge ahead, not fearing the bullets in the slightest, destroying every single gun.

"Let's go!" After the gunshots came to a stop, Yue Zhong walked through the tunnel.

The rest of the soldiers also followed him.

Along the way, they saw the various traps and automatic rifles in various states of damage, every single mechanism had been easily destroyed by White Bones.

Although it was dark in the tunnel, it was not entirely claustrophobic. A line of lights hung overhead, lighting up the tunnel.

Bai Xiao Sheng and his men might be Evolvers, but not all of them had the ability to see in the dark. Only Tenpyo Saka and Yue Zhong had the ability.

Yue Zhong continued forwards, until he came to a huge underground city that spread out wide and far in front of him. There were bars, shops, supermarkets and lodgings.

"Halt!! Who are you people?" 4 soldiers suddenly rushed up, their guns pointed at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong glanced at them, and spoke warmly, "I'm Yue Zhong! I do not have any malicious intent, may I ask, what is this place?"

The 4 soldiers were incredibly cautious and barked loudly, "Put down your weapons! Hug your heads and get down, otherwise, we're going to fire!"

After all, Yue Zhong and his men all had assault rifles, with the system equipment covering them. They looked incredibly valiant and powerful, and thus, it was natural for the 4 men to be wary.

Yue Zhong frowned, and he looked out, only to see a number of sallow and emaciated survivors looking numbly over here. Some of them even had strange glints of greed in their eyes.

He then turned back to the soldiers and barked coldly, "Take them down!"

4 Evolvers shot out from behind Yue Zhong like specters and immediately grabbed hold of them. With a twist, they were forced to kneel in front of him.

One of them had a savage look as he roared, "You dare touch us? Are you sick of living?"

"Tie them up!" Yue Zhong pointed towards the 20 survivors in tattered clothes.

Chapter 637: Underground City!

The Evolvers behind Yue Zhong immediately charged forth towards the survivors.

The survivors were all taken aback, and quickly dispersed, intending to flee. However, these were all weak and emaciated people, and could not possibly outrun the strong and vigorous experts. They were easily captured, and were soon brought in front of Yue Zhong,

Yue Zhong eyed the anxious survivors and took out a piece of dried biscuit, saying, "I would like to know what this place is. Whoever can tell me, this piece of biscuit is his."

Food was the strongest currency in this apocalypse, even more effective than gold from before the change.

The 20 survivors looked at the dried biscuit, their eyes flashing with greed, however, they seemed to be hesitant, as though unwilling to say anything.

One of the survivors finally could not take it anymore and shouted, "I'll speak!! I'll speak! This is the number XXX Biological Research Lab from before the apocalypse. We specialize in researching biological weapons. After the world changed, this place has become the personal kingdom of the head researcher Zhao Kuang. The majority of the personnel here are basically researchers and government officials. These are the dogs of Zhao Kuang."

Yue Zhong chuckled and threw the biscuit to the survivor, "This is yours!"

The survivor received it and quickly offered his thanks, "Thank you! Thank you!"

One of the soldiers held down by Bai Xiao Sheng suddenly screamed out, "Attack! Attack!!"

The soldier had the Sound Amplification ability, and his voice traveled throughout the city.

"Count yourself lucky!" Bai Xiao Sheng was furious, and glanced at Yue Zhong, only to see him shake his head. He then sent a punch behind the head of the soldiers, causing them to faint.

Hearing the alarms, a large number of soldiers began to hurry over, their weapons ready.

Bai Xiao Sheng also quickly deployed his subordinates to get in position, taking cover as they eyed the opposite side.

All of a sudden, a display lit up on one of the buildings, as an old man who was in clean, white clothes, looking about 50 and slightly less than desirable looks appeared. "How do you do! I'm the lord of this underground city, Zhao Kuang, I'm pleased to meet you. Welcome to my kingdom, I hope to speak to your leader."

Yue Zhong walked out from his cover and spoke without any arrogance nor subservience, "How do you do! I'm Yue Zhong!"

Zhao Kuang eyed him, and sighed, his face full of sincerity, "Yue Zhong, is it? You truly are a hero of your generation, to be able to lead men past the monstrosities above. Due to the presence of the man-eating things up there, our people had never been able to leave here. Since you're here today, it must mean that we have the chance to leave. This favour, we will never forget it."

Zhao Kuang then invited, "I would like to invite you to my castle to have a chat, is that alright? I will give you a proper welcome."

Yue Zhong pondered, and his eyes glinted, "Sure!"

Zhao Kuang had an amiable smile, "Ma Jing! Bring Yue Zhong and his men to my castle."

A burly soldier with coarse facial hair came up to Yue Zhong and said, "Please come with me!"

The rest of the soldiers also lowered their weapons, not showing

any aggression anymore.

"Lead the way!"

Yue Zhong immediately followed Ma Jing without fear, walking towards a huge research center.

Yue Zhong came to a stop in front of the entrance, and he gave a command to Bai Xiao Sheng, "Get some men to stand guard!"

They did not know what was lying in wait for them in the research center, and although Yue Zhong was strong, he was always guarded, and did not want to give Zhao Kuang an opportunity to strike at him.

Bai Xiao Sheng nodded slightly and brought 30 Evolvers to stand guard at the entrance, "Ok! Leader, take care!"

Ma Jing had no expression as he looked at Bai Xiao Sheng and the rest, instead, he continued to lead Yue Zhong into the building.

The moment they entered the building, music began to play as they came to a large hall. Large chandeliers were twinkling, while 30 young men and women were dancing in a pool.

On a long table, there were many desserts and drinks, with food and vegetables displayed out.

With resources and food becoming scarce, such a lavish display was enough to drive many survivors crazy.

"How do you do! Leader Yue Zhong, I'm Liu Cheng!" The moment Yue Zhong stepped in, a middle-aged man in a suit and flat-top came up, greeting Yue Zhong with a smile.

Liu Cheng clapped his hands twice, and 12 extremely beautiful women came up from the pool.

He then revealed a strange smile, "Leader Yue Zhong, feel free to take your pick. If you like, you can even get all 12 to wait on you. They're the best amongst our beauties, and their nicknames are 12 Gold Hairpins."

The 12 beauties looked towards Yue Zhong seductively, each revealing their attractiveness and charm. If they could gain his favour, even if it was on orders of Zhao Kuang, there would definitely be benefits. If they could not, they would definitely be forced to starve for 2 or 3 days. They didn't want that to happen.

Yue Zhong swept them a look, before his gaze turned frosty, "Where's Zhao Kuang? Is this how he comes to talk to me?"

The 12 beauties were just average in Yue Zhong's eyes. He had killed women even more beautiful than these in front of him, and would naturally not fall for their obvious charms and tricks.

Liu Cheng smiled, "Leader Yue Zhong, our Emperor Zhao Kuang has given me the authority to talk with you beforehand. You may let me know what is on your mind, it's the same as talking with him."

He then chuckled, "Our Emperor Zhao Kuang is extremely grateful to you for taking care of those Mutant Plants above, allowing us to leave here. We're willing to present 30 beauties to you, and hope that we can become allies, taking over the world together!"

Yue Zhong chuckled coldly, "Rule the world together?! What a tone! I have over 3,000 elite troops, with a regiment's worth of equipment. What are your qualifications to talk about an alliance with me?"

An alliance would only occur between two factions with similar strength. If a faction could wipe out the other, who would form an alliance?

With Yue Zhong's current strength, it was natural that he would not hold these cowards in regard.

Liu Cheng summoned two soldiers, "Fine! Let us show you our strength! Zhang Yun, Wang Fan, come and exhibit your strength for Leader Yue Zhong to see!"

"Kong!!" A numb-looking Zhang Yun came up, and with a loud roar, his leg muscles became taut, and his veins bulged out. In a while, his legs doubled in size, and his veins on his face also became prominent. His entire demeanor became incredibly savage, as there was a single horn growing out of his head.

After Zhang Yun's legs became twice their size, he took a great leap, immediately jumping over a dozen meters, his speed terrifying.

Yue Zhong watched his speed, his eyes flashing with shock, "11 times Speed! Fast!!"

While it might not be much to Yue Zhong, it was a speed that already exceeded an S2, and most ordinary Enhancers of Level 30 might not even reach such a speed.

The people of this underground city were obviously trapped here, and there were not much opportunities for them to enhance, and yet, they had produced a number of Enhancers. It was obvious there was something else at play.

"Kong!" Wang Fan came forward, his expression wooden. His entire body became ripped, and the clothes he wore were torn apart. Soon, he became a burly and terrifying warrior covered with black fur all over.

Wang Fan slammed his fists down on the ground, and a crater was formed, with cracks and debris all over. It revealed the power behind his fists.

Liu Cheng smiled smugly, "We have over 300 of such super soldiers. How is it? Are we qualified to form an alliance?"

With the abilities of Zhang Yun and Wang Fan, over 300 of them were enough to wipe out a 3,000-strong force without any firepower. It was truly a strong force.

It was precisely because of this strength, that Zhao Kuang was so confident that Yue Zhong would form an alliance with him.

Yue Zhong's eyes brightened up, "I want the research materials on how to produce such super soldiers. As long as you provide it, I will consider an alliance with you."

"No way!!" Liu Cheng's face fell, and he laughed bitterly, "Leader Yue Zhong, this is highly classified information, it definitely cannot happen."

"When we come to rule the world, we can share some of the information with you."

Yue Zhong pondered and replied, "Let me consider it then."

Liu Cheng laughed and said, "Great! Please consider it!"

Yue Zhong stood up quietly and turned to walk out.

Just as he left the hall, he saw 2 soldiers outside chasing a young girl of about 15 or 16 with long black hair, fair skin, and bright, beautiful eyes.

"Save me!! Save me! Save me!!" The girl looked to Yue Zhong and screamed out in fear.

Chapter 638: Freak!

Yue Zhong glanced at the girl, and his eyes shined with a glint, "Bring that woman over here!"

Bai Xiao Sheng chuckled, and shot forwards, sending 2 fists towards the soldiers chasing behind, causing them to fly backward.

The extremely pretty girl ran to Yue Zhong and hugged his legs, pleading profusely, "Save me!! Save me, please!! I'm willing to do anything for you! Save me, please save me!!"

Yue Zhong glanced at this girl, whose face was full of fear, and smiled, "Interesting! I want this woman!"

Liu Cheng, who was still standing by the side, immediately cut in with a sullen expression, "Leader Yue Zhong! This woman is a criminal of our underground city, and had committed a grave sin! She has to die. We're willing to hand you 20 beautiful virgins, so please return her to us. If you insist on having her, it'll only drive a wedge between us."

The beautiful woman looked at Liu Cheng, and her face turned extremely pale, as she hurried to hug Yue Zhong's leg tighter, her body trembling, "Please! Please! I don't want to die!"

"I want this woman. Scram!" Yue Zhong felt something was off, and his brows arched, while he released his powerful killing intent.

Immediately, the elite soldiers beside him whisked out their weapons and aimed it at Liu Cheng.

Liu Cheng's face turned ugly, as he retreated slightly while trying to coax Yue Zhong, "Leader Yue Zhong! We're willing to give all the information on the production of the super soldiers to you. As long as you give us that woman. How about that?"

Yue Zhong was instantly rocked in his heart, as he contemplated seriously. If he could gain the information on the super soldiers, then even ordinary humans had the chance to be enhanced

without vying for resources with regards to zombies or Mutant Beasts. He could even make use of the research to enhance himself further.

Compared to the information, this one girl wasn't worth as much.

The young girl immediately shrieked out in panic, "Don't trust him! They're all freaks!! They aren't human! They're all monsters! They are being controlled by some monster!! Quick, escape!! Bring me with you! Please!! Otherwise, it'll be too late! Please take me out of here. I'll be willing to do anything! Quick, let's flee!!"

When Yue Zhong heard those words, he felt a chill overcome his heart, as a sense of foreboding arose. After the world had changed, there were all sorts of organisms all around, if there were even the existence of freaks that could control humans, that would be even more terrifying.

Yue Zhong turned to fix his gaze on Liu Cheng, his eyes suspicious.

Liu Cheng's face turned worse as he chuckled bitterly, "Leader Yue Zhong, don't listen to her! I'm a human, how could I be a monster? She's insane! She's definitely insane! Are you going to trust someone with an unsound mind?"

Yue Zhong patted the girl's head, and pointed at the 2 soldiers that were chasing her and ordered coldly, "Everyone is to prepare for battle! White Bones, go kill that person!"

White Bones immediately shot forwards, with its bone blades slashing down, cutting the soldier in half. Instantly, his brain was split into two, as white brain matter flowed out.

Yue Zhong stared fixedly at the 2 halves of the brain, only to discover a strange worm that was about the size of a palm, with layers of white skin and tentacles. It had been sliced in half, but it was still thrashing about in the juices, it looked utterly terrifying.

Yue Zhong sucked in a breath of cold air, his worst fears had come true. Such a strange worm could actually live in a person's brain, it was obvious that the person was long since under control.

Bai Xiao Sheng also felt a chill when he saw that worm struggling. Although they were elite soldiers that had gone through hundreds of battles, with nothing to fear even against zombies, such a scene was still mortifying to them.

Yue Zhong immediately ordered while still feeling chills down his spine, "Kill them all!!"

These people who had worms in their brains were no longer human. Yue Zhong did not want to leave such existences alive.

There was a flash from Bai Xiao Sheng's hands, and a blade shot towards Liu Cheng like a shooting star.

The ordinary-looking Liu Cheng who seemed scholarly and weak suddenly became enraged, with his eyes turning bloodshot, and his body expanding to twice its size. His clothes were torn, and veins bulged everywhere. His skin became a bright red, and he emitted a terrifying violent aura.

Facing that incoming blade, Liu Cheng just raised his massive right arm to block in front of him.

The blade could not penetrate through the right arm, it just pierced the skin about 2 cm deep, and it got stuck. However, even then, there was not a drop of blood that was spilled.

Bai Xiao Sheng's eyes were filled with shock, and he immediately activated his ability, pushing his speed to the limit, and transformed into a specter as he slashed out at Liu Cheng. Instantly, there were 6 new wounds on Liu Cheng's body.

Liu Cheng unleashed an inhuman roar towards the skies.

With that loud howl, it seemed that every single male and female inside the large hall began to shine with a bright red glow, and their bodies all started to transform. Some grew feelers like

cockroaches while others had front limbs like that of a praying mantis. There were some who had powerful hind legs like kangaroos, and others had feelers like ants. They all had the same characteristics though, which were the bright red eyes, and their bodies seemed to expand with powerful veins bulging out.

They charged forwards, rushing towards Yue Zhong and his party.

The girl screamed when she saw them, "Careful! Don't get caught by them! Otherwise, they will implant you with a worm as well, and you'll become just like them!"

Yue Zhong pulled out his Black Tooth Blade, and with a single slash, 3 of the transformed people instantly became sliced corpses.

From the heads of those killed by Yue Zhong, 3 fat and strange worms appeared, which quickly slithered towards Yue Zhong. Their speed was 7 times as fast as a person, and ordinary people would definitely not be able to escape from them.

Yue Zhong saw them and his blade danced again, chopping them up.

One soldier slashed at one of the transformed woman, who suddenly opened her mouth wide, and a fat worm flew out, landing on the face of the soldier.

The fat and white worm swiftly wriggled its body and squirmed through the soldier's nose.

When the soldier saw this horrifying scene, he immediately screamed out in terror, "Ah!! Save me!! Save me!!"

One other soldier heard his cry and kicked the transformed woman he was entangled with. He rushed forward anxiously and asked, "Ah Ming! What's wrong!!"

The soldier Ah Ming suddenly stopped thrashing, his face turned into an evil mask, and with a sudden bloating of his arm, the Tang Replica Sword swung towards his concerned friend.

Caught unprepared and with his guard down, the anxious soldier's head was lopped off cleanly by his old comrade.

After Ah Ming slaughtered his friend, his eyes also turned red, and his body started to expand with his veins bulging. With an angry roar, he suddenly burst forth with a speed that was way beyond his original 8-times Agility, slashing at his other comrades.

The comrade hurried to defend himself while roaring in shock, "Ah Ming! Have you gone mad?!"

Dang!

As the blades clashed with each other, the defending soldier was kicked violently by the mind-controlled Ah Ming, and he slammed into a wall. He spat out a large amount of blood, his internal organs exploding from the impact, and he died instantly.

Ah Ming already possessed 15 times Strength of a normal person, after the transformation, he could unleash 27 times Strength. This was a level that could only be reached by a high-level Strength-based Evolver with powerful equipment.

After being controlled, Ah Ming's entire stature became terrifying, and he became much stronger.

"Lei Ming had been controlled! Bai Xiao Sheng, go take everyone and get out of here! Take care not to let any of those freaks near you, I'll cover you guys!!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly and he barked out.

There were multiple transformed humans that poured out from every part of the underground city, each of them charging over with bloodshot eyes.

Yue Zhong had brought along elite soldiers, and it would not be an issue to slaughter all these transformed people. However, he did not know exactly how many such freaks there were, and he was focused only on getting out, otherwise, all his elite soldiers would perish.

"Go!" Bai Xiao Sheng did not bother with any unnecessary pleasantries, and threw Liu Cheng aside, as he led the rest of the Evolvers to kill their way out.

One of them had the ability to manipulate winds, and his pupils narrowed, as a terrifying hurricane appeared, blowing the transformed humans out of Bai Xiao Sheng's path. Those who weren't blown away were instantly pounced upon by the rest and they utilized all their abilities to kill those freaks instantly.

Chapter 639: Terrifying Parasites!

Those normal humans who were infected by the parasites were not exceptionally strong, and could not compare to the elites under Yue Zhong. However, amongst them, Lei Ming and Liu Cheng were powerful, to begin with. After the infection and mind control, they burst forth with exponential strength.

Liu Cheng's eyes were red like a beast, as he charged at Yue Zhong with 17 times speed.

Yue Zhong frowned and his Black Tooth Blade slashed out at Liu Cheng like a venomous dragon, and Liu Cheng was instantly sliced into 6 or 7 parts, and his head split open as well.

The moment Liu Cheng's head was split open, a white worm sprang out like lightning at Yue Zhong.

"Hmph! Go to hell! Freak!" Yue Zhong's countenance was cold, as he dealt with the white parasite easily.

20 parasite-controlled humans then lunged for Yue Zhong.

In response, Yue Zhong twirled his Black Tooth Blade around and sliced up the 20 humans easily.

However, as a result, 10 of the parasites shot out of their hosts and made for Yue Zhong.

Fortunately, Yue Zhong's reaction and speed was at a high enough level to deal with them and turned them into sliced up parts within a breath as well.

Lei Ming's terrifying figure shot out from behind the group of controlled humans and sent a fist that caused a sonic boom right at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed as he activated his Shadow Steps, and pushed his speed to a new high. He twisted and dodged that blow, while the Black Tooth Blade slashed out at Lei Ming.

Dang!

Following the sounds of metal clashing, Lei Ming's body was sliced by Yue Zhong, although it was not all the way through.

However, to his shock, the muscles just trembled, and the wound that was caused by Yue Zhong swiftly regenerated in front of his eyes, leaving no remnants of the previous injury.

A chill flashed in Yue Zhong's eyes, "What a tough body. These parasite-controlled bodies are truly able to push themselves to the limit. The stronger the body when taken over, the stronger the potential."

Lei Ming had no reservations as he continued to send powerful fists after fists at Yue Zhong.

A few of the other transformed humans soon came over, 6 of them with spider-like eyes opened their mouths, as they fired long spider silks at Yue Zhong.

3 others who had their legs transformed into powerful kangaroo thighs arched their bodies, and burst out towards Yue Zhong with a 19 times speed.

2 others sprouted tiger claws and pounced at Yue Zhong.

The rest all launched their own attacks with their own innate abilities.

"You can all burn!!" Facing such a large-scale assault, Yue Zhong's eyes flashed violently, and he waved his right hand, as the terrifying Devil Flame tornado raged and swept towards the incoming opponents.

The transformed humans began to scream and wail the moment they came in contact with the Devil Flame, and it lasted all the way until they were burnt to ashes.

Lei Ming's eyes were blood red, his body was bulging with veins, and he was covered with a layer of green aura that blocked the

burning of the Devil Flame. However, he was still struggling in pain.

Lei Ming suddenly turned to face Yue Zhong as he pleaded loudly, "Leader! It's me! Lei Ming! On account of how I've done so much for you, don't kill me!! Please!!"

Yue Zhong stared fixedly at him, before speaking slowly, "You are not Lei Ming. Freak, you've killed my subordinate and now, you want to make use of my subordinate to lie to me. I will kill every single one of you and leave nothing alive!"

'Lei Ming' roared out in anger, "Yue Zhong you heartless bastard! I've done so much for you, and now you want to kill me! I will tell of your evil deeds to the others, and reveal your true nature! One fine day, you will be left all alone and die alone!!"

"Burn!!" Yue Zhong's eyes gleamed coldly, and he pushed his Spirit, increasing the intensity of the Devil Flame around Lei Ming's body.

The green aura collapsed, and soon, the fleshly body was burnt into cinders by the Devil Flame.

Yue Zhong eyed the entrance of the lab once more, before turning to leave,

He knew there were definitely plenty of valuable research data and equipment within, if he were to set fire and burn it all, it would be a huge loss.

Right now, within this underground city, it was a scene right out of hell, with huge numbers of transformed humans pouring out. The survivors within saw this terrifying scene and began to flee.

One spider-like transformed human spat out long spider webs around a few emaciated survivors, and dragged them to a dark corner.

Another with tiger claws immediately grabbed onto an ordinary survivor, and with all its strength, it ripped his head from his

body.

"Ah! Help!!"

"No!!"

"..."

As for the rest of the survivors, they were either killed on the spot or dragged off by the rest of the transformed humans.

Over a hundred transformed humans were converging on Yue Zhong's soldiers from all directions.

Yue Zhong had brought elite soldiers with him, and they were currently firing at the transformed humans. With each headshot, the white worms would shoot out and be fired upon.

However, while they might be strong and possess capabilities beyond normal humans, their numbers were still at a disadvantage, and they were being slowly surrounded by the transformed humans.

Many of the white worms that were shot out from the heads of the transformed humans quickly fled towards the dark alleys, before burrowing into the captured survivors, and launching another wave of attacks through their new hosts.

There were constant streams of transformed humans from all corners.

Bai Xiao Sheng was like a hurricane, the Dark Magic Blade in his hands slashing out with multiple blade beams, killing many of the transformed humans, together with the parasitic worms in them. However, since there was a constant stream of them, he could not pause to take a breath, and his Stamina depleted quickly.

Many of the other elite soldiers were also forced to utilize their skills constantly and were harassed by those transformed humans. Their Stamina and Spirit were also dwindling like crazy.

If it weren't for their experience and their willpower, they would

have long since been overwhelmed.

"Flee!!"

As they were struggling, a powerful flaming tornado descended and burned the transformed humans, enveloping the whole area. With a bright flash, they all turned to ash.

When the flames disappeared, the tunnel leading to the exit was clear.

Bai Xiao Sheng and his men quickly rushed for the exit.

Yue Zhong hugged the girl close to him while waving his Black Tooth Blade about, slashing more of the transformed humans as he followed the tunnel out, covering the back.

When everyone managed to return to the surface, they gasped for breath, their faces flashing with a tinge of fear.

Those fat white parasitic worms were too dangerous. Their speed of infection was too fast, and their numbers were insane. Not only were they tough to kill, if one was not careful, they would be infected as well.

This time, he had paid the painful price of losing 5 of his men to this underground hell. If he had brought ordinary soldiers, at best, a 1,000 might be lost to those freaks below.

He let the girl down from his embrace and asked her solemnly, "What's your name?"

The pretty girl was slightly lost, as she replied, "I'm Han Sha Sha! I'm the daughter of one of the research scientists here, Dr. Han Min Bo."

His face was dark as he continued, "I want to know, what the fuck went on down there? What are those things?"

Those fat white worms possessed the ability to possess a person's body, and even with his Eye of Perception, there was no notification about them, which caused him to feel extremely

worried and a strong sense of foreboding.

"Alright! Before the world changed, I had always come here to play. When the apocalypse happened, many of the uncles here turned to zombies. A lot were bitten to death. The soldiers up here then managed to retreat below. They brought men to eradicate the zombies, and everyone decided to stay put."

"In the mess, many of the officials below died, leaving behind Zhao Kuang as the highest ranking person. He swiftly reorganized the power structure below, and at the beginning, there was nothing wrong, but after half a year, he began to change, becoming extremely explosive and violent. He would treat the survivors as his slaves, and many of the soldiers became wooden and numb, and listened only to him."

"From then on, many people began to disappear from. Whenever they reappeared, they had become strange."

"A few of my friends and I had sneaked into the lab to take a look and discovered a huge secret. Zhao Kuang was no longer human, instead, he became a huge worm, and was injecting small white parasites into other living bodies. After discovering this secret, we all hid, however, today, they discovered us."

When Han Sha Sha thought back to the scene of the mutated Zhao Kuang injecting parasites into live human beings, she felt nauseated and her body trembled uncontrollably.

Yue Zhong asked solemnly, "How many survivors were there previously?"

She thought for awhile, before giving her conjecture, "According to the size when it was built, it could accommodate 50,000 people. Before the world changed, there were already 10,000 people living there. After that, with the deaths and the increasing casualty toll due to hunger and other murders and suicide, the total population went down. I think there should still be a 1,500 or so below. Of those, 800 of them should be parasite-controlled."

Chapter 640: Raiding the Underground City!

When Yue Zhong heard that, his heart sank, "Over 800 people controlled by parasites?!"

Every single one of those freaks possessed a dangerous strength, and it was hard to deal with them. To eradicate them entirely, it was truly going to be an uphill task.

Yue Zhong continued to ask, "Where did you see Zhao Kuang?"

Han Sha Sha's eyes flashed with a dark look, "In the animal testing lab. It's rumored that there was the place where biological weapons were produced and tested. Zhao Kuang had holed himself up there since the apocalypse. We also saw him there. However, other than me, the rest of my friends had already died, or were brought to be infected."

"Open up!! Please open up!!"

"Open up!! Let us out!!"

"..."

There were the sounds of rapid banging from the entrance of the tunnel, while the panicked sounds of the survivors traveled from behind. They were banging the door while screaming and shouting to be let out.

Bai Xiao Sheng looked at Yue Zhong and asked, "What do we do, Leader?"

Inside the tight space, if the whole crowd of them were to squeeze through, they would jam the tunnel. The moment they filled up the tunnel, those parasitic worms would definitely be able to spread through them.

At close range, only Bai Xiao Sheng who was a peak level Agility-based Evolver could possibly deal with those parasites. The rest of

the Evolvers would likely be infected.

Yue Zhong pondered awhile before ordering, "Other than Bai Xiao Sheng, Tenpyo Saka, Cheng Mu and Qian He, the rest are to evacuate. Zhang Xing, Niu Jin, Wang Li, Zhu He, the 4 of you will watch over this girl. If she goes through any strange changes, immediately kill her. Take note of your safety! If any of your comrades are infected, immediately kill them. The moment they are controlled, they're no longer our comrades!"

Han Sha Sha could not help but squeal, "Why are you guarding me?! I'm not infected! I'm really sure I'm not infected!"

Yue Zhong stared at Han Sha Sha and barked, "Shut up! If you're ok after tests and checks, I will call it off. The main problem with these parasites is that they can live in the human brain. If I'm not wrong, they can control all thoughts, and access the memories of its hosts. Whether or not you're infected, remains to be seen."

Han Sha Sha's body trembled slightly when she was stared at by Yue Zhong and did not dare say anything.

Yue Zhong ordered, "All of you, keep guard here! Don't let anyone out!"

Bai Xiao Sheng nodded and replied, "Yes!"

Yue Zhong came to Bi Lù and said, "Get your low-level Treants and come with me!"

Bi Lù nodded and a spirit wave spread out, soon after, many treants quickly gathered.

In the underground basement, the treants were all squeezed inside.

Yue Zhong then barked solemnly, "Open the door!"

The moment the door opened, a huge number of survivors swarmed out, intending to rush out.

"Save me!!"

"Let me out!!"

"Quick, scram!!"

"..."

The survivors fought to get out, some stepping over one another, trying their best to flee.

Yue Zhong watched them and ordered coldly, "Kill them all!! Destroy their heads!"

Bi Lǔ nodded and sent out a spirit wave, and the low-level Treants immediately pounced on the survivors.

The survivors that managed to get out were instantly decapitated by 2 low-level Treants, and a swipe of their sharp claws, the brain was slashed open, revealing white brain juice.

The fat and white parasitic worm swimming within the brain immediately leaped for the low-level Treant.

The Treant opened its mouth and shot out some tendrils. The tendrils wrapped around the fat worm and sucked it into its mouth, as it bit down and swallowed it.

In a flash, more survivors were killed, and their heads were all inhabited by the fat white worms.

"As expected!!" Yue Zhong watched them die, as the worms flew out, only to be consumed by the treants, his eyes flashing.

When Yue Zhong and his forces had fled the underground city, the survivors had been following right behind, at a steady pace as well. This was not normal. After all, Yue Zhong and the rest were all power Evolvers, their speed far surpassed ordinary humans. The fact that these survivors had caught up so fast, meant only one possibility, that they were all controlled by the parasites already.

After dozens of the survivors were killed, the rest of the survivors began to transform. Their eyes turned bloodshot, their veins bulging, and they began to howl out like beasts. Soon after that,

they clashed with the treants.

The moment those controlled-humans transformed, they had the strength to contend with the treants, and a few unfortunate treants would be squashed by them. At the same time, some of the transformed humans were also being slashed and torn apart by the treants, the parasites in their brains being consumed by the treants.

The 2 groups of monsters continued their slaughter against each other in that narrow tunnel, the corpses piling up and blocking the tunnel further.

"This can't go on further!" Yue Zhong watched the intense clash and frowned. The treants were after all also part of his military force, and he didn't want to waste them here.

Yue Zhong's hand flipped, and his Electromagnetic Gun appeared. He aimed it at the tunnel and fired once.

The single shot from the gun immediately blasted the controlled-humans jamming the tunnel into pieces.

Yue Zhong swiftly fired out another 10 shots, and the terrifying bullets almost blasted all the survivors apart.

The treants quickly swarmed in, and surrounded the injured controlled-humans or transformed humans and tore their brains to pieces.

The battle continued for an exhausting 3 hours, and after the intense fight, Yue Zhong led the army of treants further into the underground city.

At this time, in the underground city, it was a desolate scene. The streets were covered in blood, and there were no signs of any living things.

Yue Zhong surveyed the surroundings and spoke in a low voice, "Bai Xiao Sheng! Take some men and guard this area, other than us, do not let anyone out under any circumstances!!"

The existence of those parasites was too horrifying. Yue Zhong did not know if they could survive out on their own or even replicate themselves. If they did, all it would take is for one controlled-human to flee from this place, and the species could propagate above ground, enslaving other humans.

The parasites were only discoverable through proper tools, other than that, the only way was to tear apart the person's head to confirm if there were any parasites inside. If such a problematic existence was to escape into the mass of humanity, it would be truly cripple the human race.

Bai Xiao Sheng nodded seriously, "Yes!"

Yue Zhong then gave an order to Bi Lǚ, "Eradicate all other life forms other than us. Destroy their heads and make sure to kill the parasites in their brains!"

Bi Lǚ nodded and sent out a thought, enveloping the treants.

The treants all responded by letting out a bloodthirsty call, and they scattered to the different parts of the city to search for their prey.

Yue Zhong then told Bi Lǚ. "Stay here! Await further orders and news!"

Bi Lǚ was, after all, an organism that Yue Zhong had threatened, and that was why she submitted. Yue Zhong was likewise cautious of her, and not as trusting as Yin Shuang.

Yin Shuang had treated Yue Zhong as her most precious person the moment she was born. As long as he gave an order, she would go all out to complete his wishes.

Bi Lǚ nodded and went over to Bai Xiao Sheng's side.

Yue Zhong then flashed and disappeared from his position, running towards the biological research lab within the center of the city.

Along the way, he saw many traces of blood, but there was not a single body or corpse to be seen. There were no signs of any humans, and it was eerily quiet and desolate all around.

Initially, when he had just arrived here, he had seen some numb survivors lying on the ground, however, there was not a single one to be seen.

Furthermore, the entire underground city was plunged in darkness, when compared to earlier, there was decent lighting. Without light, the entire underground city felt like a dead one.

In the dark, only the treants, zombies could rely on their other senses to navigate. For humans, it was basically impossible to see beyond 3m.

If it had been any other Evolver, they might have been so fearful and fled already. After all, not many strong Evolvers were equipped to fight in the dark.

However, to Yue Zhong, the dark was his friend, and in the dark, his senses were heightened.

He came to the research lab and kicked the door down violently, smashing it to many pieces.

The moment the door was kicked open, 6 pairs of red eyes shone in the dark, their bodies suddenly pouncing forward for Yue Zhong. They had cockroach feelers on their heads and had smelly saliva dripping from their mouths.

Yue Zhong pulled out his Crocodile Toothsaw Blade and slashed out towards the 6 transformed humans, tearing their bodies into pieces. The moment their brains were ripped open, the 6 worms revealed themselves and were killed instantly.

Chapter 641: Research Lab!

Kuang Lang!!

Following the sounds of glass shattering, a number of transformed humans with red eyes appeared, howling out as they charged towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong frowned, and his Black Tooth Blade slashed out with multiple blade beams, turning the transformed humans into minced meat.

Soon, the bunch of transformed humans that had gathered at the entrance was killed easily by Yue Zhong.

He ensured that their bodies were properly mashed up and the parasites that popped out were not spared. Not a single transformed human could withstand his blows.

There were traces of fighting throughout the entire research lab, with different gun shots on the walls, as well as a few walls that seemed to have been blasted with explosives.

Yue Zhong followed the path all the way to the center of the research lab.

At the center of the lab, there were 10 rows of huge glass tubes, each row containing 20 each. There was a total of 200. Of those, 20 of them had been shattered, with glass pieces everywhere.

Yue Zhong took a careful look and realized that in some of the glass tubes, there were still some traces of white nourishment or liquid nutrients, yet outside, there was not a trace to be seen.

He took in the details and came to a conclusion, "The things inside these tubes must have escaped."

"This must be where the scientists were conducting biological experiments in the past." He looked at the shattered glass, as well as all the equipment present in this lab while thinking to himself.

Yue Zhong did not have much of a reaction towards experimentation. As long as there weren't any innocent human lives affected, even the end result of biological warfare was of no concern to him.

He continued walking about in the research lab when his eyes brightened up as he kneeled down on the floor. Sticking out his finger to touch a patch of red liquid on the ground, he realized, "This is blood!! Human blood!! It hasn't dried yet, they must be in this direction."

Yue Zhong lifted his head and followed the trail of blood towards a large door.

Suddenly, a strong sense of danger arose in his heart, and he quickly activated his Shadow Steps and rolled to one side.

A powerful mantis limb came slashing down with a speed breaking the sound barrier towards Yue Zhong's left shoulder. The blow managed to strike a corner of his shoulder, leaving a faint scar on the powerful Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake hide that he was wearing.

Yue Zhong quickly got to his feet and looked towards the direction of the attacker, only to see 2 huge praying mantis of about 2m each, standing behind the large glass. If they had facial expressions, one might guess they were looking savagely at Yue Zhong.

Their attacks had come at a terrifying speed, which even Yue Zhong could not fully dodge with his overpowered Agility. If it had been any other persons, even if they were Evolvers and had gone through multiple enhancements, they would likely have been sliced in two.

At this moment, there was a bright flash of light, and Zhao Kuang's image appeared on a large screen.

He looked at Yue Zhong and laughed, "What a surprise! Yue

Zhong, you actually made it here. However, this is the furthest that you'll reach. My 2 babies will tear you apart and you'll become a part of me!!"

Zhao Kuang's eyes lit up, "Yue Zhong, it truly is a pity. I had truly wanted to cooperate with you. As long as you agree to be controlled by my children, and become a part of my children, I can easily make you a king of the world! You'll be standing atop the rest of the life forms. Amongst my children, only you possess that potential. After you become king, you can get anything you want! Even if you wanted 10,000 beauties to kneel and prostrate in front of you, and raise their asses at you, it wouldn't be a problem. How about it? Do you want to consider?"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, as he retorted, "Fuck off!! Freak! I will tear you apart and set you ablaze!"

If he truly allowed Zhao Kuang to implant him with the parasites, he was sure he would be controlled entirely. Even if he became the king of the world, it would be as a puppet.

After that, Yue Zhong pulled out his Crocodile Toothsaw Blade and pounced on one of the blood-red mantis.

The bloodshot eyes of the giant blood-red mantis flashed, as it slashed towards Yue Zhong with its own claws, which could even damage the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake hide. As long as it could slash Yue Zhong consecutively, it was likely that within 3 moves, it could pierce through entirely.

Yue Zhong suddenly came to a stop, and leaped back, as the claws of the mantis came slashing down, before retracting quickly.

Yue Zhong opened his hands and activated his Devil Flame, as a powerful Devil Flame Arrow fired out from his hands, shooting towards the body of the giant blood-red mantis, resulting in a huge bleeding wound, as the mantis began to burn.

The moment the blood-red mantis started to burn, its wings

began to flap furiously, as it turned into a huge burning ball of flame that slammed around the lab.

The other mantis charged toward Yue Zhong.

"Too slow!" Yue Zhong looked at the blood-red mantis that charged towards him with 16 times speed, and he laughed coldly, opening his palms. A powerful Devil Flame Arrow shot out and blasted the 2nd mantis, causing it to also burn up.

The close combat abilities of those 2 mantises were truly terrifying, the moment they unleashed their claws, they were lightning fast, even Yue Zhong was hard-pressed to dodge. However, their movement speed was different and was no threat to Yue Zhong.

The 2 mantises struggled futilely for a long while before they were burnt by the Devil Flame into cinders.

Yue Zhong walked carefully towards the huge door.

As he got closer, he could see multiple spider silk that weaved together to form a huge web. He swung his Crocodile Toothsaw Blade at the silk, causing a loud grating sound to ring out. However, the sharpness of the Crocodile Toothsaw Blade still managed to saw through the spider silk.

When the spider web broke, it was as though Yue Zhong triggered some trap, as multiple strings of silk shot out from all directions at Yue Zhong.

He frowned and pointed out, as a flaming tornado burst forth and burnt the web, turning them to ash.

After he had cleared the spider web, he entered the room gingerly.

2 large spiders that seemed to be covered in steel fur were lying in wait for Yue Zhong up on the roof, each of them at least 2m in width. The moment they saw him, they opened their jaws to fire out their silk at him.

2 flaming tornadoes appeared as Yue Zhong waved his hands, turning all the spider web into ash, and as they billowed, they consumed the 2 large spiders as well.

The 2 burnt spiders dropped from the ceiling and thrashed about for a while, before finally curling up in death.

Having dealt with those spiders, Yue Zhong surveyed his surroundings.

He saw that the middle of the room was covered entirely in webs, and there were even 2 cocoons made out of spider silks hanging, as 2 trails of blood led to them.

Yue Zhong thus conjured up another 2 fireballs and sent them towards the cocoons, causing them to burn up.

After eradicating all the enemies in the room, Yue Zhong proceeded further in.

He padded down a long corridor and came to a huge and vast living room.

At this moment, in front of him, the entire living room was covered in a strange white secretion, with many red cocoons hanging everywhere.

Zhao Kuang had turned into a strange half-man, half-worm being, his lower part being a 20m-long parasite, as fat and white as a worm could possibly be.

The worm part was currently submerged in some white liquid, as a number of tubes were connected from the worm part to the numerous red cocoons hanging everywhere.

All around Zhao Kuang, there was blood, the blood of humans, as well as the inner organs and limbs that were splattered all around. 8 parasite-controlled humans of about 2 meters each continued to mash up the bloody contents around Zhao Kuang and scooped them up on plates for Zhao Kuang to feast on, Zhao Kuang lifted his head, his face full of blood as he laughed and tried to attract

Yue Zhong, "You've come! Yue Zhong!! You truly are incredible. You have my admirations! Become my child! As long as you do so, I can grant you unlimited strength, and allow you to become the perfect organism! You've seen for yourself, those who become my children can immediately gain powers. Furthermore, I have the ability to push your evolution all the way to become the king of humans!"

"This is my answer!" Yue Zhong laughed coldly and pulled out his Electromagnetic Gun to fire once at Zhao Kuang.

A bright burst of energy shot violently towards Zhao Kuang.

Zhao Kuang's face fell as he let out a sharp scream.

Immediately, the 8 parasite-controlled humans grew out body parts that merged together to become a huge turtle shell, protecting him.

When the powerful electromagnetic beam slammed into the human turtle shell, it pierced through 6 of the layers, before losing its power.

As Zhao Kuang screamed, a bright red thing traveled from his lower worm body into one of the blood-red cocoons.

The cocoon was about 3m-large and it split open, as a huge ape which had bright red eyes, and bone spikes growing out of its arms and legs, stepped out. It was about 2m-tall, with claws of at least 60cm.

The huge ape immediately opened its eyes, as a dangerous glint flashed past. As its legs tensed, it disappeared from its spot, and immediately appeared in front of Yue Zhong, viciously clawing at his head.

"Fast!! That monster's speed is fast!! Its agility is even higher than the current Lightning!!" Yue Zhong was shocked and raised the Crocodile Toothsaw Blade to deflect that attack. With a loud 'dang', a dangerous strength traveled from the claw up through the

blade, causing Yue Zhong's entire right arm to tremble and become numb.

Chapter 642: Wiping out the Parasites!

Zhao Kuang's mouth remained open as it screamed out continuously, while a huge amount of blood-red liquid was secreted out of its body, entering the different cocoons hanging around. They began to tremble, as though something was about to break out.

"This can't go on!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, as he waved his hands to conjure a Devil Flame Tornado, sending it towards the cocoons.

There were over a hundred cocoons amongst the white liquid, if they were to fully emerge, they would become a terrifying parasite army.

Yue Zhong's Devil Flame landed on those cocoons, and flames began to rage on, causing the cocoons to sizzle and crackle.

As the Devil Flame burnt, the cocoons began to split open, revealing strange biological life forms. Some of them had humans inside but with 2 heads. There was one had a tiger-head and jaguar claws, while another had a human with a huge turtle shell on his back. The life forms contained within those cocoons were truly strange, it was evident that they had been forced to mutate based on the research conducted before the apocalypse.

Yue Zhong exerted all his strength to spread the Devil Flames throughout the entire room. The huge ape was covered in a blood red radiance, blocking the burning of the Devil Flames. Even Zhao Kuang, as the queen worm, had a layer of red preventing itself from being burned.

The huge ape then sent powerful fists at Yue Zhong constantly, whistling through the air. Yue Zhong had to use his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade to parry the attacks, and with every block, his hands turned numb from the impact.

The blows from the huge ape forced Yue Zhong to focus hard, thus the Devil Flames disappeared from the room, leaving only behind a huge number of burnt cocoons and the heavily injured Zhao Kuang.

Zhao Kuang stared hatefully at Yue Zhong, its fat bottom suddenly splitting open, and a huge number of white parasites crawled out, pouncing towards Yue Zhong.

At the same time, one of the cocoons suddenly broke open, as a large claw covered in green scales tore through, as though a terrifying monster was about to be born.

"I must end the battle soon!" Yue Zhong felt the change in the surroundings, and his eyes turned resolute, activating his Gravity Manipulation.

A powerful gravitational force enveloped the huge ape, causing its body to sink. However, to the large ape, the 2-times gravitational force couldn't affect it much. It roared out savagely and sent another fist towards Yue Zhong.

This time, the fist managed to connect with Yue Zhong's head, and in the next instant, 'Yue Zhong' crumbled apart, turning into many pieces.

"Break!!" Yue Zhong's real body appeared beside the ape, slashing down with the huge blade made out of the claws of the Type 4 Flaming Bird, accompanied with his Dark Dou Qi that was enhanced twice, cutting the waist of the huge ape.

The sharp blade slashed into the right waist of the huge ape as easily as slicing into tofu, cutting it in two, as a huge amount of blood splattered on the ground.

Yue Zhong waved his hands, sending Devil Flame towards the cocoon that was about to break open. The claw that had reached out started to struggle before the entity inside screamed out, and the entire thing was burnt to cinders.

The mass of white parasites was quickly burnt up as their corpses shriveled before splitting violently.

Yue Zhong then pulled out his Electromagnetic Gun and fired again at Zhao Kuang.

A huge flash of light blasted towards the body of Zhao Kuang, piercing 2 of the parasite-controlled humans who had turned into meat shields. The shot exploded violently on Zhao Kuang, resulting in a large hole.

Zhao Kuang's face contorted as he spat out with a large amount of saliva, "Ah!! Yue Zhong!! You dare to hurt me!! I want you to die an ugly death! I want you to be ripped apart!! I will control you and kill all those you love!!"

"You are all going to die here! What the fuck are you making so much noise for?" Yue Zhong laughed coldly, before firing multiple times. The shots landed on Zhao Kuang's body, resulting in more blood and white matter to splatter everywhere, as more parasites crawled out from within.

One final shot hit Zhao Kuang squarely on his head, blasting it apart.

The headless corpse of Zhao Kuang twitched a little, before crumpling to the ground.

Yue Zhong saw the vanquished foe in front of him and finally heaved a sigh of relief. He had finally eradicated this strange monster. If it had escaped to the surface, it would be a nightmare for the human race.

There would be fear and uncertainty whenever anyone came across others, afraid of the possibility of the other party being a parasite. The moment it reached that point, distrust would cause the entire human race to crumble, as everyone would be paranoid, and no one would want to work or live with anyone.

Having killed Zhao Kuang, Yue Zhong turned his gaze to the huge

ape. He sent the long sharp blade slashing down at the ape's neck, decapitating it.

Right at the moment the ape's head was chopped off, a bright-red parasite that had evolved from the fat, white state into something that resembled a scorpion, flapped its wings and flew towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong waved his blade and slashed the red, fat parasite into two, as the parts dropped to the ground. He then stomped down with his foot, smashing the worm into meat paste.

Right at this time, there was the sound of rustling from outside the room.

Yue Zhong turned around, as he caught sight of 8 low-level treants climbing in.

The moment the treants saw the white liquid and red cocoons, they became excited, and charged forth, swallowing the liquid.

One of them pounced towards one cocoon and began to take huge bites out of it.

Yue Zhong was silently stirred, as he watched their strange actions quietly. He had initially intended to burn the whole place down, but upon seeing their actions, he felt that the things inside the room might have some value.

The low-level treant that consumed the strange things inside the cocoons began to undergo strange changes. The moment it finished eating, its body began to tremble. Soon after, it elongated, reaching 1.8m, its legs becoming thick. At the same time, a new layer of bark grew over the current layer, its claws becoming sharp. Its eyes were still lifeless, as it stood there quietly.

After 10 minutes, the low-level treant regained its spirit, and it shook its body powerfully, as sharp tendrils shot out from it.

"Level 60 Strange Beast: Type 2 Treant! Possesses powerful combat ability. Although it does not possess any innate ability,

their strength is terrifying, on par with some weaker Type 3 Mutant Beasts."

Yue Zhong used his Eye of Perception to look at the treant and immediately got its new information.

"Those red cocoons should be beneficial to the evolution of mutant biological life forms." Yue Zhong watched the low-level treant finished its evolution and thought silently.

The other low-level treants also quickly pounced on the other red cocoons and began to consume them.

The Type 2 Treant stepped aside and swallowed a huge amount of white slime, before grabbing a few cocoons and gobbled them up.

The Type 2 treant repeated its actions a few times, as the layers of bark continued to shed, as the layers that grew over became even more vibrant and slowly covered its whole body.

"Level 65 Strange Beast: Type 3 Treant!"

When the Treant had its entire body covered by the new vibrant layer of bark, Yue Zhong watched as the Type 2 Treant evolved into a Type 3 one in front of his eyes.

He felt the power and quickly pulled out his walkie-talkie to order, "Bi Lǚ, summon all the treants back to you!"

If he allowed the treants to continue evolving, the moment they evolve to their Type 4 stage, it would be troublesome. Yue Zhong did not know if Bi Lǚ could control that tier of strength.

Most of the treants had already evolved, every one of them reaching their Type 2, and they had powerful combat strength.

Right as they wanted to quickly continue swallowing the rest of the cocoons, their bodies shuddered slightly, as they begun to make their way back.

The Type 3 Treant seemed to struggle a little as it eyed the blood

red cocoons and white slime, before turning around and retreating as well.

Yue Zhong watched them go and heaved a sigh of relief, "Truly as expected, the higher the type, the harder to control. If they continued to evolve, it would be a problem."

Yue Zhong looked at some of the cocoons and the strange white slime, before walking up to one of them and split it open. He then sliced the head of the mutated life form within in two, before moving on to the next one and doing the same.

Chapter 643: Killer Lie Ming Yi!

Yue Zhong then kept 2 huge tanks of the white slime, as well as the 30 cocoons into his spatial ring, before slicing open the corpse of the queen worm Zhao Kuang.

The bodies of high-level Mutant Beasts usually had some treasures, and Yue Zhong wanted to see if this mutated life form of Zhao Kuang was similar.

All around his body, there were still many parasites squirming about in the disgusting red discharge. Yue Zhong did not mind the dirt or smell, as he continued to dig about until he discovered a red pearl near Zhao Kuang's heart.

He placed the pearl into his ring, before thoroughly slicing up Zhao Kuang's corpse to confirm that there were no more treasures. He then searched the entire room, making sure that there were no more residual cocoons, before heading out to get his men to clean up.

Inside this underground city, there were no more living people anymore. Other than those that had been sent out earlier as cannon fodder that was already controlled, the rest had been turned into food for that mutated Zhao Kuang.

However, Yue Zhong still managed to find 10,000 tons of rations, as well as a large amount of research equipment and data. There were also 300 rifles, 25 grenade launchers, and a 100 ton of fuel.

The haul from this underground city was fruitful, but because Zhao Kuang had become that strange progenitor of parasites, he had been unwilling to strengthen the humans that were meant to be his food. Thus, he did not allocate many resources out, barely touching the reserves of the city.

Other than resources, the majority of the research equipment were all fine without any damage, as long as they were maintained

and those that had been damaged, looked at, they could all be put to use.

This research lab had been the forefront of biological research before the apocalypse in China and possessed the top-of-the-range equipment. With such a lab, its resources, and equipment, as long as Yue Zhong assigned some capable scientists to it, he could quickly initiate development in that area.

Yue Zhong also allocated 29 of the cocoons to some of the treants under Bi Lǔ to eat, instantly resulting in 29 more Type 3 Treants.

The combat ability of these Type 3 treats could not compare to a Type 3 Lightning, but 10 of them could easily force Lightning to a corner. At the very least, they could tear Lightning apart if they worked together.

With such a huge haul, Yue Zhong and his troops made back for Qi Mu County.

When he reached Qi Mu Town, Yue Zhong did not engage in any major activities, instead, focusing on training the Victorious Troops. At the same time, he put the troops he won over from the Kingdom of God to training.

At the same time, the regiment's worth of equipment inside the Ulan Mountain Range army barracks had all been brought out and allocated to his troops, pushing their combat strength to the next tier.

In the vast Central Plains, there were many small factions, and the Mongolian ones had all thrown their weight in with the Mongol King Hu-Er Ran.

Zhang Xiao, one skinny Chinese girl of about 15 or 16 was wearing simple clothes as she minded her sheep in a small Mongolian faction.

At this time, most of the plains were still covered in snow, but a few patches had already started to sprout with grass, and the

shepherds were able to allow their herd to graze again.

After the apocalypse, many animals had already mutated into Mutant Beasts. However, there were some that did not change, instead, living on obstinately. As long as they were not caught by zombies, they would not become zombified beasts as well.

Hu-Er Ran was also considered a capable warlord with charisma, nor was he lacking in intelligence. He knew that just relying on the legacies and resources left behind by the world before the apocalypse would be a bad choice, as it would run out one day. After proclaiming himself as king, he had deployed men to search for unmutated beasts to bring back to be looked after by his people.

Hu-Er Ran's actions were all for unifying a large number of Mongol shepherds. Many thus viewed him as the world's savior. At the same time, since the royal blood ran in his veins, many others sought to protect him with their lives.

Zhang Xiao's eyes were green, while her hands were full of whip bruises. Not only did she have to mind the sheep in the day, she would have to deal with the lust of 3 men at night. She had thought of running and tried once before. The result was that she was forced to starve for 3 days, and had been whipped till she almost died. She had since lost faith and became numb.

At this time, a few Mongol riders came rushing up, one of them eyeing Zhang Xiao, as a cruel look appeared on his face. He sent a vicious whip towards her and said, "Bitch! Master Hagg wants to fuck you! Take off your clothes, and raise your ass, let Master Hagg enjoy himself!!"

When the whip landed on her body, it immediately split apart her clothes and left a deep, bloody gash on her frail body.

Zhang Xiao immediately fell to the ground and curled up in pain, her tears and mucus flowing freely. She struggled for a while, before tearing off her clothes and got on the ground to raise her butt.

One of the Mongol riders roared with laughter as he pointed, "Bitch!! Look at that!! That's a Han slut! They're the most shameless, like dogs, having no shame at all!!"

Another got down from his horse and strode towards her, "Come! Everybody at the same time!!"

The rest of them also came towards Zhang Xiao gleefully.

"This bitch still dares to run! Truly seeking death!"

"Skin her, and use her to fertilize the grass, how about that?"

"Not bad! That idea's decent!!"

"..."

As they approached her, they began to discuss amidst laughter on how to torture and toy with Zhang Xiao.

When she heard their words, her body trembled violently in fear, as two streams of tears fell from her eyes. She was the princess of her household before the apocalypse, yet after that, she had become a slave to the Mongolians, and everything had changed. She had experienced for herself the cruelty of humankind, where dignity was nonexistent. The Mongolians did not let her off and were even discussing ways to torture her, and it caused her to be filled with dread.

One of them laughed savagely and pulled out his curved blade, "I've decided! Let's chop off her feet. See how she runs!!"

Another frowned and said, "Wu Tan, don't!! If there's blood everywhere, it isn't going to be fun. After we're done, you can go all out!!"

Another came up to Zhang Xiao and dropped his pants, grabbing her head and shoving it towards his crotch, "Me first!! Slut!! Suck it for daddy!!"

Right as Zhang Xiao's head was forced to his crotch, a powerful arrow pierced through the Mongolian's head, causing fresh blood

to splatter everywhere.

The warrior died with a look of shock and disbelief in his eyes.

The other 3 Mongolian riders immediately turned towards the direction of the arrow, as a few more arrows shot out, piercing them in the chest, nailing them to the ground.

200 soldiers appeared over the horizon, riding on the back of Black Scaled Stallions.

One of the soldiers looked at his leader, Lie Ming Yi, and asked, "Boss. There's a girl there. What do we do? Kill her?"

Lie Ming Yi assessed her before saying, "She must be a Han slave. Leave her alive!"

Lie Ming Yi then pulled out 2 bottles of mineral water and 5 biscuits, throwing it to her and said coldly, "Little rascal! I'm Lie Ming Yi, the commander of the 1st Cavalry Brigade under the mighty Yue Zhong. If you want to live on, make your way towards Qi Mu Town, only by reaching there, will there be a chance of survival."

Zhang Xiao immediately got on her knees and cried profusely, "Take me away!! I'm willing to do anything for you!! Please take me away!!"

"Sorry little rascal. There're no saviors in this world. I still have a mission to accomplish, and I can't help you. Only you can help yourself. Qi Mu Town is your only hope. If you want to live on, with dignity at that, head over there." Lie Ming Yi eyed her and shook his head, before passing the order, "Kill all the sheep."

The 200 soldiers immediately charged through and slaughtered every single sheep. After they were done, they began to slice up the meat and burnt the corpses.

"Charge! Kill those Mongolian bastards!" Lie Ming Yi roared out and led 200 soldiers towards the inner parts of the faction.

The Mongolian faction saw the entire herd of sheep being burnt and hurried sent out warriors, who charged at Lie Ming Yi and his men.

In this apocalypse, the 3 main factions were always warring, and thus, even the shepherds and farmers were called to arms. They were forced by the circumstances, otherwise, they would become slaves to each faction.

"Go die!!" Lie Ming Yi looked at the dozens of warriors running towards him and chuckled grimly, as he pointed with his right hand and a number of sharp blades made of air sliced towards them.

The warriors were instantly sliced at their waists by the unseen air blades.

The rest of the 200 soldiers led by Lie Ming Yi charged in and begun to slaughter the other warriors.

With his killing intent billowing, Lie Ming Yi roared out, "Convey my orders! Other than all Han slaves, everyone else has to die!"

"Yes!" The 200 soldiers behind Lie Ming Yi hollered out with their own roars and charged through.

Soon after, smoke began to rise from different places, as the troops under Lie Ming Yi killed the enemies and led the slaves out of the area.

Lie Ming Yi did not leave any troops to escort those slaves back to Qi Mu Town, instead, he charged right for the next one.

Zhang Xiao watched as the small town went up in smokes, her eyes flashing with deep hatred. She gripped the biscuits and water in her hands tightly and turned to make her way to Qi Mu Town.

Chapter 644: Mongol-Manchu Alliance!

Out here in the vast Central Plains, beside a lush lake, there was a grand and awe-inspiring golden tent. Within the tent, there were a dozen men in traditional Mongolian attire standing respectfully in two rows. On the central seat of the emperor, a young man of about 27 or 28 sat there, his stature was commanding, with an eagle-like gaze and a hook nose. He had handsome looks, and he was the publicly recognized Mongolian King, Hu-Er Ran.

Bo-Er Zi was currently venting his grievances with bloodshot eyes, "My King! Our Grey Wolf Riders were wiped out by those crazy Han dogs! Our flocks have also been burnt! Over 1,800 of our fellow Mongolians have died at the hands of those sick bastards! We seek your help in eradicating those damnable Han dogs!!"

Lie Ming Yi had seemingly transformed into a bloodthirsty demon, going on a massacre everywhere he went. For each faction he struck, he would release the Han slaves, and slaughter all the Mongolians, Turks and Manchurians.

The 200 soldiers that Lie Ming Yi led were all Evolvers, and many of them wanted vengeance against either the Mongol Empire, the Turkic Empire or Manchurian Empire. They were all similar in their viciousness, and never left anyone alive. It was as though a disaster had struck the Central Plains, and the various subordinates of the 3 factions bore the brunt of their fury. Lie Ming Yi's forces had truly attracted the irk of all three factions.

Hu-Er Ran glared at Bo-Er Zi sternly. The Mongolian Empire had been a work of his nationalistic propaganda.

When he wanted to expand it further, he realized that it was hard to change this way thinking. He had realized that integration was vital in conquering the whole China, otherwise, when their forces try to win over other factions, they would definitely face opposition.

However, in the course of the development, the Mongolian Empire was already something beyond the control of Hu-Er Ran. Every single Mongolian member had a number of slaves from the other races. Even his own subordinates had over hundreds and thousands of Han slaves. If he were to command them to release their slaves, his position as the Mongol King would definitely topple.

Using a nationalistic and racist approach, it was easy to gather people of like minds. However, changing it would truly be tough. This was because most of the passionate ones were crazy people. The moment their leader had no way of meeting their needs, they would do all they can to change the leader.

When Hu-Er Ran heard about the deeds of Lie Ming Yi, he was filled with rage as well as fear. This was the revenge and backlash that he knew would happen. It was the same method that his forces had been using on the ordinary people of the Central Plains, but he had known that the Hans would not resort to such methods. It was obvious that the leader Yue Zhong and the previous Han leaders he had met were vastly different. He was a vicious and powerful wolf, just like them, and his tyrannical actions were no different from past dictators, in fact, he was even more terrifying.

Amu Xidai's eyes flashed with a savage glint, "King, the Blood Eagle Riders are willing to be the vanguard, this time, we can definitely eradicate Yue Zhong's forces."

Amu Xidai's son had been at one of the factions playing with women, when the place was struck by Lie Ming Yi's forces, and he had been decapitated. This caused Amu Xidai to be filled with hatred towards Yue Zhong.

Hu-Er Ran spoke solemnly, "Then have any of you discovered a way to deal with those 8 assault helicopters in Yue Zhong's hands?"

Hearing those words, all the generals immediately shut up.

Yue Zhong had 8 Thunder Fighters, and those were rare

resources that were not readily available in this apocalyptic world. It was practically impossible for anyone to withstand those mighty weapons.

It was because of those Thunder Fighters and other advanced weaponry that the Kingdom of God could expand so fast in this world. Each time, they just had to deploy 12 Thunder Fighters together with 200 elite soldiers and could easily demolish a 10,000-strong faction.

Even if there was a 20,000-strong troop, without any aerial defense, the forces of Central Plains were defenseless against those Thunder Fighters.

In modern warfare, powerful equipment did not mean invincibility, however, without them, it was definitely a huge disadvantage. Saddam's million-strong army being defeated by the American forces was proof of that.

Yue Zhong's 8 Thunder Fighters were like huge rocks pressurizing the 3 large factions, making it hard for them to breathe.

Although Hu-Er Ran and the rest had opened up numerous army barracks, there weren't much aerial defenses to be found. Many of them were just 14.5mm high-caliber bullets.

They also possessed about 20 surface-to-air missiles, however, Hu-Er Ran did not have even one personnel who knew how to operate them.

After all, in the battles out here in the Central Plains, almost no faction used any aerial forces. This wasn't a huge problem in the past, but now, they truly felt their helplessness.

Before coming across Yue Zhong, as long as the Mongolian troops appeared with their tanks and cannons, any resistance from the smaller factions would quickly crumble. There was no use for those anti-air defenses.

Even if they came across a rare Evolver that could soar in the skies, the powerful guns of the Mongolian troops could fire at them until they were full of holes. They had no knowledge on dealing with aerial forces at the moment.

The leader of the Demon Wolf Riders, Tuo Shu, piped, "Night battle!! We can launch a night raid on them. In the dark, there's a limit to how much the Thunder Fighters can be utilized."

"That's right! Their combat strength would definitely be impaired in the night!"

"Truly Tuo Shu!"

"..."

The sound of cheers and excitement resounded from the huge tent.

In the night, many advanced equipment would lose their advantage as the users weren't well equipped to fight in the night.

Night raids were also usually a tactic weaker forces employed against stronger ones, however, most of them still didn't possess much confidence in obtaining victory against Yue Zhong. This was because they had received news on Yue Zhong obtaining the regiment's worth of equipment in Ulan Mountain Range.

Out of the 40,000 warriors of Hu-Er Ran, only 20,000 were equipped with firearms. The rest mostly wielded melee weapons. Even then, the firearms consisted mostly of old weapons, handguns, as well as some other antiques.

While it was easy for them to deal with most of the factions, it was a different story for Yue Zhong.

One soldier came reporting in, "My King! The envoy from the Manchurian Empire has come to seek an audience!!"

Hu-Er Ran's eyes brightened up, "Let him in!"

A young man strode in, wearing a suit, and looked smart, as he

kneeled on one knee, bowing deeply, "Fan Tian Ming from the Manchurian Empire greets the king! I pray for you to live long! Long live long live!"

Hu-Er Ran eyed the young man and spoke mildly, "You may rise!"

Fan Tian Ming stood up and looked at Hu-Er Ran, "Thank you, King! This time, the great Emperor Xuan Zhen had sent me here in hopes to ally with you, and eradicate Yue Zhong together."

His voice continued to ring out, "Yue Zhong is oppressive, violent and cruel. The moment he appeared, many of our people suffered under him. Many innocents have died at his hands. Together with Lie Ming Yi that butcher, their actions have been unbridled and cruel. If he's allowed to continue on his killing spree, the entire Central Plains will surely fall. Our great Emperor Xuan Zhen does not want this to happen, and hopes our forces can work together, forget our past enmity, and eradicate that demon!"

Most people would only see the bad side of others, yet ignore their own flaws. The Mongol Empire and Manchurian Empire had previously gone on similar violent sprees all around the Central Plains, bolstering their own forces, and enslaving the Hans. They had not felt any remorse for their actions, after all, it was what their ancestors did. The law of the jungle was that the strong preyed on the weak.

Yet now, when Yue Zhong did the same to them, they felt that he was evil and cruel.

Hu-Er Ran's face was expressionless, not allowing anyone to see through his thoughts, "Yue Zhong has 8 powerful assault helicopters in his hands. If they're not destroyed, it's hard for us to deal with them."

Fan Tian Ming laughed out confidently, "Great King, let us deal with his 8 helicopters. Please believe in our strength, we are definitely able to deal with them. The aerial side will be handled by us, while we'll leave the ground forces to you. It's only possible for

the invincible warriors of the Mongolian Empire to possibly wipe out Yue Zhong that beast!

Hu-Er Ran replied dryly, "Oh! I want to know how you will deal with those helicopters. Without certainty of victory, I will not send my troops out."

Fan Tian Ming seemed to hesitate for a while, before gritting his teeth and pulling out a tablet and opening it up, "Great King, this is what we will use to defeat Yue Zhong's helicopters."

Everybody's gaze fell unto the tablet inside the tent.

Only to discover, 12 Thunder Fighters sitting quietly on a large field. Behind the 12 Thunder Fighters, there were 12 other Eurocopters. A number of Manchurian troops were currently busying themselves together with some Europeans beside the powerful mechanical beasts.

Chapter 645: Pressure of the Army!

"24 assault helicopters!!"

Seeing the video, all the Mongolian generals sucked in a breath of cold air. A single assault helicopter was a powerful killing machine already. If a single faction could control just one, it could easily dominate its peers. Few factions could actually withstand the assault from a single assault helicopter.

The Manchurian Empire had a few as well, but they treated them as treasures, and would definitely not possess 24 of them.

After all, before the apocalypse, Mongolia was a country as well, and based on their public records, they did not have more than a 100 of them.

In the apocalyptic world where resources were scarce, it was shocking to see the Manchurian Empire in possession of 24 of them.

Hu-er Ran turned to fix his glare on Fan Tian Ming, with a changed expression and unconcealed shock, "How did you get these?!"

Fan Tian Ming laughed lightly in response, "Great King, this is a national secret. It's not convenient to say. However, you can be rest assured that after we have jointly eradicated Yue Zhong, my country is willing to give you 4 of them."

Hu-er Ran ignored his standing and immediately walked down, pointing to one of the Thunder Fighters, "Alright! However, i want 4 of those!"

He had understood the might and threat of the Thunder Fighters from the mouths of Amu Xidai and Bo-er Zi, and hoped to possess such an advanced equipment as well.

Fan Tian Ming took a look and immediately had an apologetic expression, "Great King, I'm sorry, if it's that, we can only give you

one!!"

The Thunder Fighters were made possible after the apocalypse, and had 3 times the might of ordinary assault helicopters. Under the same circumstances, a single Thunder Fighter could even take out 3 Eurocopters. Of course, 4 Eurocopters were enough to destroy a single Thunder Fighter.

Hu-er Ran had a resolute gaze, as his tone became solemn, "2!! After eradicating Yue Zhong, I want 2 of those! This time, I will even head out myself, and gather all of my forces to wipe Yue Zhong out!"

A look of delight flashed in Fan Tian Ming's eyes, "Great! That settles it then!"

After the Manchurian Empire had been defeated a few times, their elites had been reduced by a lot. Although they had decided to join the Kingdom of God, the forces that were deployed to the Central Plains weren't many, and could only provide the aerial support.

The only faction that had the largest land troops would be Hu-er Ran, as long as he was willing to provide elite soldiers, then the alliance between the both of them could well be enough to steamroll over every other faction.

Hu-er Ran's eyes flashed with a cruel look, "Good! But before then, we must first wipe out the Turks, otherwise, if we were to allow someone else to be the fisherman, it would be a joke."

Fan Tian Ming nodded in agreement, "That's true, then let us both first join hands to take out the Turks!"

Thus, the Mongolian Empire and Manchurian Empire ceased all fighting and joined hands to form a huge force.

As the 2 armies began to move out, they made their way towards the grounds of the Turk Empire.

One servant rushed into the golden tent of the Turk Empire, his

face pale, "My liege!! My liege!! It's bad!! The Mongols and Manchurians have come attacking!!"

Wu-er Tuotuo was currently naked, pressing himself against 2 beauties, furiously having pounding them. 20 other women of different body shapes and sizes with stunning looks were all naked as well, touching themselves and moaning enticingly.

The entire tent was filled with an atmosphere of lust and sex. After the Gold Wolf Riders had been defeated numerous times, their strength had been reduced by 60%, and even Wu-Er Tuo Tuo's most loyal aide Abudidama had died pitifully in the Ulan Mountain Range. It had a devastating effect on Wu-er Tuo Tuo, and since then, he hadn't been himself. Everyday, he had just indulged in his carnal desires in his tent, and led a life of wine and pleasure.

"You fool! You dare to disrupt my pleasure! Go to hell!!" It was right when Wu-er Tuo Tuo was feeling at a climax, and he was interrupted by such news. With a wave of his hands, a sharp disc soared out and sliced through the head of the servant.

The servant slumped to the ground, dead, with a look of shock and unwillingness in his eyes.

After killing that servant, he pulled out a small medicinal pill from a bottle and swallowed it, before shooting some agent into himself, as a look of ecstasy overcame him. He became even more drunk in his pleasure and bit down violent on a beauty's shoulders, tearing a huge chunk of meat from her.

As she bled, the girl gritted her teeth through the pain, while tears flowed down her cheeks, but she didn't dare to scream out.

"My Liege!!" The other pillar of the Turk Empire Dong-er Molei came striding in, and saw Wu-Er Tuo Tuo surrounded by those women, as well as the soldier who had lost his life, and shouted out, "My Liege!! The Mongolians and the Manchurians are attacking us right now, and the empire needs you! How could you

be playing with women now?! They can be put aside for later, as long as you lead us in defeating the Mongols and Manchurians, their women are there for you to play as well!! My Liege!! It's a critical situation for us, please get it together!!"

Wu-er Tuo Tuo continued to jack himself with drugs, immersing in a high. In his pleasure and muddled state, he roared out, "Scram!! This senior have not gotten a kick yet, Dong-er Molei, you damn bear, get lost!!"

Dong-er Molei kneeled down, aggrieved and begun to cry out, "My Liege!! Please get it together!! Please!! It is the moment of life and death for our empire, please come to your senses!! My Liege!!"

Dong-er Molei was of one mind to build a strong and independent Turk Empire. He knew that he was only capable of killing and nothing else. The rise of the Turk Empire would require Wu-er Tuo Tuo.

In truth, the whole empire had been built by Wu-er Tuo Tuo himself, Dong-er Molei had only been concerned with killing his enemies, and did not know anything else.

"Get lost!! Scram!! Scram!!" Wu-er Tuo Tuo was currently going insane and sent out numerous discs flying towards Dong-er Molei.

Dong-er Molei had been kneeling on the ground and hadn't been on guard against the person he respected the most. The discs shot past his neck, and his head flew through the air, rolling to one side in a shower of blood. Just like this, the strongest Evolver that had crossed swords with Yue Zhong died at the hands of his own leader.

With his death, the rest of the Turks felt their world crumble, as the generals all rose up and led their own forces away in different directions.

The Mongolians and Manchurians were long since prepared, and took the opportunity to chase down all of the forces of the Turk

Empire, wiping them out. At the same time, they gobbled up the resources and people, expanding their forces.

The Turk king Wu-er Tuo Tuo was also killed with a single hit by Ao Dou, and the Turk Empire was wiped off the face of the earth, just like that.

The allied forces of Manchuria and Mongolia were extremely relaxed, it was as though it was just an expedition for them, with lack of resistance from the enemy.

It was easy for them because Wu-er Tuo Tuo had already fallen. He had lost his will, lost his fighting spirit, and the entire Turk Empire that he painstakingly raised up was shattered.

After the powerful allied forces wiped out the Turk Empire, they rested for two days before turning around and made their way towards Qi Mu Town.

Cloud Town was a small town near Qi Mu Town, and it was an important location for Qi Mu Town. As long as it was defended well, it could repel many enemies from the front of Qi Mu Town.

As the first line of defense for Qi Mu Town, Yue Zhong had thus deployed an entire battalion to this town. At the same time, 2,000 survivors were working on the fortifications of the structures as well as traps, to prepare for the impending attack.

Suddenly, there was a cloud of dust in the distance, and the sentry that had been keeping guard up in a tree had a huge change in expression. He shouted into the walkie-talkie, "Enemy attack!! Enemy attack!!"

Without the help of satellites, Yue Zhong could only employ the traditional way of leaving talented sentries in different areas.

After obtaining that intel, the entire Cloud Town hurried in their actions, as soldiers got into position and readied their weapons, keeping the gazes on the horizon.

Li Guang stood on a high vantage point and saw the allied forces

in the distance. He muttered out with a billowing killing intent, "So you're finally here, Allied Forces? This time, I'll let you taste the might of the Victorious Troops!"

The soldiers stationed at Cloud Town were all soldiers of the Victorious Troops, and had undergone tough military training. Every single one of them was filled with battle intent, and the assault of the allied forces happen to be according to his wishes, The Manchurian and Mongolian Empires were afraid that Yue Zhong would set his sights far ahead. And since Yue Zhong wanted to eradicate them himself, but couldn't afford to dispatch people to find their central bases, he couldn't ask for more. It might be pressurizing to deal with their forces, but likewise, it was an opportunity to deal with them once and for all.

Chapter 646: The Slave Army Attacks!

Outside Cloud Town, many ditches had been dug and killing traps prepared and planted. There were high vantage points on either side of the town, which could be used to launch assaults from.

Hu-er Ran eyed the battlefield from afar and gave a solemn order, "Send the slaves to go fill up the ditches!"

The Mongolian general Agudo in charge of the slaves looked at the 3,000 of them, noting their deadpan expressions, and hollered, "You bunch of pigs, listen up!! Go fill up the ditches, as long as you do so, your families will receive benefits, ordinary slaves will become high-class slaves, while high-class slaves will be upgraded to ordinary citizens. This is the only chance for your families and yourselves to gain freedom and dignity! Charge for this senior!!"

Under his roar, a glint of hope flashed in the eyes of the slaves, as they hoisted bags of sand and rushed towards the ditches. Although Hu-er Ran was extremely cruel to them, it could be said that his words were worth their weight in gold. With Agudo's promise, they were filled with hope for the first time.

"Don't kill me!! I'm Han!!"

"Don't shoot!! I'm Han!!!"

"Please don't shoot, I'm Korean-Chinese!!"

"Don't shoot, I'm a Miao!!"

"Don't kill me, we are all fellow comrades!!"

"..."

Under the watchful gaze of 200 soldiers, the 3,000 slaves charged forth with desperation, crying as they made their way towards Cloud Town.

Making use of the commoners to attack cities, this was a vicious

tactic used in the past. If the enemy went soft and allowed the commoners to fill up the holes, then the Mongolian troops could charge forth. If the enemy hardened their hearts to kill the commoners, they would expend their bullets, and lower their own morale. It was truly a cold-hearted strategy.

"Scram!! Get out of here!! Leave now!!"

"Don't come over!! There're traps here!! Don't come any closer!!"

"..."

Seeing the 3,000 slaves approaching, the soldiers in Cloud Town began to shout frantically. They would rather engage in an all-out slaughter with the Mongolians than fire at their own people.

Hong!!

Following a loud explosion, a number of the slaves had stepped and triggered a landmine, which blasted them apart.

Another triggered a mechanism, which sent arrows shooting towards them. The dense rain of arrows fell upon dozens of slaves, causing them to fall and cry in agony.

All around Cloud Town, Yue Zhong's forces had planted landmines and traps. These were in fact meant for the Mongolian troops, but unfortunately, the slave army had triggered them.

"Ah!! I don't want to die!!" Seeing their fellow comrades falling to the explosions and traps, one of them wailed out while retreating. Under his lead, a few others began to back up as well.

"Defectors will be put to death!!" Behind, the Mongolian forces stepped forth to cut down any slave that retreated.

After the Mongolian forces killed over 30 slaves, the situation stabilized somewhat.

Li Guang ordered coldly, "Snipers! Kill their enforcement soldiers!"

Peng! Peng!

Following the sounds of gunshots, a number of the Mongolian soldiers fell down dead, with bullet holes in their heads.

Those enforcement soldiers were slowly picked off one by one by the elite snipers hiding in Cloud Town.

Under the threat of death, the soldiers that were initially maintaining their watch over the slaves began to fall apart, leaving behind the 30 corpses of their own comrades while fleeing.

The moment they were free of the threat of the enforcement troops, the 3,000 slaves began to retreat wildly.

Hu-er Ran watched the scene unfold with cold eyes and ordered, "They dare to retreat without orders, kill them all!"

Thus, bullets rained down from the allied forces, killing and injuring many slaves.

Agudo carried an assault rifle himself, firing wildly into the 3,000 slaves as he hollered, "You better fucking scram back! Go throw the sandbags into the trenches! Otherwise, we'll execute you!! Your families will also be termed as dogs and will be punished accordingly!!"

As the 3,000 survivors were fired at by the allied forces, many of them were already in pools of their own blood. The rest had no choice but to turn back towards the road to hell and charge.

Hu-er Ran did not care about the lives of the slaves, his eyes flashing coldly, "So they're going to employ their snipers so early on eh? Convey my orders! Snipers, attack!"

With his command, the elite snipers of the White Armor Army and Qie Xue Troops began to inch forward carefully and started to engage in a sniper crossfire with Yue Zhong's troops.

Peng! Peng!

The clear gunshots rang out loudly, although they weren't concentrated, but with each gunshot, there would be one or 2

snipers shot dead. It could be from Yue Zhong's troops as well as the allied forces.

The intense crossfire continued for a long while, before the allied forces realise their losses were piling up faster. Over 20 of their snipers had been taken out by the snipers from the Victorious Troops, whereas they had only killed 10 of the enemy.

The ex-KoG forces that Yue Zhong had successfully subjugated were mostly Judges, and had undergone the job change. Amongst the 1,700 of them, over 1,000 were snipers. They had all trained in sniping, and in the Victorious Troops, the total number of snipers were over 200.

The allied forces might have many snipers as well, but it was too little compared to Yue Zhong's troops. Furthermore, the snipers of the allied forces could not compare to those from the Victorious Troops. They were outclassed and outnumbered, and thus, they suffered greatly in the exchange.

As both sides were still firing intensely at one another, the remaining 800 slaves carried their sandbags and got closer to those dangerous trenches.

Li Guang watched the approaching slaves, and his expression turned ugly, "Open fire!!"

"Hurry escape! Don't get too close!!"

"Quickly!! Run!! We're going to fire!!"

"..."

The soldiers of the Victorious Troops inside Cloud Town began to shout helplessly as they opened fire, and their shots caused the slaves to stumble and fall.

The forces inside Cloud Town could not compare to the size of the allied forces, thus they could only rely on the fortifications, cover and traps.

If Li Guang's heart turned soft and allowed the slaves to use their own lives to disable the traps and fill up the trenches, then the allied forces would have an easier time.

The death toll of the Victorious Troops would then mount, and to them, it was a loss they could not afford.

One by one, the slaves fell in their blood, but there a few who managed to dump their sandbags into the trenches.

One of the slaves was smart, he saw that it was death on either side, so he darted to a corner and hid himself.

When the rest of the slaves saw that, they also began to seek cover. They weren't willing to give their lives for the allied forces, but for the sake of living on, they could only become cannon fodder, filling up the trenches and disabling the traps.

"Let the snipers come down." Hu-er Ran's face turned solemn as he spoke. The moment those slaves gave up, the snipers would lose their meaning. Furthermore, they were being suppressed heavily by the enemy, leaving casualties, which caused Hu-Er Ran and Xuan Zhen to feel the pinch.

Without the support of a novice village, every single sniper had to be cultivated and groomed, with painstaking efforts. Furthermore, they were useful against powerful experts.

As long as a top sniper could hide at a distance, he could easily distract a powerful Evolver, keeping him on guard. The power Evolver would only be able to exhibit 80% of their power then. Those high-level Evolvers might even be easily taken out by a sniper with a good hiding space.

"Zheli Mu, I want those hills conquered!" Hu-er Ran eyed the 2 vantage points on either side of CCloud Town and gave an order to Zheli Mu.

Hu-er Ran was extremely clear that it would be a huge bloodbath before they can take down Cloud Town. He wanted to find a way to

crush Yue Zhong's forces and firepower quickly and swiftly.

"Yes! My Liege!" Zheli Mu bowed and rushed out.

Hu-Er Ran looked at Xuan Zhen beside him and said, "Emperor Xuan Zhen, I'll leave the other hill to you."

This time, in order to take down Yue Zhong, Hu-er Ran and Xuan Zhen had bet all their forces. They were clear that with every passing day, Yue Zhong was growing stronger. If they were to lose today's battle, both Mongolia and Manchuria would become the losers, and many would become Yue Zhong's slaves.

Xuan Zhen swept a gaze towards Ao Dou," Ao Dou! Go bring some men and take down that hill!"

"Your servant obeys!!" Ao Dou kneeled on one knee, before leaving.

Zheli Mu and Ao Dou left, and the allied forces began to launch heavy artillery fire on the 2 hills.

Hong! Hong!

Following loud explosions, a number of heavy artillery landed on the 2 hills, blasting the entire area.

Chapter 647: Fight on the Hill!

The Mongolian Empire and Manchu Empire amassed an astounding amount of weaponry before the apocalypse. Armed with heavy artillery, they began to lay heavy fire on the two hills. The battlegrounds were filled with earth-shattering explosions amidst flying debris.

After 2 rounds of bombardment, the allied forces deployed 2 companies of their respective soldiers and charged towards the hills.

Under the constant heavy artillery fire, the hills were almost completely obliterated. They naturally assumed that the enemies would not be able to hold their defense position any longer.

"Charge!"

Just when the 2 companies were approaching the hills, soldiers from the Victorious Troops emerged from the tunnels, armed with rifles and started firing downwards at them with mad abandon. With this sudden assault, many soldiers of the alliance were caught unawares and killed.

"Get down!! Get down!!" The Mongol general that led the troops in shouted.

BANG!

A loud gunshot rang out, and the general fell down dead with a bullet in his head.

Snipers started wriggling out from the tunnels and began searching for strategic targets and aimed for headshots. The 4 companies of the alliance took cover and dispersed while the Ever Victorious troops continued with their relentless firing.

News of the failed attack soon reached Hu-er Ran. "tunnels! tunnels indeed! Yue Zhong is a terrifying character ",he said, as his expression darkened.

Tunnels had proven to be highly effective against cannons. During the Korean War, the Volunteer Army of North Korea made use of tunnels to defend themselves against the United States Army's ferocious bombings.

Hu-er Ran knew deep down in his heart that this would be his toughest battle since he started his military career, after hearing that both the hilltops were covered with tunnels.

"General! The firepower of the enemy is too strong, our squads cannot hold on for long! Please send for reinforcements!!"

"General!! The enemy is too fierce! 2 of my squads have already been wiped out, please send help!!"

"..."

The allied forces had not attacked the 2 hills for long, before they began to request for help.

The soldiers defending the hilltops were the elite Judges that Yue Zhong had absorbed from the Kingdom of God. They had all undergone job change to be soldiers above Level 20. Not only was their personal combat strength higher than ordinary humans, every one of them were strong with weapons. If any of them were placed in a special force before the apocalypse, they would be definitely the best of the best. While the allied forces also consist of powerful elites, against the stronger elites of Yue Zhong, they were suppressed until they could not even stick their heads out.

Zheli Mu looked at the hilltop coldly, and ordered, "Retreat!"

The 2 companies quickly retreated from the hilltop like floodwater.

Yu Wen Ying looked at the allied forces withdrawing and his eyes flashed brightly, ordering, "Retreat to the tunnels!"

The soldiers then scurried back into the tunnels.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Just after they entered the tunnels, the powerful artillery fire bombarded the hill again, intent on obliterating everything.

Under that powerful fire, a few tunnels collapsed, killing 3 of the elite soldiers.

After a volley of heavy fire, Zheli Mu then deployed another 2 battalions of infantry soldiers towards the hills, for a second wave of attack.

He knew that the soldiers situated on the hilltop weren't many, hence he made the vicious decision to send 2 battalions to flush out the entire place.

The 2 battalions numbered almost 800, once they stormed in, the entire hill seemed to be crawling with ants.

"Seeking artillery fire!! Seeking artillery fire!! Coordinates xx, xxx." Yu Wen Ying laid prone at the entrance of a tunnel and observed the Mongolian troops, barking into a walkie-talkie.

Hong! Hong!

From afar, the artillery forces of the Victorious Troops began launching their heavy fire, as round after round bombarded the area and blasted everything on the surface.

The terrifying artillery fire caused many of the Mongolian soldiers to be blasted apart, there was even a single 155mm round that landed, causing half a platoon of soldiers to be obliterated.

Under that relentless assault, the 2 battalions of soldiers suffered greatly, many dead and many more injured. Their morale plunged as they quickly sought to retreat from the hill.

"Damn beasts!!" Having sent 2 battalions of over 800 Mongolian soldiers, but losing over half of them to the artillery, with barely 300 of them making it back, Zheli Mu was beyond infuriated.

These Mongol soldiers were the elite of the elites, and possessed strong fighting wills among the Mongolian forces. Each battle they

emerged victorious from added to their achievements and they were treasured greatly. Losing 500 of them at one go was a huge blow to the Mongol Empire. It wasn't easy training up a new batch of soldiers, then forging them through battles to reach the same level as these veterans.

Helpless, Zheli Mu had to hesitate and rethink his strategy. In the end, he sent out 2 platoons to launch a careful attack on the hilltop.

After the apocalypse, many factories were abandoned, and the amount of ammunition from each faction was limited. Each round was precious. Zheli Mu was helpless, and could only make use of as little soldiers as he could to attack the hill. He was betting that the Victorious Troops would not spam their artillery rounds so haphazardly.

It was as Zheli Mu expected, the 2 companies did not meet any artillery. However, the moment they charged up the hill, they were faced with the Judged led by Yu Wen Ying as both sides engaged in a merciless gunfight.

One by one, the Mongolian squads would try to storm up the hill, but they were quickly forced to retreat. Most of them were the elites of the Mongolian Empire, but compared to Yu Wen Ying and the ex-KoG forces, they were still far off. Furthermore, Yu Wen Ying and his troops possessed the advantage of high ground, thus, it was practically suicide for the Mongolian troops.

Hu-er Ran's face was extremely dark as he stood in the camp. The assault had been going on for the entire morning, without any progress, and the death toll of the allied forces had already reached a thousand people. It was enough to turn his expression ugly. "This Yue Zhong actually managed to make use of these 2 hills to give us so much trouble, he truly is a terrifying person. We can't let him expand his power any longer, otherwise we'll all die!"

His line of thinking was correct, after all, Yue Zhong had gained

the Evolving Temple and was constantly churning out elite soldiers. As long as he had enough time, he could even make use of the forces from Guang Xi and Hunan to come to the Central Plains in the Sky Fortress.

It was precisely due to this, that Yue Zhong was quietly training his troops, and only sent Lie Ming Yi out on his rampage, destroying the minor camps of the Mongolian and Manchurian Empire. He needed time to expand.

However, Hu-er Ran and Xuan Zhen were not just simple warlords, and were even willing to let go of their past enmity to join hands and deal with Yue Zhong.

Hu-er Ran looked at the 2 hills and shouted viciously, "Convey my orders! I want Zheli Mu to take down that hill by today! He has over 10,000 of my brave warriors, and he can't even take down a simple hill? What the fuck is this? If he doesn't accomplish this, he can scam out of my sight!"

When Zheli Mu heard it, his eyes turned bloodshot, and quickly summoned over a 100 Enhancers of the Qie Xue troops, as well as other Enhancers of over Level 20, "Our Mongolian Empire is the strongest country in the world, for the sake of our country, charge!!! Take down this location, everyone will be promoted by 3 ranks, with 10 beauties as gifts and a 100 sheep and cows!!"

"Kill!! Kill!! Kill!!"

The Mongolians began to roar out in excitement.

Zheli Mu roared out and brought the 300 of them as they charged up the hill.

Yu Wen Ying was hiding in one tunnel and saw the Mongolian forces rushing towards them. They began to fire wildly again.

Air Barriers, Stone Shields, Bone Spears, these were all abilities of the high-level Enhancers. There were even some high-level Evolvers among them that could employ strange abilities to charge

through the bullets without being injured. Their tactic was to have 5 of them take on 1 of Yue Zhong's forces.

Yu Wen Ying and his troops realised their bullets were being defended against, it was hard to kill them off when their reaction was fast.

"An Enhancer Troop? Call for an artillery strike! Calling for artillery! Coordinates xx,xxx." Yu Wen Ying watched as the Mongolian forces employed their abilities and roared into his walkie-talkie.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

The dense artillery fire rained down on the hilltop again.

The barriers made up of air were shattered, and 5 Qie Xue soldiers taking cover beneath it were instantly blasted apart. Another round landed on a stone shield, disintegrating with a loud blast, taking out the soldier under it as well. There were multiple holes on the hill that were half the size of a football field. One round also landed on the bone-users, causing the Strength Evolver to be swallowed in the blast radius.

In the face of the heavy artillery fire, the Qie Xue soldiers could not even defend themselves. As long as they were struck, they would be blasted to pieces.

"Charge!! Only by charging up, we will survive!!" Amidst the artillery fire, Zheli Mu roared out as he swung his silver cleaver madly, making his way up the hill.

Chapter 648: Night Raid on the Manchu Camp!

The surviving members of the Qie Xue Army and Mongol Army were led by Zheli Mu towards the peak of the hill amidst the artillery fire.

It was the safest there, since the Victorious Troops would not rain artillery on their own people.

As a peak Evolver, Zheli Mu's speed was terrifying when he went all out. He was like a gust of wind that evaded the countless bullets as he reached one of the tunnels at the top of the hill. With a flash of his cleaver, 2 elite soldiers were slaughtered.

Having killed those 2 elites, Zheli Mu leaped into the tunnel, and began to hunt down the other elite soldiers inside. He was like a fierce killing god, slaughtering any soldier he came across. No one was a match for him.

Zheli Mu had been renowned as a fierce general within the Mongolian troops. Many camps and factions that he laid siege on could not withstand his might, and he had even personally taken out multiple Evolvers in those factions. As the Mongolian Empire grew and expanded, he had rarely stepped out to engage in slaughter at the front lines. However, with Hu-er Ran's orders, he had no choice but to charge, in order to take down the hill in front of them.

Yu Wen Ying heard the screams and wails of the soldiers, his own eyes also flashing with bloodlust as he pressed a detonator in his hands, "Damn bastard! Go to hell!!"

Hong! Hong!

Following a loud explosion that seemed to shake the earth, the tunnel that Zheli Mu charged into began to blow up, in an instant, he was blasted to pieces and buried within the tunnel.

Yue Zhong knew the problems of dealing with those peak level Evolvers. One such expert could easily kill 2 elite soldiers. Only by using a large amount of explosives, would a peak Evolver be killed. Hence, on the front lines, there had been many explosives prepared beforehand, to deal with those Evolvers specifically.

"General Zheli Mu is dead!!"

"How did it become like this?! Zheli Mu is dead!!"

"..."

The elites of the Qie Xue troops as well as the Mongolian troops had reached near the top of the hill, and when they saw the explosion consuming Zheli Mu, their faces turned ashen. The fighting spirit crumbled instantly, as they retreated quickly.

As they fled, from time to time, some of their numbers would be picked off by the snipers hidden on top of the hill, causing them to flee faster.

Yu Wen Ying watched them retreat and heaved a sigh of relief. The elites of the allied forces were truly not easy to deal with. Without the support of the heavy artillery, their hill might have been taken by the enemy. However, because of the timely artillery strike, they had miraculously retained control over the hill. It was at a price of 21 of their brothers.

When Hu-er Ran heard news of Zheli Mu's death, his face fell as he questioned, "What?! Zheli Mu is dead? Are you certain?!"

One soldier who had a bandage over one of his eyes, having been blinded in the battle earlier, knelt on the ground as he teared up, "Great King, I saw it personally! Great King, you must seek vengeance for General Zheli Mu!!"

Hu-er Ran's face was pale, as he waved his hands to dismiss the soldiers, "You may go!"

Zheli Mu was one of the 4 generals under Hu-er Ran that had followed him on all his conquests from the beginning, and he

actually died at this place, giving him a bad feeling.

He roared out loud, "Yue Zhong! I'll definitely not let you off! I will wipe you off the face of earth and use your head as offering to Zheli Mu's soul!!"

The battle continued fervently, as the allied forces continued to send elites up.

The sides fought their hearts out for the location point.

The hills became a cruel meat grinder, claiming the lives of the allied forces. At the same time, many of the elites of the Victorious Troops were buried in the tunnels forever.

The intense battle continued for an entire day, with over a thousand more deaths from the allied forces, as for the Victorious Troops, they lost about 60 men, with 40 heavily injured.

The battle lasted till evening, before the allied forces finally retreated to their camps.

Inside the camp, Hu-er Ran frowned and asked anxiously, "Does anyone have any suggestions?"

The 2 hills had already cost them a thousand soldiers, and Hu-er Ran was starting to become more wary of Yue Zhong.

He had led over 60,000 soldiers together with 10,000 of the Manchurian troops, a total of 70,000 people. He had thought that he could crush Yue Zhong's power as easily as taking a sweet from a baby. However, they were already impeded at Cloud Town, and he couldn't help but feel a rising sense of trepidation.

70,000 soldiers required a large amount of food. The allied forces had already deployed a large number of slaves and citizens to transport food to the battlefield. However, they definitely could not drag this on for too long, otherwise, their rations would deplete quickly.

Ao Dou spoke up, "The enemy is able to maintain their position

because of the artillery support from behind. I feel, we should scatter our forces, and attack them from 3 different angles, so that their artillery support cannot focus fire. This is the only way to obtain victory."

Amu Xidai replied solemnly, "That's right! I agree with Ao Dou, today we have been too focused on getting the hills, and had not managed to send any men up on the hills, that is why we can't win them."

Although they had 70,000 soldiers, there was only a limited number they could place up on the hill. If they sent too many, then the artillery from the Victorious Troops would go trigger happy, and blast the soldiers on top to death. It was because of this that Yu Wen Ying and the rest were confident in defending their positions.

Otherwise, if all 3,000 were to flush out the entire hill, their numbers were definitely enough to tear the forces of Yu Wen Ying into pieces.

Bo-Er Zi replied, "I feel that we should employ the advantage of numbers and attack multiple positions at once, that way, tomorrow, we're sure to obtain Cloud Town.

The rest of the generals also gave their own suggestions. They all tried to bank on the fact of them having superior numbers. Furthermore, with the 24 assault helicopters waiting behind, they were naturally filled with confidence in dealing with Yue Zhong.

As the meeting went on for a while, by the time it ended, the generals all retreated back to their own quarters to rest for the night, in preparation for the battle the next day.

In the dark of the night, a 1,000-strong army of riders appeared in the distance.

Yue Zhong eyed the huge campsite containing the allied forces, his eyes flashing with a strange glint, "70,000-strong, you guys sure gave me face. You actually deployed so many to attack me.

That's fine by me, at least now I can deal with the whole lot of you, otherwise, it'll be troublesome to go search for you all."

Yue Zhong then pointed to the campsite coldly, "Bi Lù, eradicate them all. Wipe out anything that resists and anything that moves!"

"Yes! Master!!" Bi Lù replied warmly, waving her hands, and a powerful Spirit wave enveloped all the treants nearby.

There were a thousand treants, 10 Type 3 Treants, 6 high-level Treants, and they began to charge towards the campsite.

Borrowing the cover of the night, the army of treants got close to the campsite.

The 10 Type 3 Treants took the vanguard position, with a speed that reached the sound barrier, tearing apart all the defences, steel barbed wires, obstructions, and charged right into the camp.

"What's that?" One soldier found his vision turning blur up on the watchtower, when suddenly, the Type 3 Treant appeared right in front of him, and with a flash, his brain was torn apart by the claws of the treant.

A Type 3 Mutant Beast was a terrifying existence, and while the combat ability of the 3 Type 3 Treants could not compare to Lightning, and had no innate abilities, their combat strength was something else. The moment they charged through the group of people, they easily ripped the heads of the soldiers apart.

The moment the 10 Type 3 Treants charged into the campsite, they began to slaughter the soldiers, the moment any soldier revealed their face, they were instantly decapitated.

The 6 high-level Treants were like tanks that steamrolled through the camp, their hands smashing through the defences easily, and every fist of theirs could pummel any resistance into a pulp.

A large number of the low-level Treants charged through the holes in the camp made by the high-level Treants, and poured into

the camp like a flood.

"Kill!!" Yue Zhong rode on one Black Scaled Stallion, hugging Yin Shuang close to him, leading a thousand elites right into the camp.

Faced with the sudden night raid, the entire camp was plunged into chaos, and the soldiers could not locate their commanders, nor the other way round, and whenever a soldier popped out from a tent, they would have their neck twisted.

There were over 10,000 soldiers in the Manchu camp, but the true elites only numbered about 3,000. The rest were just reinforcements.

Most of these fresh soldiers had never been forged through the flames of battle, and their equipment was lacking. Many of them even used melee weapons. When faced with such a sudden attack, they were plunged into chaos, and they began to scream around like headless chickens, before being torn apart by the treants or slaughtered by the soldiers under Yue Zhong.

Chapter 649: Defeating the Manchu Troops!

The entire Manchu camp was thrown into chaos, at this time, Ao Dou leaped up, destroying the tent he was sleeping in as he appeared on the roof. With an resounding roar, he howled, "I'm Ao Dou! Everyone, stop panicking! Gather on me!"

Ao Dou was like god-like existence in Manchuria, and his position was only slightly behind the beloved emperor Aisin Gioro Xuan Zhen.

Hearing his call, all the soldiers regained their composure and quickly made their way towards him.

"No good! Like this, it will get more troublesome!" Yue Zhong looked at Ao Dou and furrowed his brows. He pointed to him and told Yin Shuang, "Yin Shuang! Help me kill that person!"

In this night raid, Yue Zhong had invested plenty, and he wanted to at least cause the breakdown of the Manchu troops. If he could not, then with the combined might of the allied forces would cause him problems in the battle tomorrow.

"Got it, Father! I'll go kill that baddie, you must reward me later oh!" Yin Shuang smiled sweetly at Yue Zhong, and with a gust of wind, she disappeared from his embrace, charging for Ao Dou.

Yin Shuang charged at Ao Dou, her looks exquisite, however, every soldier of Yue Zhong knew of this terrifying loli. One by one, many of the Manchurian soldiers had their brains exploding. They were all killed by Yin Shuang, revealing her terrifying physical power.

If it was a comparison in close combat, Yue Zhong knew he wasn't her match. This loli that came out of that Mutant Infected Womb was truly overpowered, and no one under Yue Zhong could even hope to stand against her.

"Right on time!!" Ao Dou roared in rage, activating his Battle

Blood Dou Qi, as a blood qi covered his body, raising his constitution. He could now catch Yin Shuang's movements, albeit forcefully, and sent a terrifying fist that whistled through the air at Yin Shuang.

Yin Shuang had no expression on her face, as she sent a fist to meet his.

Both fists clashed, as a powerful shockwave blasted outwards. Ao Dou's entire right arm was shattered by Yin Shuang's strength, exploding in a cloud of blood and meat. Although he had channeled his Blood Dou Qi, and enhanced his constitution, he could not withstand Yin Shuang's might. He had already channeled his Blood Dou Qi together with his Second Order Berserker's Strength, and yet, he still could not take on Yin Shuang's fist.

After destroying Ao Dou's fist, Yin Shuang's left fist followed up with a whistling sound, landing on Ao Dou's head like a shooting star.

With a loud blast, Ao Dou's was blasted by that blow.

In the dark of the night, Yin Shuang's silver hair as well as her expressionless face gave off a feeling of an underaged goddess.

"Sir Ao Dou is dead!!"

"Fucking beast!!!"

"Everybody, charge!! Kill her to avenge Sir Ao Dou!!"

"..."

The 100 personal guards of Ao Dou gathered closer, each of them his loyal subordinates. The moment they saw him killed by Yin Shuang, their expressions turned to one of anguish and grief, as they charged at her mindlessly. However, it was in vain.

"All of Father's enemies must die!!" Yin Shuang eyed those incoming guards and her face flashed with a bright smile, before

she rushed at them and unleashed a massacre.

Before they could react in time, their heads were blasted apart one by one by the specter-like Yin Shuang.

The rest of the soldiers began to shout, "Ao Dou is dead, everyone, flee!!"

"Sir Ao Dou is dead!!"

"Ao Dou is dead!! No!!!!"

"..."

The news of Ao Dou's death quickly spread like wildfire amongst his troops, and the moment they heard it, they lost all their fighting spirit and quickly fled.

"Damn bastards!! They actually killed Ao Dou!!" Xuan Zhen was hidden in a corner, when he saw Ao Dou killed, he was full of rage and fear.

Right now, it was an atmosphere of heightened fear, if Xuan Zhen came forth and called for the troops to gather on him, they might still have a fighting chance. However, he was extremely clear, if he stood forth now, Yue Zhong would gather all his elites to turn him into minced paste.

Xuan Zhen had only about 30 Qie Xue troops as his guards right now, and although they were all elite Evolvers, he didn't have much confidence they could stand up to Yue Zhong's troops.

One of them turned to ask Xuan Zhen, "My Liege, what do we do now?"

Xuan Zhen gritted his teeth and responded sullenly, "Retreat! Towards Hu-er Ran, we might stand a chance to rise again."

After making up his mind, he led the personal guards of his, as well as the hundreds of scattered soldiers towards the Mongolian campsite.

Yue Zhong led his troops all around the campsite, executing any

Manchurian soldier they saw. They suddenly saw about 40 westerners heading towards a corner. His eyes flashed coldly as they chased after them.

"Ah! Those are Thunder Fighters!! They actually obtained such treasures!"

Yue Zhong quickly caught up to them, and saw the 12 Thunder Fighters and 12 Eurocopters sitting quietly on a field, as well as the western elite soldiers rushing for those 24 metal behemoths.

"Great!! Great!! These are all mine!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with excitement and he quickly leaped down from his Black Scaled Stallion and activated his Shadow Steps, turning into a shadow that flitted towards the 24 assault helicopters.

While rushing there, he fired his .05 submachine gun at the western soldiers, and they fell one by one.

However, 8 of them managed to get into 4 Thunder Fighters, and they swiftly started up the Thunder Fighters. As long as they got it up into sky, they could shake Yue Zhong off.

=

With a flash of his body, Yue Zhong appeared beside the 4 Thunder Fighters and activated his Art of Fear, as a powerful Spirit attack enveloped the Thunder Fighters, sending the western soldiers into nightmares.

Under the terrifying hallucinations, they all suffered heart attacks from the terror of their own nightmares, and slumped dead on the controls.

After wiping out the team of 40 western soldiers, he quickly gave an order to his subordinates, "Men! Quickly move these 24 helicopters away!!"

A number of his subordinates arrived, and transported the 24 assault helicopters away, together with large amount of ammunition.

Having struck at the heart of the Manchu campsite, Yue Zhong quickly led the troops to survey the Mongolian campsite.

By now, the Mongolian campsite was already on full alert, and many of the soldiers had returned to their sentry points, eyeing Yue Zhong's troops hungrily.

Yue Zhong eyed them for a moment, before giving the order, "Retreat!"

By now, the Mongolian campsite had already made their preparations, if Yue Zhong insisted on charging at them, there was only the option of storming the front. Even if Yue Zhong possessed the advantage of the night, to take down a 60,000-strong army, his forces would have to pay a hefty price.

Yue Zhong did not want his subordinates to die for nothing.

Under Yue Zhong's order, the treant army as well as the elite soldiers began to retreat, leaving behind a huge patch of flames in place of the Manchu camp.

Xuan Zhen came up to Hu-er Ran and pleaded, "Great Khan, please help me with my revenge!"

Hu-er Ran watched the burning Manchu camp, his face turning ugly. He had never expected Yue Zhong to preemptively launch a night raid, crushing the Manchu forces. They were a force of over 10,000, with Ao Dou as their general, and yet, they had been defeated at Yue Zhong's hands. He was now full of caution against Yue Zhong.

Hu-er Ran's face suddenly fell as he thought of something, "What about the helicopters in your camp?!"

Xuan Zhen's face turned ugly as well, "Not too sure. I think they must have landed in Yue Zhong's hands."

Hu-er Ran's face fell as he cursed, "Fucking idiot!! You actually allowed them to get those precious helicopters?! Do you have a pig brain?!"

Yue Zhong already had possession of 8 Thunder Fighters, and he was terrifying enough. Now that he got his hands on another 12, in addition, another 12 Eurocopters, Hu-er Ran did not dare think how any faction could stand up to Yue Zhong.

When Xuan Zhen heard Hu-er Ran's curse, his face turned ugly, but he could not not refute, and he did not dare anger Hu-er Ran any further.

If he decided to call off the cooperation and kill Xuan Zhen, there was nothing he could do.

Amu Xidai came in front of Hu-er Ran and asked seriously, "Great Khan! What do we do now?"

All the Mongolian generals turned to look at Hu-er Ran, they were all clear that it was a dire situation now.

With 32 assault helicopters, Yue Zhong had become an existence they could not deal with. Even if they charged forth with all their strength, at most, they could bring down a few, but the rest would destroy their tanks, artillery as well as devastate their infantry.

Hu-er Ran eyed Cloud Town in the distance, as well as Qi Mu Town behind it. Although he still had his 60,000-strong force, he knew that it was an impossible task to defeat Yue Zhong now.

Being a warlord, since he was clear on the impossibility, he decided to call off the attack resolutely, "Retreat!! All forces are to retreat immediately!! Duoqi Muge! Take 3,000 riders to cover us, make sure to cover our retreat!!"

Chapter 650: The Mongolian Army Retreats

With the cover of the night, the 60,000-strong army of the Mongolian Empire began to retreat.

Hu-er Ran was extremely certain that when dawn comes, Yue Zhong would lead his troops together with the 36 assault helicopters to attack his forces. At that time, his main force would definitely be defeated, and there would not be a single faction that could stand up to Yue Zhong's expansion then.

"They actually retreated! Seems like this Mongolian King isn't stupid." In the night, Yue Zhong rode on a Black Scaled Stallion, while looking coldly at the retreating Mongolian Army and thought quietly.

With the help of the darkness, the allied forces' combat abilities were largely limited. Yue Zhong's troops were also not spared from it, and the only people not affected by the dark was Yue Zhong, Yin Shuang, Tenpyo Saka and Bi Lǔ, as well as a few other Evolvers and the treants.

"Attack!! Kill them all!!" Yue Zhong then gave the cold order, before rushing towards the 3,000 forces of Duoqi Muge.

"Yes!" Bi Lǔ waved her hands as her thoughts spread out, enveloping the treants, and their eyes flashed and became bloodshot, before charging towards the 3,000 riders of Duoqi Muge.

Yue Zhong himself carried Yin Shuang with him as he rode towards the 3,000 soldiers. He had the combat strength to wipe out an entire battalion by himself.

Duoqi Muge noticed the army of treants and bellowed in rage while pointing at them, shouting orders to the 3,000 riders behind him, "For the Mongolian Empire, for the Heavenly Khagan! For our brothers and sisters, everybody, CHARGE!!!"

The treants weren't very large, and many were knocked in the air by the stampede of horses, before being pulverized into meat paste by the riders behind.

The 3,000 riders charged on with an acceptance of their death and managed to slice through a large number of treants, killing them.

At this time, the 6 monstrous treants of about 8m stood forwards and blocked the path of the riders. The riders slammed into the bodies of the high-level Treants and many died on impact. The treants slapped out with their huge hands, flattening dozens of riders into meat paste.

The riders in front who had no time to stop smashed into the treants, as though committing suicide by slamming into large boulders. The 10 Type 3 Treants were also ferocious beyond comparison, striking out at the galloping horses, blasting apart the Black Stallions, before grabbing the riders and tearing their hearts out to gobble.

Their charge was forcefully stopped by the high-level Treants, and the 3,000 riders were immediately immersed in a slaughter by the treants. In the dark night, their vision was limited, and their reactions were greatly inhibited. The treants were not only unaffected, some of them were even Level 30 existences, and were all extremely agile. They were like monkeys that weaved in and out, tearing out the hearts of the riders while cutting off their heads. It was truly a bloody scene.

"Go to hell!! Freaks!! Go and die!!" Duoqi Muge was a fierce Evolver in his own right, and he waved his huge blade that slashed out with multiple blade beams. His Agility was 15 times that of a normal person, and when he slashed out with his maximum strength, the speed of the blade beams exceeded the sound barrier. Under those tyrannical strikes, many treants were ripped to shreds.

Just as he was slaughtering the treants wildly, he suddenly felt an intense sense of danger, and just when he felt it, an odachi appeared in the dark, slicing his neck.

His head rolled from his neck to the ground, with his eyes still wide open in disbelief. He did not expect that he would die like that at the hands of an assassin.

The moment Duoqi Muge died, the remaining 2,000 riders began to disperse in fear, having lost their will to fight. They abandoned their weapons and horses and tried to flee in different directions.

"Leave 300 treants behind to finish up here! The rest, follow me!!" Yue Zhong saw that things were almost done here, and quickly gave an order to Bi Lù.

She nodded and waved, sending out her brainwaves, and 500 low-level Treants continued to chase after the scattered Mongolian riders, while the rest joined the 6 tank-like high-level Treants as they followed Yue Zhong towards Hu-er Ran's main force.

The melee weapon-wielding Mongolian troops were at a disadvantage in modern warfare. Most of them were just local muscled that knew shepherding prior to the apocalypse. With a little training, they could become decent riders, but if they died, Hu-er Ran didn't feel particularly bad. Yue Zhong wanted to destroy Hu-er Ran's weapons and rations.

The remaining 57,000 troops were retreating, but due to the darkness of the night, their speed was impeded. This was because they had plenty of rations, artillery ammunition, weapons and other resources.

Other than that, there were about 30,000 slaves other than the army, and they were utilized to move the resources as well as other tools and equipment for maintenance and menial tasks. If needed, they could also be deployed as cannon fodder, using their lives to set up traps and trenches.

The 80,000-over people formed a long line of a few miles as they traveled.

8 thousand-strong troops were supervising the traveling. Hu-er Ran had specially deployed them to prevent Yue Zhong from launching any sneak attacks.

"Kill!!" Yue Zhong led the treant army and quickly caught up with Hu-er Ran's troops. He observed the long procession carefully and immediately called for an attack on the tail-end.

The end portion of the procession was made up of mostly slaves, with only a few hundred Mongolian soldiers were supervising them cruelly. The moment those slaves made any strange moves, the Mongolian soldiers would execute them without a second word.

The Type 3 Treants were the fastest as they quickly charged through the end part of the procession, grabbing the heads of the Mongolians soldiers and ripping them off.

"Enemy attack!! Enemy attack!!"

Soon, panicked screams and shouts erupted.

Seeing the soldiers being killed, the slaves of other races took the opportunity to explode out, either charging and killing the distracted Mongolian soldiers, or making use of the night to flee.

The Mongolians were rough with the slaves, and no one was willing to be their slaves. Although it was dangerous out in the plains, at least there was a chance of freedom.

Yue Zhong watched as the end-portion of the procession descended into chaos, and got the treants to withdraw. Only a small odachi could be seen flashing out from time to time, killing the Mongolian soldiers instantly. When those soldiers died, the weapons in their hands were immediately grabbed by the slaves, and they would use these weapons to wreak havoc and rain vengeance upon the other soldiers in their fury and madness.

The Mongolians soldiers were being slaughtered with every passing second, and there were more slaves joining in on the massacre. It was like a chain reaction, causing more of the procession to become chaotic.

4 of the supervising troops that were escorting on the sides quickly charged backward like the wind.

"Wipe them out!!" Yue Zhong pointed to one of the thousand-strong army, as he rode his Black Scaled Stallion right at them.

All the treants followed suit and charged for the escort riders.

Yin Shuang was still the fastest, the moment she leaped from Yue Zhong's arms, she turned into a gust of wind that blew right into the midst of the riders. She swung out with her pale fists, and numerous riders had their heads exploded from the impact.

Following up was the 10 Type 3 Treants, that could tear apart the Black Scaled Stallions with a single claw strike, and they dug out the hearts from the riders in cruel fashion.

The 6 high-level Treants also charged through like tanks, every swipe of their hands flattening dozens of riders into meat paste.

In a single second, the leader of the thousand riders had his heart ripped out by one Type 3 Treant after it blasted the Black Scaled Stallion he was riding on.

After losing their leader, the rest of the riders soon fell into confusion and panic amidst the attacks from the Type 3 Treants and 6 high-level Treants.

Yue Zhong's forces had decimated this escort unit when 3 entire units of riders charged right for Yue Zhong from different directions. They were bravely launching an attack at Yue Zhong's units.

The 3 other units of riders charged through the group of treants, making use of their momentum to kill a number of them. However, faced with the aggressive assault of the 6 high-level

Treants as well as the 10 Type 3 Treants, their core members were quickly mutilated and torn apart, and the rest were scattered.

The 6 high-level treants were basically invincible in close combat, and the bravest of warriors could charge all they wanted, but it was committing suicide.

Only cannons and heavy artillery could possibly deal damage to them. Other methods might include incendiary bombs, anti-tank missiles, tank cannons, and other guided missiles.

Other than those heavy weapons, normal weapons could not even hurt them the slightest bit. They were a terrifying force in Yue Zhong's hands, and for the sake of crushing the Mongolian forces, Yue Zhong had deployed almost all of them. The moment they appeared on the battlefield, their might was apparent for all to see.

Having defeated the 4,000 riders, Yue Zhong led the treants on a massacre against the remaining fleeing members, not allowing them to regroup or reorganize.

One general rushed hastily beside Hu-er Ran and kneeled down, his voice urgent, "Great Khan!! Great Khan!! Yue Zhong that mad dog has chased up, and he's commanding a troop of terrifying monsters as they slaughter our backend. The slaves behind have also revolted! How should I proceed, please advise, Great Khan!"

Chapter 651: Assault throughout the Night!

Hu-er Ran became furious as he exploded, "WHAT?! HE CHASED UP?! Where is Duoqi Muge?! What the hell is he doing?!"

As he raged, one general came up and kneeled in front of him, "Great Khan!! Gu Tuo, Fei Nan De, A-duo Busi, Dong Dong Er-Mo have all gone to attack Yue Zhong and his strange army. They have all sacrificed themselves and their subordinates are being slaughtered by that demon Yue Zhong now! Please instruct us, Great Khan!"

Hu-er Ran's face fell as his voice became a whisper, "What... Gu Tuo and the rest are all Evolvers, and each of them has a thousand subordinates, how could they have already died?! How is this possible?"

Gu Tuo and the rest were all Evolvers, together with their 4,000 subordinates, they could even kill a peak Evolver. Such a terrifying army was actually wiped out in such a short time, this caused Hu-er Ran to be in disbelief.

In fact, all Yue Zhong did was focus on defeating Duoqi Muge, Gu Tuo as well as the other generals. He didn't exactly wipe them out yet.

Chasing after all 7,000 riders would take up too much time with the limited treants on hand. Of course, melee combat was the swiftest and most intense, that was how Yue Zhong could easily take them on. If he was up against a modern army, then it would be a case where he might even lose hundreds on his own side.

Another general came up to Hu-er Ran and said, "Great Khan! The chaos is catching up and spreading towards our main force, please give us instructions!!"

The rebelling slaves were not suppressed in time, and the chaos and violence were mounting. Over 10,000 of them had been freed,

and they were all wreaking havoc and venting their fury, killing hundreds of Mongol soldiers.

Those experts who tried to rush in to quell the chaos were quickly taken out by a small odachi flashing out in the darkness.

Tenpyo Saka was already an assassin when she was working for Takama-ga-hara. When she came under Yue Zhong, she also took the Ou Ming Ver 1 Evolving Liquid, gaining the Agility Solidification to its Second Order stage. Now, chaos was the best environment for her, as she took to it like fish to water, and dispatched multiple soldiers that tried to provide reinforcements with ease.

Each time Tenpyo Saka made a move, even the strongest Evolver of the Takama-ga-hara had to be wary. Not to mention the Mongolian soldiers, who were far beneath her level of strength. She could easily take out an Enhancer or commander without noise and without a hint of her trace, causing even more pandemonium. The chaos from the rebelling slaves thus got worse and it became even harder to defend against Tenpyo Saka.

Hu-er Ran lived up to his name as a warlord of the Central Plains. He quickly made a decision, "This time, I messed up! Amu Xidai, go lead the Blood Eagle Riders to suppress the chaos, you're free to disregard their lives. Bo-er Zi, you take the Grey Wolf Riders to handle the back, focus your troops on camping and escorting, don't engage if you don't have to. You will defend till day time and then scatter. Report back to the Huangjin Clan when you're out."

Both the Blood Eagle Riders and Grey Wolf Riders were veteran warriors with decent equipment, their numbers reaching 10,000. As long as they focused on defending, even Yue Zhong would find it hard to deal with them.

By leaving these 20,000 elite warriors being, Hu-er Ran could be considered to have prepared himself mentally to suffer a huge loss.

"Yes!! My Liege!!"

Bo-er Zi, Amu Xidai responded respectfully, and immediately left to carry out his orders.

"Kill! Kill them all!! Kill those rebels!!" Amu Xidai led his 10,000 Blood Eagle Riders towards the back and clashed with the rebelling slaves.

They were all slaves of different ethnicity and races and were all emaciated. They simply didn't have enough energy. They were able to cause so much mayhem purely because they had the numbers.

And now, as the powerful Blood Eagle Riders rushed at them with their equipment, they quickly slaughtered these ill-prepared slaves.

Many of them began to wail and cry for their fathers and mothers as they were attacked by Amu Xidai's forces, as they immediately crumbled and scattered in different directions.

A large number of them disappeared into the dark of the night, and soon, the chaos was quickly brought under control.

As for the 10,000 Grey Wolf Riders under Bo-er Zi, they carefully got into formation, and released a lot of flares, lighting up the entire area. They were all holding rifles and grenade launchers, as they begun to fire at the advancing treants, preventing them from rushing further through their troops.

Yue Zhong observed the formations of the Grey Eagle Riders and frowned, this was a well-prepared army with modern weapons, even if he used the treants to advance forcefully, he would suffer losses. Adding on to the 10,000 Blood Eagle Riders that were rounding up the rest, if he continued to attack the Grey Wolf Riders, the treant army would definitely be desecrated.

Close combat in the dark was the most advantageous for the treants. However, against a defense post with preparations, it was basically wasting their lives.

These treants were a powerful night-raid unit, he did not want to waste them here.

Yue Zhong watched them and quickly gathered the treant army back into the night.

"He truly is someone difficult to deal with!!" Bo-er Zi waited together with his units and noticed that Yue Zhong did not continue his assault. He could not help but frown.

If Yue Zhong had pressed on, Bo-er Zi would still continue his all-out defense against them, even if he knew they weren't his match. It was all just to provide more time for the rest of the army to retreat.

However, Yue Zhong had responded by bringing them all back into the dark, which caused Bo-er Zi to be on tenterhooks, and his army could not help but maintain vigilant.

Yue Zhong's move this time had led Bo-er Zi's subordinates to not dare underestimate Yue Zhong's troops. They had been able to wipe out the Manchurian troops, and Bo-er Zi did not dare let down his guard and was wary.

Yue Zhong led the treants into the dark, and they quickly routed past Bo-er Zi's troops as they made for the main Mongolian forces.

These treants possessed shocking Stamina, and Yue Zhong himself was full of Stamina and Spirit. They were like fish in water as they ran in the dark, chasing up to the Mongolian forces.

"Kill them all!!" Yue Zhong gave the command as his eyes flashed viciously the moment they caught up to the main forces of the Mongolian Army. He pulled out his 2m-long Black Tooth Blade, and 4 or 5 Mongolian soldiers were instantly sliced in two.

"Hehe!! Bad guys must all die!!" Yin Shuang also leaped from Yue Zhong's arms, and charged right through the human crowd, going on a killing spree. Everywhere around her, the heads of some Mongolian soldiers could be seen exploding, fresh blood

splattering everywhere. It was truly a gory scene. Although she was killing the enemies in a frenzy, she was wearing a smile on her face, and she looked like a vivacious little devil enjoying herself.

The 10 Type 3 Treants had speeds of 34 times that of normal people, and they charged together with Yue Zhong into the midst of the soldiers. They all possessed terrifying strength and speed, each time they lashed out, they could easily pulverize the face of an unfortunate soldier, killing him instantly. However, they preferred using their sharp claws to dig the hearts out of the soldiers' chests, gobbling them up.

The 6 high-level Treants and 800 low-level treants (100 having been killed by the Mongolian riders) also charged right into the fray.

The Mongolian soldiers were currently retreating quickly and were caught unawares. Faced with such a sudden assault, they were instantly thrown into chaos. Some of them were valiant and immediately took up their arms to fight back. Unfortunately, they were the first ones to be killed by the treants. Even more so panicked and cried as they tried to flee in different directions, trying not to get killed by the treants.

With this sudden attack, a large number of Mongolian soldiers were wiped out, which caused a chain reaction, spreading towards the main unit in front.

At this moment, 2 units with over 3,000 riders each came charging out from the main unit, and these soldiers rushed past the broken troops, making their way towards Yue Zhong's treants viciously.

Hu-er Ran had already guessed that Yue Zhong might route his units and chase after his main force, and thus, he made the preparations in deploying 10,000 riders, ready to provide assistance at a moment's call.

After Hu-er Ran had established his kingdom in the Central

Plains, he had been on the look out for countless rides and mounts. He found a large number of horses and cows, as well as Black Scaled Stallions, this was how he came to establish his huge army of riders.

Facing the charge of these 6,000 troops, White Bones shot forwards, its bone claws grabbing a hold of the ground, and the bone spikes on its back transformed into a huge 200m-long sharp blade that slashed out in the dark.

One of the units could not see properly in the dark, and they charged forth with a terrifying momentum, coming into contact with that large bone blade of White Bones. The sharp bone blade sliced off the heads of the mounts, as well as the waists of these riders. White Bones continued to plant its limbs firmly into the ground, resisting the force of the charging riders.

As the riders came charging, many of them were sliced across their waists, unable to stop in time, as their blood splattered everywhere and their organs spilled. The entire battleground was like a scene from hell.

Of the 3,000 riders that charged forth, over 1,400 of them had seemingly killed themselves by running into White Bones' sharp bone blade.

Chapter 652: Clash!

Seeing their comrades being sliced in two without any noise, the silent yet creepy scene caused many of the riders to be filled with horror.

In the dark of the night, all the riders could see was pitch black, since White Bones had already evolved and its entire body was black. The riders could only see their friends charging, and suddenly, their bodies separated, and fresh blood sprayed everywhere. It was enough for them to feel chills down their spines.

Even the leader of the 3,000 riders, a powerful Evolver had been sliced in two in the middle of his charge.

Witnessing this horrifying and mysterious scene, the remaining 1,000 riders felt apprehensive and were immediately pounced on by the treants which had no concept of fear of death. The entire unit soon collapsed, with many of them turning to run in different directions.

After defeating these 3,000 riders, Yue Zhong then led the remaining treant army into the dark once more, chasing after the scattered soldiers like hungry wolves.

The other unit of 3,000 that came to help saw the disappearance of Yue Zhong and his treants, and they didn't dare give chase.

It was a cloudy night, and there was not a single beam of moonlight. If they didn't have any torches or man-made lights, there was no way to see beyond 5 meters.

Only the treant army led by Yue Zhong was able to function normally in the night, while the other troops couldn't. Even Yue Zhong's own elite forces had difficulty seeing in the night, regardless of their Evolver status. Hence, Yue Zhong did not mobilize them.

The 3,000 riders could only watch wide-eyed and helpless, as Yue Zhong led the monstrous treants back into the night.

Yue Zhong once again led his troops past the 3,000 riders and went on an all-out charge against another part of the long processions, killing hundreds of soldiers, plunging them into panic, before swiftly retreating.

Under this multiple abuse, the Mongolian forces were split up but still had about 30,000 riders within the main unit. Such a number was enough to wipe out Yue Zhong's treants easily.

Yue Zhong could only rely on guerilla tactics as well as the cover of the night to launch quick attacks and retreating before more reinforcements arrive. They continued to whittle down the large group bit by bit.

He continued to lead the 1,000-strong treant army to route around and attack different areas, before pulling back into the night, devastating an area by killing hundreds. This caused the morale of the Mongolian soldiers to plunge continuously.

In the night, the moment these Mongolian soldiers were heavily assaulted, it was hard for them to reorganize themselves. Under Yue Zhong's relentless harassing, many died or fled. If they continued like this, it was likely that the entire 30,000-strong unit would be defeated by Yue Zhong.

Under the command of Bi Lǔ, the treants would just pounce and eat their fill before heading back. However, under Yue Zhong's command, they made use of the darkness to exhibit their natural combat ability in the night, causing unrest amongst the 60,000 soldiers, and even crushing 10,000 of them. There was no way of comparing their effectiveness in commanding.

Huo-er Gai, one of the generals, came up to Hu-er Ran and said, "Great Khan! We can't continue like this!! Yue Zhong and his monsters can actually function well in the night! If we continue to retreat like this, we'll just be lambs for the slaughter. We have

already lost 10,000 men because of them! We'll be torn apart if things continue!"

Hu-er Ran frowned and thought for a long while, before replying, "Convey my orders! Slow down the retreat, reform our troops!"

Under his order, the Mongolian Army stopped rushing, instead, they formed a sturdy formation and moved orderly. Their rate of retreat slowed down drastically, but they became like a porcupine, making it harder for Yue Zhong to act.

Yue Zhong stopped leading the treants on a blind assault, instead, he pulled out his Bartlett Sniper and picked off the ordinary soldiers one by one. It served to pressurize them further, preventing them from moving.

In the dark of the night, each time the gun went off, the soldiers were filled with trepidation. They continued to advance silently, praying that the next one to be killed was not them. Their hearts were filled with pressure and fear and there was no way of venting.

Hu-er Ran then sent a force of 1,000 to intercept Yue Zhong, however, the moment they were separated from their main forces, they were defeated easily by Yue Zhong and his treants, leaving only 300 that ran back pathetically. Hu-er Ran knew that they weren't his match in the dark. If he sent more soldiers, Yue Zhong would just retreat further, and hunt his subordinates slowly. If he sent too little men, Yue Zhong would crush them easily.

After experiencing these, Hu-er Ran stopped sending his forces out to be killed in vain.

As the Mongolian soldiers prayed silently, dawn came.

Seeing the sun rise, many of them couldn't but sob with relief.

Just as the sun rose, Yue Zhong had already led his treants far away from the Mongolian soldiers. He could cause them misery purely because he had the cover of the night.

In the dark, the 800 treants were simply not a match against the

30,000 elites of the Mongolian Army. Even the 6 high-level treants would not be spared should the Mongolian Army decide to pay a hefty price and used a large number of rockets and experts to sacrifice themselves.

One rocket might not be able to destroy one high-level treant, but dozens of rounds would be enough to blast the treants and prevent them from recovering.

Just as the Mongolian Army was getting excited, from afar, 34 tanks, 60 IFVs, a hundred gun-mounted vehicles, 1,000 motorcycles, as well as 4 infantry battalions appeared, pressing towards them.

This elite troops might not number more than 4,000 people, but together with the armored battalion, the pressure they brought was even stronger than the 30,000 Mongolian troops.

When Hu-er Ran saw this, his face immediately fell as he shouted in panic, "Deploy the armored division!! Charge!! Our Mongolian Empire is the strongest existence, as long as we destroy this troop, the entire Central Plains will be ours!!"

Under his orders, the Mongolian Empire's trump card also came rolling out, with 48 tanks, 70 IFVs, 150 gun-mounted vehicles, 3,000 motorcycles.

Other than that, there was also a unit of 5,000 riders that rode with them. The moment those armored vehicles tore through the enemy lines, these riders would take the opportunity to rush in.

Huo-er Gai looked at the incoming troops and his expression turned dark. Thus, he stepped up to announce, "Everyone, don't be afraid. This time, we definitely can defeat Yue Zhong's troops. Our armored division is so much stronger than theirs. As long as we defeat their troops, our army has the advantage of the terrain! Relying on this advantage, we definitely have the power to rule over the Central Plains!"

Another general, Mu Tu-er hollered, "That's right! The Hans defend, we Mongols attack! Yue Zhong that fool, he only can fight for a short battle, he's definitely on a suicide mission. This battle, we can definitely destroy his army and teach him a lesson!"

"That's definitely the case!"

"This battle, we will definitely win!!"

"..."

Hearing Huo-er Gai and Mu Tu-er's words, the rest of the Mongolian soldiers finally had smiles on their faces.

At this time, the roar of motors sounded out in the skies, as 30 assault helicopters flew over the Mongolian Army.

Seeing the 30 helicopters fly overhead, the faces of all the Mongolian soldiers fell, and their expressions turned ugly.

The moment those 30 assault helicopters flew over, they released rockets and anti-tank missiles down on the Mongolian armored division.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

A number of tanks that the Mongolian Army had relied on to crush their enemies, were instantly turned into flaming balls under the rain of rockets.

Yue Zhong's tanks also began to fire their own cannons at the Mongolian armored division, blasting numerous IFVs and armored vehicles into pieces.

The Mongolian armored division thus began to focus fire towards the skies, firing at the assault helicopters, their bullets and projectiles forming a dense net.

However, the 30 assault helicopters were basically like demons raining destruction from the skies. Their focus fire was enough to destroy the tanks one by one, and they could ignore the IFVS. After all, they were constructed of thick and durable materials, and it

wasn't a problem braving the caliber of bullets that were fired from those gun-mounted vehicles.

Yue Zhong's armored troops continued to fire at the IFVs and machine gun-mounted vehicles, and together with the cannons from the tanks, the Mongolian Army began to lose their vehicles, each of them exploding in a ball of flames.

The bullets that the Mongolian IFVS only managed to leave minor scratches on the tanks of Yue Zhong, with no way to tear through their armor. There was almost no damage to the other armored vehicles behind.

It was only from time to time, there were some stray cannon shots from the Mongolian tanks that would blast some of Yue Zhong's tanks.

The armored divisions from both sides were engaged in a crazy slaughter, and the tanks from the Mongolian side were being destroyed at a rapid pace.

Chapter 653: Defeating the Mongolian Army!

The battle was not in the Mongolian Army's favor, once all the tanks were destroyed by the assault helicopters, they would basically be stripped of the strength to defend against Yue Zhong's tanks.

"For the sake of the Mongolian Empire, charge!!"

"For the sake of the Mongolian Empire, charge!!"

"..."

Countless roars and howls of fury rang out, as the 2 rider units let out all their frustration, and charged for Yue Zhong's armored division.

Most of the riders would usually wait for the moment when their enemies were breached by their own tanks, before rushing in for the kill. However, since the situation now was that their own armored division was being destroyed, they had no choice but to use their own flesh and blood to engage Yue Zhong's armored troops.

The 100 gun-mounted vehicles among Yue Zhong's armored division began to spew out bullets. The dense rain of metal struck the charging Mongolian riders, killing them.

"Go to hell!!" One Mongolian rider carried a rocket launcher as he charged towards one particular armored vehicle. He then flipped from the back of his horse and aimed at the vehicle before firing.

With a bright flash, the armored vehicle was blasted into pieces.

The Mongolian riders were truly ferocious, and they all knew that the battle today would determine the survival of 2 major ethnicity groups. If they lost, Yue Zhong would definitely not spare many of them, whose hands have been stained with the blood of

the other races.

Many of these soldiers had killed numerous people of different ethnicities. They already knew there was no retreat nor way out for them, thus they became, even more, savage in this battle.

However, history had proven time and again that flesh and blood and bravery would not win over metal and steel. Although these riders were all valiant in their charge, against the rain of bullets, their bodies were ripped to shreds.

The 2 units had rushed forth to face the 100 gun-mounted vehicles. Unfortunately, the dense hail of bullets caused them to crumble. The only result they got was 16 vehicles destroyed due to the efforts of some brave suicide warriors.

After demolishing the 48 Mongolian tanks, the 30 assault helicopters turned to fire their machine guns at the rest of the armored vehicles, tearing apart the IFVs and gun-mounted vehicles.

The assault helicopters were the bane of many armored vehicles. Of the 30, 20 of them were Thunder Fighters, which was technologically advanced and a result of the apocalyptic world. They might number only 30, but their true battle prowess was almost equivalent to 70 assault helicopters.

With such a terrifying aerial attack, the vehicles on the ground were like toys being blasted apart, before the 30 assault helicopters turned and made for the rest of the soldiers.

Hu-er Ran watched them approach, his face pale. It was as though he had aged 10 years in an instant, as he gave the order, "Convey my orders! Everyone, retreat to the Huangjin Clan!!"

With that order given, the entire Mongolian Army instantly broke apart and formed many smaller groups that fled in all directions.

Since the Mongolian Army had a large number of horses, almost

everyone had one. As they retreated on their mounts, it was truly a speedy escape.

The moment the army dissipated, the rest of the armored fleet also started to flee, without any means to defend against Yue Zhong's troops. Yue Zhong's forces then took the chance to annihilate the remaining armored vehicles that were too slow to get away, before wiping them out entirely.

A huge amount of rations, resources, and ammunition had been abandoned as the Mongols fled, which ended up in Yue Zhong's hands. In the first place, due to the presence of these resources, the retreat of the Mongolian Army had been slow.

Otherwise, the Mongolian Army could have made off quickly in the night, and Yue Zhong would have been helpless.

One infantry battalion was left behind to supervise the movement of the resources, while the rest of Li Guang's forces were then split into 5 parties that went after the scattered Mongolian troops. However, it wasn't too effective, as they only managed to hunt only another 2,000 Mongolian soldiers.

Yue Zhong crippled the main forces of the Mongolian Army, then turned his attention back to the Grey Wolf Riders and Blood Eagle Riders.

These 2 units were made up of riders entirely, and when they saw that the situation was dire, they immediately split up in 20 thousand-strong groups that fled in different directions.

The Central Plains were vast, and they were a heaven for riders. Yue Zhong's armored troop only managed to kill another 1,000 or so Grey Wolf Riders and Blood Eagle Riders before they had escaped far from sight.

Li Guang came up to Yue Zhong, his face grinning widely, "These damn bastards, they're just like rats! Running away the moment we hit them. Leader! What do we do now?"

Having defeated the main force of the Mongolian Army, everyone knew that the ownership over the Central Plains had just swapped hands. From now on, they were the largest faction. Any enemy that did not lower their heads would be wiped out. Thus, all of Yue Zhong's generals were in high spirits and gave, even more, effort in their endeavors.

Yue Zhong's eyes gleamed as he replied, "The Huangjin Clan. As long as we take the fight there, they would be defeated, and won't be a threat anymore."

If the Mongolian soldiers continued to roam out in the Central Plains, it would be hard to purge them completely. If they hardened their hearts to fight it out with Yue Zhong, it was also going to be tough to take them on.

The only constant that these riders would return to was the Huangjin Clan. There, they kept their resources, food, slaves, and flock. In this world where resources were scarce, it was hard to obtain any, these riders definitely have to return to Huangjin Clan to stock up or pass the goods.

Should the Huangjin Clan stronghold be destroyed, then the riders would be left to fend for themselves out in the Plains, either to be eaten by the Mutant Beasts or die of starvation.

Lie Ming Yi and his troops were able to roam about the Central Plains to hunt the various factions because Yue Zhong was behind to support him. He provided the resources, ammunition, steeds, and weapons. Otherwise, they would not have been able to continue on their rampage throughout.

Yue Zhong glanced at Li Guang and asked, "Li Guang, are your Victorious Troops still raring to go?"

Li Guang immediately beamed with excitement, "Yes!! Our Victorious Troops are ever ready!!"

At this moment, Situ Jin who had been quiet all these while also

piped in, "Leader! Our Tian Wei Troops are still going strong as well! We're willing to be the vanguard to wipe out the enemy!"

Hu-er Ran used to be the overlord of the Central Plains and was now an enemy that Yue Zhong had to take out. Li Guang had brought his Victorious Troops to block the allied forces at the battle of Cloud Town and had obtained huge merits. In the future, they were sure to become the top force under Yue Zhong. Situ Jin could sense that they were at an advantage, and hoped to gain some merit so that the Tian Wei Troops also stood a chance at becoming the top force.

A country would definitely have its main fighting force, its second line of defense, miscellaneous troops, garrison forces, and reserves as well as others. The main fighting force is definitely the one that was taken care of the most, with all sorts of advanced weapons and equipment going to them first.

The rest had less priority and were utilized less on the battlefield, thus lesser chances to gain more merits and earning more resources.

A unit without much morale would usually be a second-rate troop. Situ Jin hoped to bring his own forces and become the main force of Yue Zhong's Central Plains army.

Yue Zhong glanced at Situ Jin, he knew that Situ Jin disliked infighting, and although he listened to orders, he had his own beliefs. He was planning for Situ Jin and his Tian Wei Troops to become the secondary troop, in charge of cleanups and clearing zombies. Like this, it wouldn't go against his resolution and principles.

Yue Zhong thus eyed him and asked gravely, "Can the Tian Wei Troops do it? This battle is of utmost importance, and every soldier has to obey my command unconditionally. Situ Jin, there might be things you aren't willing to see."

This time, Yue Zhong was intending to destroy the Huangjin

Clan and eradicate Hu-er Ran's power, and for victory, he would stop at nothing.

Situ Jin immediately became silent.

Yue Zhong did not spare him a second look, instead, turning to Li Guang, "Victorious Troops, come with me! We shall eradicate the Huangjin Clan!"

Li Guang's eyes blazed with passion as he responded, "Yes! Leader!! Our Victorious Troops are willing to be your sword and kill all those who oppose you!"

After which, Li Guang quickly followed behind Yue Zhong.

Situ Jin watched them leave and sighed heavily. He had guessed that from today on, their Tian Wei Troops were likely going to be the 2nd or 3rd force at best.

Yue Zhong did not rest, instead, immediately leading the treant army, a thousand elite soldiers, as well as Li Guang's forces and charged right for the Huangjin Clan stronghold.

Along the way, the path was smooth, and they didn't meet much resistance. Only a few scattered riders appeared and were quickly taken care of by the Victorious Troops.

Not much time had passed since Hu-er Ran brought a thousand of his subordinates back to the Huangjin Clan stronghold, when Yue Zhong had already caught up and was killing his way in.

Yue Zhong then summoned the envoy that had helped to serve the Manchurian Empire previously, Lian Da Zhong, as he gave an order coldly, "Lian Da Zhong! You shall go and notify Hu-er Ran on my behalf. Get him to surrender unconditionally. I will leave him alive. Otherwise, I will attack immediately, and destroy his clan, eliminating all from his family. I'm giving him an hour to consider. This is my order!"

Lian Da Zhong's body trembled as he kneeled, "Your slave obeys!!"

Chapter 654: Advice to Surrender!

Lian Da Zhong was a coward with no backbone. He had served the Manchurian Empire and developed a slave mentality.

The style of the Manchurian Empire had been to revert to the ancient ways, where customs and slaves were normal. Many had to refer to themselves as slaves and humble servants in front of Xuan Zhen, otherwise, it was hard to gain his trust or favor.

It was normal under a dictatorship in this apocalyptic times, that the leader's requests are met. Yue Zhong himself would enslave his enemies, and even in his faction, there is some sort of slavery present. Xuan Zhen liked the style of Ancient China, and his entire Manchurian Empire was more of a backward society.

Lian Da Zhong, this coward, thus headed out on Yue Zhong's orders, carrying a little white flag as he approached the Mongolian camp fearfully.

The Mongol soldiers looked at him, bewildered. They knew that this man was the only crucial link to their survival.

One general stepped forth suddenly and grabbed Lian Da Zhong's shirt, barking ferociously, "Halt! What are you up to?!"

Lian Da Zhong was scared out of his wits, and he began to stammer, "This lowly one is called Lian Da Zhong, I'm here on the orders of the Han Alliance's leader Yue Zhong to advise Great Khan Hu-er Ran to surrender."

The general frowned and waved his hands for his soldiers to stand down. He then brought Lian Da Zhong in and asked with a strange gleam in his eyes, "Did Alliance Chief Yue Zhong say anything in particular?"

Right now, Yue Zhong had brought 3,000 troops to surround the Huangjin Clan, which was still housing over a few tens of thousands of slaves. However, everyone knew that the slaves of the

different ethnicities and races would not stand a chance against the well-equipped forces of Yue Zhong. The Mongolian Empire was truly at the edge.

Under such circumstances, even the most loyal of soldiers were starting to waver. Many had already begun to harbor thoughts of surrendering to Yue Zhong. After all, he was not a foreigner, and if they lost the Huangjin Clan stronghold, they would be forced to roam the Central Plains, which would spell death.

Even if they were to take many steps back, and assume that they could flee, where would they flee to? Everyone knew that Yue Zhong had almost gained control over the entire Central Plains. Even if they could flee now, by the time Yue Zhong fully established himself, they would have no place to escape to.

Lian Da Zhong swallowed his saliva, before continuing, "Our Alliance Chief had only given a broad direction. Which is for Hu-er Ran to surrender unconditionally. As long as you guys surrender unconditionally, Yue Zhong would naturally not make things difficult. You must have heard him before, humans won't be segregated under him. As long as they're willing to work hard, he will accept anybody. In our Tian Wei Troops, there are Hans, Mongols, even the Korean-Chinese, Khwari, and Uyghurs are accepted. They're all living in harmony. If you guys surrender, you can definitely be part of us."

"The world is now under threat from the zombies, our human population is dwindling. Leader Yue Zhong is broad-minded and has always been working towards unifying the country. He wants to accept everybody, and he treasures talents. It won't be too late to surrender to him now. With his skills and wisdom, he'll definitely unify the country, if you guys work for him now, in the future, as long as you contribute enough, you will be part of the team of founding fathers. By then, riches and fame would come to you naturally, and your future generations will only stand to gain from your wise decisions."

Lian Da Zhong might be someone with no backbone, and liked to kiss ass, but he was truly capable with his words and knew how to adjust to the situation. At the same time, he was crafty, and these all combined together to make him a formidable envoy.

When the general heard his words, his heart couldn't help but itch, and his face turned warm, as he chuckled, "Brother Lian, I'm called Cha Bi Lai, the vice-commander of the Huangjin Guards. Let's be friends!"

Lian Da Zhong also went along with the flow as he smiled, "Great!! Great!! Great!! To be able to form a friendship with Brother Cha, a hero of his times, it's an honor! Why don't we become sworn brothers?"

"Fine!! From today on, we are sworn brothers!! I'm 36 this year."

"I'm 31 this year! Big Brother!!"

"Little Brother!!"

Cha Bi Lai and Lian Da Zhong both had their own intentions in forging this relationship. Cha Bi Lai wanted to look for someone he could rely on within Yue Zhong's circle of power, and Lian Da Zhong wanted to leave the Mongolian camp alive. Thus, they became friends.

After becoming sworn brothers, Cha Bi Lai became extremely warm towards Lian Da Zhong, bringing him further into the camp, "My good brother!! Should Alliance Chief Yue Zhong have any likings or tendencies, please remind your big brother I, so I can have some preparations."

"Leader Yue Zhong is a hero of many skills and talents, his strength unparalleled, and is a natural leader." Lian Da Zhong began to sing praises of Yue Zhong, as he was always careful not to talk bad about his bosses. However, he immediately turned the topic, "However, while he might be heroic and valiant, he is not immune to the charm of beautiful women. Furthermore, the type

he likes is a huge range! From young girls, to cool beauties, as long as they're top beauties and virgins, he likes them all."

Lian Da Zhong had joined Yue Zhong after his forces had defeated the army at Tian Mu Town. He was quick-witted, and his mouth seemed to be made out of honey. Although he didn't have much of a position amongst Yue Zhong's people, he had already made many friends. He noticed Yue Zhong carrying Yin Shuang most of the time, with Tenpyo Saka, Zhuo Ya Tong, Ji Qing Wu, Bi Lü around him. He naturally came to the conclusion.

Cha Bi Lai had a strange glint in his eyes while smiling, "Since time immemorial, heroes loved beauty, this is surely the truth."

Hu-er Ran himself had a huge harem as well, with over a 100 women in it.

"Hehe!" Lian Da Zhong also laughed somewhat knowingly, his gaze mischievous.

Under Cha Bi Lai's lead, Lian Da Zhong was smoothly brought right to the heart of the Mongolian stronghold.

When he entered the Huangjin Clan hall, Lian Da Zhong immediately saw Hu-er Ran.

Hu-er Ran had just shot Lian Da Zhong a cold look, and it was enough to send him kneeling on the ground, preparing to kiss ass, "Lian Da Zhong, envoy of the Han Alliance, came to greet the great Khagan, wishing the Khagan many years of good health!!"

Hu-er Ran watched this man with a lack of backbone, contempt in his eyes, as he spoke coldly, "Did Yue Zhong send you to persuade me? What are his conditions?"

Lian Da Zhong was full of euphemism, "Our great leader Yue Zhong hopes that you can surrender unconditionally, and work together to unite the Central Plains. He is willing to ensure the protection of you and your family, such that you will not come to harm."

Lian Da Zhong obviously did not dare to come down strong on Hu-er Ran like how Yue Zhong threatened, that death will come should he resist. He was afraid that Hu-er Ran would drag him out to be executed.

When two armies fought, the envoys were usually not mistreated. However, Yue Zhong had slaughtered the envoys from Manchuria, this was a wide-known fact.

Hu-er Ran laughed coldly, as he barked, "Just protecting my life? And if I don't surrender? What are his original words, speak!!"

Lian Da Zhong trembled, and he forged through, "Leader Yue Zhong said, if the Khagan doesn't surrender after they breach the Huangjin Clan, he will wipe out your entire family line and clans!! He's only willing to give you an hour to consider, after an hour, he will charge in."

"What a ruthless fellow!!" Hu-er Ran sighed bitterly.

Based on what they knew of Yue Zhong, he was definitely capable of doing what he said. Hu-er Ran could definitely flee on his own, being a top Evolver. However, his wife, kids, friends, and loyal subordinates would not be able to escape their fate. If they fought back, Yue Zhong would not let them off. If they were too strong in their resistance, all the Mongols of the Huangjin Clan stronghold might have to suffer from Yue Zhong's wrath.

Yue Zhong's troops did not adhere to the 3 rules and 8 notices, instead, they were a force that focused on victory. Otherwise, he wouldn't have sent Lie Ming Yi out to wreak havoc.

"I'll go speak to Yue Zhong!" Hu-er Ran came down from his seat and spoke to his 2 generals, "If I'm not back within 5 hours, and there's no news, you guys take your own subordinates and flee. Remember to burn all resources before you leave. Before I'm back, watch all the resources, don't let anyone touch them!"

"Yes! Great Khan!" The 2 generals responded loudly.

Lian Da Zhong watched in wonder, "He truly is the Mongol King, so decisive and charismatic."

To Yue Zhong, the people and resources of the Huangjin Clan stronghold were important. Should they be destroyed, and the soldiers escape, then it would be a huge blow to Yue Zhong on 2 fronts. He would have to spend a large amount of time and effort to protect the slaves and ensure the flow of resources. This was harder than taking his troops to defeat the Mongolian Army.

After making his preparations, Hu-er Ran followed Lian Da Zhong out of the stronghold, and into Yue Zhong's camp.

Chapter 655: Hu-er Ran's conditions!

Within Yue Zhong's camp, Yue Zhong was hugging Yin Shuang, and beside him stood Bai Xiao Sheng and Ji Qing Wu. Tenpyo Saka was hidden in the shadows. 20 Evolvers of above Level 40 that had withstood countless battles stood neatly in 2 rows.

Under the watchful gazes of all these experts, as well as Yue Zhong, Hu-er Ran walked in, his countenance calm and not a nary of worry on his handsome face. Yue Zhong spoke, "What guts! Truly the Mongol King Hu-er Ran. You actually dared to walk alone into my camp. Aren't you afraid that I'll kill you right now? If you die, the entire Mongol Empire will crumble, and no faction can stand up to me."

The moment Yue Zhong's words landed, all the experts tensed up, their eyes fixed on Hu-er Ran.

Yin Shuang also shot daggers out of her eyes while looking at him, her little fists curled up tightly. Should Yue Zhong give the command, she will immediately rush out to blast his head.

Hu-er Ran looked straight at Yue Zhong, without any intention of cowering nor submitting, "When I left, I already gave the order. Once I'm dead, all the resources of the Huangjin Clan's stronghold would be set ablaze. If you want to take over a broken and useless building, by all means!"

As a warlord, even when he was pressed to such circumstances, Hu-er Ran still retained his demeanor and did not grovel to beg for his life.

"Good! You can be considered a hero." Yue Zhong eyed him, a look of appreciation in his gaze.

Many people found it hard to retain their calm under the threat of death. Those who were usually officials were mostly cowards. As the Mongol King, Hu-er Ran had actually risked his life to enter

Yue Zhong's camp by himself, just this alone cause Yue Zhong to admire him.

Yue Zhong continued on oppressively, "Hu-er Ran, I want the entire Huangjin Clan to submit. There can only be my voice throughout the Central Plains. State your conditions."

As the victor, Yue Zhong had the advantage, and thus, only he could possibly call for the conditions in such a prideful tone.

Hu-er Ran kept his gaze fixed on Yue Zhong, each of his words clear, "If I were to submit, how would you deal with me? Give me a glass of poison wine, or let me rot as a commoner?"

Hu-er Ran was not just a peak-level Evolver, but also the tyrant of the Central Plains once. Whenever a new power managed to conquer their enemies, they would not let such existences continue to live, and thus, they would choose to wipe them out.

Yue Zhong stared back, "I will not kill you, instead, I'll transfer your family and you to Vietnam, and you won't be allowed to return to the Central Plains ever again. As long as you stay there obediently, I will let you live your life out as a rich man. As long as you don't take arms against me, I won't kill you. If you dare to try and contest my power again, I will wipe out all of your family lines. How's that?"

Hu-er Ran's presence in the Central Plains had been too resounding, and Yue Zhong wasn't willing to let this unstable element stay here. If he didn't kill him, he had to make sure he was far away, with no way to regroup with his old subordinates. Of course, the best method was still to kill him.

Hu-er Ran became silent, and he knew it was the best way.

He then replied, "If I want to remain here in the Central Plains, how would you deal with it?"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, "Then I will choose to kill you right now. Even if chaos erupts in the Huangjin Clan stronghold, I

will not let you leave here alive."

A capable leader could expand his power and authority fast. Hu-er Ran was too outstanding, Yue Zhong could not allow him to continue his activities on the Central Plains. Otherwise, there will be countless troubles to come.

Hu-er Ran's heart turned cold, he could tell that Yue Zhong was determined from his words. If he insisted on staying on, Yue Zhong would definitely not spare him.

His eyes flashed, and he hesitated, before saying, "I will bring the Huangjin Clan to submit to you, and fight for you, how about that? Since there're still many factions out here in the Central Plains, I'm willing to bring the troops to help you persuade them."

"Oh?" Yue Zhong felt incredulous, he had never expected Hu-er Ran to suggest joining him. He sunk into deep thought.

If Hu-er Ran truly joined Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong would gain a terrifying strength. The elite troops under Hu-er Ran were all powerful and valiant warriors. Be it dealing with humans or zombies, they would be a powerful addition to his current might.

This time, Hu-er Ran's army had lost not because they weren't brave or lacked manpower, they lacked measures against the aerial assault. In modern warfare, losing the flow of the battle to aerial attacks was a terrifying thing. Especially out here in the plains, where there was not a single shred of cover to protect against any aerial assault, ground troops were at a huge disadvantage.

If Yue Zhong didn't have the 30 assault helicopters, even if he threw all his forces at the Mongolian Army, at best, both sides would have suffered great casualties, but the victor would not have been so clear.

Yue Zhong was unsure, because he had little troops on hand right now, and the true elites did not exceed 5,000. It was going to be tough to expect them to exert sufficient pressure on tens of

thousands of Mongolian soldiers. Should things go awry, his own troops might be even be swallowed.

"I know you must be thinking that my troops will be hard to control. However, you can rest assure, modern warfare is fought with ample equipment and proper support. A troop without any support could not engage in a long battle. Once I submit and join your ranks, the resources of the Huangjin Clan would be in your hands, as long as you hold on to them, we can't possibly rebel. Furthermore, our families and loved ones will be in your grasp as well, and they're the best tool to use against us."

"If you're worried that there're too many of us, you can split us up, and fill the ranks up with other Hans. Or you can disarm a number until you're satisfied. In addition, there're over hundreds of thousands of slaves of various ethnicity groups, once you set them free, they'll follow you. You can choose people from them to form a matching force to keep us in check. Like that, the total number of Hans will be more than us. Since the Central Plains are vast, there are numerous Han factions out there. I can bring my troops to subjugate them and send them to you. Like this, the battle power of the Hans will only strengthen, and you will have no worry about us betraying you." Hu-er Ran explained in detail, much to Yue Zhong's surprise.

Yue Zhong stared at him, "Why do you want to work for me?"

Normally, a leader would rather be a big fish in a small pond than a small fish in a big pond. Even if they were captured, they wouldn't submit so easily like this. Yue Zhong was suspicious of Hu-er Ran's sudden proposal.

There was struggle in Hu-er Ran's eyes, as he replied, "Before the apocalypse, I had been a rich man's son, and led a wastrel's life. There was no goal or aim, and I only sought to enjoy myself. After the apocalypse, I've grown to love this exciting life of battle. There's no way for me to go back to enjoying myself in pleasures. If I don't have power, or forced to be idle, I would suffocate to

death."

There were some who preferred to live peaceful and quiet lives. Some chose to live theirs on the edge. Many officials had lost their lives at the start of the Apocalypse, because they had lost the authority that came with their positions, and could not adjust accordingly.

Hu-er Ran was also not willing to bury himself in a small corner of Vietnam, living a quiet life. Even if he had to die, he wanted to go out with a bang, on the battlefields.

Yue Zhong looked at Hu-er Ran for a long while, before deciding, "Fine! I'll promise you! As long as you join me, I can let you continue to lead warriors to roam the Central Plains. However, all your subordinates will have to obey my every command. If there's a single instance of you disobeying, then don't blame me for being merciless. How's that? Do you still want to lead?"

It was as Hu-er Ran pointed out, as long as Yue Zhong held the logistics, there was no way for Hu-er Ran to go. After all, they were an entire force of riders, if they couldn't even eat their fill, how would they win any fights? Much less fight against an armored troop with aerial support.

Hu-er Ran immediately went down on one knee as he announced, "I'm willing to serve Leader with my life!"

He was decisive, having made the decision to serve Yue Zhong, he was willing to put down his position as the Mongol King and wholeheartedly serve as Yue Zhong's subordinate.

Yue Zhong eyed Hu-er Ran and spoke slowly, "All those who had partaken in the killing and slaughter of the Hans and other races, I will not let any of them off. Do you understand?"

Hu-er Ran's face turned cold, "Yes! Leader! I will go grab those bastards for Leader, and execute them as an example!"

Yue Zhong then dismissed him, "Alright, go back! First, transport

the resources out, I'll get my men to receive them."

"Yes! Leader!" Hu-er Ran then quickly left the room.

After Hu-er Ran left, Bai Xiao Sheng could not help but ask, "Leader, are you really going to use that guy? He's not simple at all. Too ambitious! If we're not careful, he might turn around to swallow us!"

Yue Zhong replied, "That's right! He's a double-edged sword. If we can utilize him properly, he can be the sharpest blade in our troops. However, the moment we show any weakness, he will be the first to bite us."

Bai Xiao Sheng was confused, "Then, you still promised him...?"

Yue Zhong's eyes glinted, "We have to quickly amass our strength, and take down the capital in a year's time. Otherwise, things will be bad then."

Chapter 656: Elder Council!

Since Hu-er Ran made the decision to join Yue Zhong, he did not throw any curveballs, instead, he handed everything within the Huangjin Clan Stronghold to Yue Zhong obediently.

Under his orders, most of the Mongolians put down their weapons. However, there were a few hot-blooded youths that could not accept surrendering without a fight. Some other elites took their own lives. However, many of them heaved a sigh of relief, and put down their weapons.

After all, what was most precious on Earth was still one's own life. Yue Zhong might be vicious, but he never went against his word once he promised.

Hu-er Ran also abided by Yue Zhong's wishes and helped to release the hundred thousands of slaves.

The sudden increase of slaves was a huge burden on Yue Zhong's shoulders. He had to process and release them, and could not afford to use too much force. Otherwise, there might be potential dissatisfaction brewing amongst the survivors, therefore he had to put in more effort to get it down properly.

Inside a tent, Bo-er Zi looked at the intelligence officer kneeling in front of him in horror and disbelief, "What?! The great Khan surrendered!! Is what you said true?? It's impossible!! Definitely impossible!! The great Khan is a person above persons! How could he surrender to Yue Zong that despicable and vicious Han dog!!!"

Hu-er Ran had established the Mongol Empire by himself, and his position amongst his followers was equivalent to Yue Zhong amongst his men. Within the empire, while there might be some who were not of the same mind as Hu-er Ran, they were still loyal.

Bo-er Zi was someone who had been saved countless times by Hu-er Ran, and was considered one of his trusted aides. He was loyal,

and when he heard the respected Hu-er Ran of his heart submitting to Yue Zhong, it was like a huge blow to him.

At this time, the handsome man in question with a strict aura stepped into the tent, and spoke slowly, "Bo-er Zi, it's true! I've truly submitted to Yue Zhong!"

Bo-er Zi's eyes turned bloodshot, his teeth gritted as he kneeled, "Great Khan!! Why?!! We have so many good brothers! Under my lead, there're still 3,000 riders. As long as you give the order, we're willing to follow you throughout the Central Plains. Yue Zhong is a Han, and no matter how strong his is, the Central Plains don't belong to him. The Central Plains belong to us Mongols! Even if we can't take him on in a frontal battle, as long as we make use of our usual tactics, with the vast Central Plains, he can't do anything to else!! Great Khan, why?! Why did you submit?! Why?!"

Hu-er Ran chuckled bitterly, and asked, "Bo-er Zi, how long will the rations in your hands last?"

Bo-Er Zi turned silent, before replying slowly, "We should be able to last another 2 days with the dry rations. If we scrimp a little, it should be enough to last 4 days. If we kill our horses, we can last even longer."

Hu-er Ran replied, his tone full of bitterness, "If we lose the Huangjin Clan Stronghold, we lose our lifeline. Out here in the Central Plains, if we don't provide food backup for our men, we will die from battles and starve to death. Our bullets will be lesser with each round we fire. Without a base, any storm could claim the lives of all our brothers. Our Mongolian brethren are all within the Huangjin Clan Stronghold. If we continue fighting, Yue Zhong would definitely not go easy on us, and all our people will become slaves, and he might even kill the families of the soldiers. Without Huangjin Clan, we won't even have the necessary support to resist him. If we continue to fight, not only us, our families and loved ones will also follow us in death. For their future and sake, we can only choose to submit to him, and fight for him."

In the apocalypse, without a base to return to, it was extremely dangerous.

This was because there were powerful tornadoes and sandstorms that raged on out here in the flat, wide plains, with some even lasting a few days and nights. There was no way for the people to go out and hunt. Other than the powerful storms, there were also all sorts of Mutant Beasts.

Some of them grouped together in numbers, and were incredibly savage, causing even someone like Hu-er Ran to retreat when up against them. If a huge group of humans were forced to be vagrants out here in the Central Plains, they would definitely die when chased by the Mutant Beasts.

When Bo-er Zi heard Hu-er Ran's words, he then asked, "Great Khan, are you here to persuade me to surrender as well?"

Hu-er Ran's eyes flashed with a glint as he looked at Bo-er Zi and said slowly, "That's right! I'm here to advise you to surrender, so that our brothers may have a chance."

"Great Khan! Let me call you that one last time!! I know you have your reasons for submitting to Yue Zhong, and I know you're doing it for the future of our brothers. However, I can't bring myself to do it! I will only serve the Great Mongolian Empire!!" Bo-er Zi knelt and kowtowed 3 times, causing his forehead to bleed, before he pulled out his curved blade to slash his own neck, shouting, "Long live the Mongolian Empire!"

With a flash of the blade, a long slash appeared on Bo-er Zi's neck, as fresh blood splattered out.

Hu-er Ran watched, his eyes widening, as his lips quivered, before he sighed, "Go well!!"

Bo-er Zi was a nationalistic person, and if there was no more hope for the Great Mongolian Empire, then he would rather choose to end his own life.

Hu-er Ran turned to leave the tent.

Bo-er Zi's Grey Wolf Troops then landed in Hu-er Ran's hands, and under his orders, they were transferred to Yue Zhong smoothly.

On the other side, the remaining Blood Eagle Troops that were under Amu Xidai were immediately led by him and fled to the outer parts of Mongolia the moment they heard that Hu-er Ran surrendered to Yue Zhong.

The Blood Eagle Riders were a sharp blade of the Mongolian Empire, and had crushed countless Han factions. Amu Xidai was also a cruel nationalist, who killed countless Hans, and he knew Yue Zhong would not let him go. He didn't want to die, thus, he could only flee.

The Manchurian Emperor Xuan Zhen was pretty fast, as Yue Zhong swallowed up the Mongolian Empire, he quickly left together with his remaining troops and slaves, fleeing to the north.

Yue Zhong lacked manpower, swallowing the Mongolian Empire was like gobbling up a huge meal that was way beyond himself. It required a long time to digest this meal. Although he had already scouted the direction of the Manchurian Empire, he had no way of making any move currently.

Hu-er Ran had submitted to Yue Zhong, and was extremely cooperative, however, Yue Zhong could not help but be on guard against him. At the same time, there would be remnant soldiers from the Grey Wolves Troops and Blood Eagle Troops, causing the total number of soldiers to exceed 10,000.

Yue Zhong had only 3,000 soldiers within the Huangjin Clan, who were required to supervise the 10,000-strong Mongolian troops, as well as maintaining the peace and calm of the hundreds of thousands of survivors. They also had to be on guard against the other sneak attacks from other factions, and Mutant Beast Hordes, so it was extremely taxing on the soldiers. They had absolutely no

resources to chase the Manchurian Troops.

Within a room in Europe, with plenty of advanced communications equipment, one particular male received a phone call, and his face turned pale as he left the room in huge strides.

Within a meeting room, a number of agitated voices were engaging in discussion.,

"

"The Mongolians' Central PLains has been unified?"

"Our 1st Cavalry on the Central Plains had been wiped out by a person called Yue Zhong person as well."

"Most of the Chinese have already been gathered in his hands, Guangxi, and Hunan as well as Central Plains. The number of people under him has already reached 2 million."

"If this powerful entity were to rise in Asia, it will not benefit us. We should quickly wipe him out."

"No! I feel that we shouldn't waste too much energy on Asia. Africa and Middle East are the important territories. We can gain a whole lot more people from Africa, as well as resources from the Middle East. Asia is too far from us, and not only do we face problems deploying troops there, even if we could take down the faction there, it will be hard to move the resources back to our place."

"..."

In the meeting hall, there were a few men in military clothing, the Elders of the Kingdom of God. Every word and action of theirs could set things in motion.

The Kingdom of God had already amassed enough influence all over the world even before the Apocalypse. Of course, there were still fights with other factions, however, with their strong technological advancement, they won more than lost.

The Thunder Fighters were an invention of the Kingdom of God. It was because of them, that Yue Zhong had managed to gain the upper hand in a few of his battles. He only had less than 50 of those mechanical beasts, and they were already so tyrannical. The Kingdom of God could actually manufacture about 20 a month. The gap in power was huge.

One particular hooked-nose man with good looks, Erek, spoke solemnly, "Apostle! I recommend sending the Apostles to deal with Yue Zhong. The number of Chinese in China is huge, if he successfully unites the country, then this backward country could possibly overtake us. It will not be beneficial to our plans. Even if Asia is not within our consideration, nor a place of interest, we cannot allow someone strong to appear there. At the very least, not while we're still expanding our operations. Based on the reports, Yue Zhong is wildly ambitious and he has gone on a number of conquests. If he were to become the leader of China, it will be dangerous for us. I recommend that we send 2 Apostles to assist the Mongolian troops in eliminating Yue Zhong!"

Chapter 657: Undercurrent!

Another man frowned, "Apostle? Is there a need to send one?"

The Apostles were the strongest experts of the Kingdom of God, and were the peak Evolvers of the Europe continent. Each of the 12 had terrifying abilities. They could suppress an entire region by themselves.

As the powerful trump cards of the Kingdom of God, they had been crushing the enemies of the Kingdom of God. Because of them, the Kingdom of God had been able to expand swiftly and smoothly.

Of course, the Kingdom of God would prioritize the most advanced weapons and all sorts of precious medicines or manufactured serums from the various Mutant Plants and gave them to the Apostles. At the same time, powerful skill books, Survivor Coins were all given to them as well. Both sides worked together to ensure a beneficial working relationship.

Erek spoke solemnly, "It's necessary! Based on the reports, this Yue Zhong has the strength of an Apostle as well. In order to wipe him out completely, we will need at least 2 Apostles as well as 8 Divine Envoys."

One of the Elders asked, "Our Apostles are all in America, Africa, Middle East, Britain and India engaged in battle! The remaining 4 are on guard duty. If we had to deal with Yue Zhong, we would have to relocate those who are on the battlefield. Where do you propose taking them from?"

The Kingdom of God was extending its reach everywhere, at the same time, engaging in battles on all fronts. As the strongest experts of the Kingdom of God, the Apostles were naturally deployed to strategic places to be at the forefront.

One particular wrinkly old man with a head full of white hair

stammered out, "Let the 9th Apostle Harriman and 12th Apostle Lina go and deal with Yue Zhong! We cannot allow a strong contender appear in China. It will truly be bad for us."

"Yes! Great Elder!"

The moment that old man spoke, the rest of the Elders followed his wishes.

This old man was one of the 3 greatest Elders, Jonas. This seemingly harmless old man had machinated many of the dealings and directions the Kingdom of God took, and his methods were cruel and vicious. Anybody who stood against him was basically dead, and the moment he made a decision, few dared to go against him.

With Jonas' orders, a huge undercurrent was making its way for Yue Zhong.

On the Central Plains.

Bai Xiao Sheng came up to Yue Zhong with bloodshot eyes, reporting snappily, "Leader! The brothers we sent to Changming County have been killed."

"What?! They dare to kill our men!!" Yue Zhong's face turned ugly.

When 2 armies fought, they seldom killed envoys, after all, it was a huge insult to the other party. Yue Zhong seldom killed envoys, unless it was necessary, like the case of the Manchurian envoy, in order to shake the rest of the Hans and get them to rally against the Manchurian Empire. Now his own envoy had been killed, he was furious.

Bai Xiao Sheng's eyes flashed with a wild ferocity, "Leader! Let me take men to go and wipe them out! I will tear their skin and rip their tendons!"

Yue Zhong turned to Hu-er Ran and said, "Hu-er Ran, you go grab 3,000 Grey Wolf Riders and come with me!"

Hu-er Ran saluted and responded, "Yes! Leader!"

Yue Zhong brought Bi Lù and the treant army, together with Hu-er Ran and his 3,000 Grey Wolf Riders as they made for Changming County.

Changming County was a small place that had build up a 6m wall all around it. There were multiple machine guns placed on top of the walls, ready to defend itself. All sorts of wires and traps had been set up around the wall, over a wide piece of barren land that had obviously been cleared, creating an open field.

When Yue Zhong arrived, he saw a corpse that had its ears, nose and hands sliced off, while its chest was stuck to the wall with multiple stakes.

He saw the corpse and his heart was instantly filled with fury, his face turning ugly. This was the envoy that he had sent to Changming County.

Hu-er Ran came to Yue Zhong and spoke lowly, "The leader of this place is called Huyan Xiong'er, and he is a peak-level Han expert. There're a total of 10,000 survivors within, and 1,000 soldiers. They're his Tiger Leopard Riders. Each of them are Enhancers of at least level 10 and above, their strength is not weak."

The killing intent in Yue Zhong's eyes flashed as he ordered, "I want the heads of Huyan Xiong'er and his men. Go get them for me!"

A strange glint appeared in Hu-er Ran's eyes, "Yes! Leader!! Your subordinate obeys!"

Hu-er Ran knew it was a time for him to shine, if his performance was subpar, then Yue Zhong would definitely send him away to live his days out peacefully.

"Come with me!!" Hu-er Ran summoned 40 experts that had been part of the Qie Xue Army as they made their way closer towards

Changming County.

The soldiers of Changming County quickly discovered Hu-er Ran and his men, and began to fire.

One of the experts beside Hu-er Ran then conjured up a psy barrier, blocking the bullets from landing.

Another summoned out a huge bear of 3m, which braved the bullets and charged for the entrance.

Hong! Hong!

Following some loud explosions, the huge bear was enveloped by the powerful landmines buried, blasting one of its leg off. It still continued its ferocious charge, setting off all the landmines before it disappeared fully.

Hu-er Ran came to the entrance and cast his abilities, his Blood Dou Qi covering his frame. With a loud roar, he kicked off the ground, immediately leaping up 6m, his silver curved blade slashing out and killing 3 soldiers on top.

Another 6 Agility-based Enhancers also leaped up beside Hu-er Ran, their own blades flashing out as they slaughtered the defending soldiers of Changming County.

At this time, Huyan Xiong'er, who was a huge man with a broad back and thick frame appeared together with some experts, his face full of disbelief as he asked, "Hu-er Ran!! How come it's you?! Weren't you fighting with Yue Zhong? I thought our aim was the same? How come you're here attacking?"

Huyan Xiong'er had killed Yue Zhong's envoy thinking that Hu-er Ran was still fighting with him.

Chapter 658: Dog Hu-er Ran!

Hu-er Ran had a cold look, and he shot towards Huyan Xiong'er, a flash of his blade as it slashed out. All the soldiers that stood between them were instantly sliced in half.

"Hu-er Ran, don't tell me you have become Yue Zhong's dog?!" Huyan Xiong'er sneered as his face fell, "The mighty Mongol King had actually been degraded to a Han's dog, if your ancestor Genghis Khan were to know, he would crawl out from his grave to teach you a lesson!"

Facing the sarcasm of Huyan Xiong'er, Hu-er Ran's icy killing intent turned stronger, and he immediately appeared beside the guards of Huyan Xiong'er with a boom, slashing down at the Level 50 Enhancer.

Shock was written all over the face of the Level 50 Enhancer as he brought his arms and a cleaver up to defend himself.

Hu-er Ran's Blood Dou Qi intensified, and his body constitution was enhanced further. The silver curved blade came slashing down, and slashed through the cleaver, before continuing through his body, slicing him into two.

Huyan Xiong'er could not help but exclaim in shock, "Zhang He!!"

Zhang He was the strongest expert by Huyan Xiong'er's side, and such an expert was actually killed in a single strike by Hu-er Ran, causing all of the soldiers present to fully understand the might of this Mongolian King.

Hu-er Ran had burst forth with a powerful strength, and he continued the onslaught, killing the rest of the Enhancers around Huyan Xiong'er.

Peng! Peng!!

An Enhancer with the Firearms Manipulation Specialization skill began to fire at Hu-er Ran. His accuracy was incredible, and a

number of bullets actually struck Hu-er Ran, only to bounce off due to the defense of his Type 3 Mutant Beast hide.

Huyan Xiong'er's face turned pale as he shouted, "Kill him!! All of you, charge!! He's alone! As long as we kill him, I'll allow you guys to enjoy yourselves with the women in the Leopard Garden. I will allow you guys to even choose 10 women each!!"

When they heard it, the Enhancers immediately became excited and charged towards Hu-er Ran. The women in the Leopard Garden were beautiful women that Huyan Xiong-er had collected from everywhere. It was not usually accessible, and only those who had contributed to Huyan Xiong'er's cause were allowed in once or twice. Hearing that he would open it to them, they became incredibly motivated.

There were 40 Enhancers by Huyan Xiong'er's side, and they were at least Level 30 and above. Each of them possessed different skills, and were the core fighting strength of Huyan Xiong'er's force. There were 2 Evolvers among them as well. Being surrounded by so many experts, even a high level Evolver might die.

Facing the assault of these many experts, there were some even muttering their chants for their curses and magic spells, Hu-er Ran's eyes turned red and he immediately unleashed his Lion's Roar. He took a deep breath and roared out loud, as a powerful shockwave blasted out with him in the center.

In an instant, the numerous Agility and Strength-based Enhancers were forced to their knees. The Spirit-based Enhancers crumpled, their eardrums shattered, as blood flowed. Their brains had suffered a massive concussion, and many began to convulse.

Only some who had a body constitution 10 times stronger than ordinary people stood their ground, their complexions pale, with shock in their eyes.

With a single roar, Hu-er Ran had incapacitated so many of his

enemies.

His own face also flushed, as his gaze turned savage and he charged towards Huyan Xiong'er.

Huyan Xiong'er watched in horror and regret as Hu-er Ran came closer, and tried to retreat as he shouted, "Hu-er Ran, don't kill me. I'm willing to join hands with you and fight Yue Zhong together! That's right! The Leopard Garden, all the women, they're all yours, please spare my dog life!!"

Huyan Xiong'er was also a Strength-based Evolver whose level had reached 56. The moment he saw the numerous experts he had painstakingly gathered falling at Hu-er Ran's hands, he had lost his fighting will instantly.

Those who had remained standing had long since fled. No matter how beautiful the women that were promised, one had to be alive to enjoy such pleasures. These men weren't willing to sacrifice themselves.

"No need! Give me your head!!" Hu-er Ran's eyes flashed with a ferocious glint as he brought his blade down towards Huyan Xiong'er.

"NO!!!!" His eyes flashed with regret and unwillingness before his entire body was split in two.

Hu-er Ran then grabbed his head and ran to the top of the wall, roaring, "Huyan Xiong'er is dead!! His head is here!! Those who surrender will be spared!!"

"Huyan Xiong'er is dead!! Those who surrender will be spared!!"

"Those who surrender will be spared!!"

"..."

The sounds reverberated from the city wall, causing every militant to look up. The moment they saw the decapitated head of Huyan Xiong'er, many began to flee, with some instantly throwing

their weapons down and surrendering.

Huyan Xiong'er's governance wasn't the best within these city walls, with his death, there weren't many who were willing to continue fighting for him.

"Leader!! This is Huyan Xiong'er's head!" Hu-er Ran brought the head and presented it to Yue Zhong respectfully.

Yue Zhong eyed the head and responded coolly, "En, throw it into the corpse vehicle!"

Since Bi Lü's mother tree required a large amount of corpses and bodies to regrow, Yue Zhong had collected the bodies of the enemies he killed, together with the zombies and threw them for the tree to absorb and grow.

Hu-er Ran looked at the hundreds of soldiers that were rounded up and his eyes flashed, "Leader, these are all Huyan Xiong'er's men. They had surrendered, do we still kill them?"

The gazes of the soldiers all fell on Yue Zhong, awaiting his judgment fearfully.

Yue Zhong turned to them and ordered coldly, "Those who took part in the killing of my envoy will be executed. The rest will be sent to the Scum Battalion."

Ordinarily, Yue Zhong was easy on those who surrendered. However, this particular group had dared kill his envoy, and it was an insult to him. If he didn't punish them heavily, the rest of the factions out in the Central Plains would try the same thing.

"No! Leader, I was forced!! I've already surrendered! You can't kill me!! Please!!" One Enhancer immediately stood up and screamed in fear.

Yue Zhong frowned, waving his hands as the Stinger appeared. There was a flash of the muzzle, and the Enhancer's head was blasted apart, with red and white matter splattering all over the ground.

Seeing Yue Zhong taking out that Enhancer with no hesitation, the expressions of the rest of the militants fell.

7 of them immediately activated their transformation skills, but just as they did so, they were instantly riddled with bullets all around.

Yue Zhong eyed the rest of the militants coolly, his killing intent billowing out, "Resistance will be met with death!"

Despair was written all over the faces of the rest of the militants, as they watched their comrades slaughtered helplessly. No one dared to move.

Hu-er Ran saw Yue Zhong killing 8 of them in total and his brows furrowed slightly, but he did not do anything and stood obediently by one side.

As the men who took part in the killing of Yue Zhong's envoy were dragged out, and executed one by one, the gory scene struck fear in the rest of their hearts.

There were over 10,000 survivors in this encampment, however, because of Huyan Xiong'er's tyrannical rule, most of them were emaciated and could not march for long. Yue Zhong had no choice but to deploy a battalion of soldiers to set up camp and defend here.

The news of Huyan Xiong'er being slaughtered as well as Hu-er Ran selling himself to Yue Zhong soon spread throughout the Central Plains. The rest of the factions heard it and their hearts turned cold. They were living it up in their own bases, and weren't willing to surrender to Yue Zhong to be ordered around, however, many more began to take the initiative in surrendering.

With a single order, most of the factions did not dare resist. Otherwise, he would instantly deploy troops to meet them head-on, killing any leader who resisted, and throwing the soldiers into the Scum Battalion as cannon fodder.

The Mongol King Hu-er Ran, Blood Slaughterer Lie Ming Yi, Victorious Troops Li Guang, the 3 of them led their own forces heading to the various factions that did not want to submit, wiping out the command, and taking over the survivors and resources.

Under this new regime, those who weren't willing to submit had no choice but to flee further northeast. There were greater numbers there as it was closer to the cities, but at the same time, the danger of the zombies was greater. Yue Zhong's forces had no way of contending with those parts.

Chapter 659: Reorganizing Troops!

With the efforts of Hu-er Ran, Lie Ming Yi and Li Guang, many survivors were soon drafted into Yue Zhong's faction. Adding the various races from the Huangjin Clan, the total number of survivors under him soon swelled to 600,000.

Yue Zhong then arranged for a number of officials that had already gone through training at Guang Xi and Hunan to come over and established a government. It marked the beginning of a proper development, and he did not rush the advance towards the city, instead choosing to re-establish stability and some semblance of society.

After all, there were already over 20 million zombies out here in the Central Plains, the capital was sure to exceed that number. Furthermore, population was denser in the cities, it was going to be incredibly tough to charge in.

The troops under Hu-er Ran, Lie Ming Yi and Li Guang did not exceed 30,000. If a force of such size were to engage 20 million zombies without guns and cannons, it was basically impossible.

After conquering a number of small counties, Yue Zhong then deployed over some military architects to begin development into military factories.

After obtaining the Evolving Temple, Yue Zhong had begun to understand the important and might of it. The strongest benefit was the ability of churning out various talents now. Of course, most of them were at most equivalent to ordinary engineers from before the apocalypse, and did not possess high talents nor capabilities in the field. However, it wasn't a problem manufacturing ammunition and production lines.

The reason behind the quick rise of the Kingdom of God was due to their natural talents. Other than Europe possessing the most advanced technological research institutes, they were the first to

obtain a Novice Village.

Many survivors joined the different factories and production lines, and Yue Zhong distributed amounts of food as wage, greatly boosting the survivability of the people in the Central Plains.

Everyday, the strength of Yue Zhong's faction was slowly rising and expanding.

With the stabilizing of the survivors, Yue Zhong thus called back the 3 troops to begin a reorganization of his troops.

Slaughterer Lie Ming Yi had gained the role that he always wanted, a Brigadier General in charge of over 3,000 riders.

Li Guang became the Regiment Commander of the Central Plains 1st Regiment, with the Victorious Troops as the core troops.

Situ Jin was thus drafted as the Brigade Commander of the Logistics Brigade, sending support whenever required.

The 3rd Brigade was the Grey Wolf Riders under Hu-er Ran. They also only had 3,000 and were made up of the Grey Wolf Riders. The vice-commander was Lian Da Zhong, who was a coward and slightly despicable. However, his natural affinity with people made him an important person to talk to the various Mongolian leaders. In addition to his past merits, Yue Zhong had thus conferred upon him that role.

After the reorganization, the number of soldiers under Hu-er Ran was reduced to 3,000, and these men were all using cleavers and other melee weapons. Only 500 of them had some .81 rifles, type 56 as well as ancient firearms. The ammunition was also limited to about 5,000 of them. There were no other heavy firearms. Under such circumstances, if they were to revolt, there would only be death.

When Hu-er Ran took over the reorganized troops and weapons, he chuckled bitterly and was speechless. He knew clearly that Yue Zhong was using him, at the same time, guarding himself. He

dared not say anything, because he knew that should he make any strange movements, Yue Zhong would immediately clamp down on him and his troops.

Once all that was down, the over 10,000 elite Mongolian riders were separated. Yue Zhong wasn't willing to send them to the factories to work, and after consideration, he decided to set up a reinforcement troops handled by Bai Xiao Sheng.

Bai Xiao Sheng had followed Yue Zhong for a long time, and knew his style. He was just inherently lazy and unwilling to lead, however, he was more than equipped to train this troop. Under Yue Zhong's instructions, he could only carry out his task bitterly as the Brigade Commander of the 2nd Support Troops, a position which many coveted.

Outside of Qi Mu Town, 8 soldiers wielding guns stood at a secretive location.

An armored vehicle drew close and came to a stop. The doors opened, and Yue Zhong and Yin Shuang stepped out.

"Leader!" The 8 soldiers immediately saluted, their gazes filled with respect. This man had led them to many victories in the Central Plain, and expanded their control. It was truly an undefeatable force. This caused them to feel respect for this man.

Yue Zhong nodded slightly, and stepped into the garden.

Inside the garden, there were many sentries located everywhere, with multiple heavy machine guns set up. At the same time, under the shade of some dense foliage, there were a few machine gun-mounted vehicles and anti-air defense vehicles.

Yue Zhong had obtained plenty of military equipment after the Ulan Mountain expedition, and this was one of his trump cards. There were plenty of land-to-air missile launchers. Even if Thunder Fighters were to come, he would give the enemy some degree of pain.

At the deepest part of the garden, there was a tall, towering tree growing. All around the tree, man-eating Mutant Flowers and vines grew everywhere. This was the Mutant Mother Tree that he had brought out of Ulan Mountain Range. However, compared to the huge tree he saw that time, this was still far from it.

The Mutant flora ecosystem of the apocalypse was vastly different from the past, as long as there was enough nutrients, they could swell up quickly. Initially, the mother tree only had its core heart, but after the nourishment of countless corpses and zombies brought by Yue Zhong, it had swiftly grown.

On one of the branches, Bi Lǚ sat with her feet dangling, eyeing the tree with a huge smile.

Yue Zhong looked at her and called out, "Come on down, Bi Lǚ!"

Although Yue Zhong had given his word and moved the Mutant Tree out here, he had prepared plenty of safeguards, burying countless explosives all around. The moment the tree had any strange ideas, he could remotely detonate the explosives, blowing the tree up.

Bi Lǚ came down with a warm smile, "Yes! Master!"

Yue Zhong asked, "How long till the Mother Tree can start producing more Treants?"

Bi Lǚ replied, "It can start producing them already, however, to produce high-level ones, it will still require much more fertilizer. The Treants it may produce now won't be too strong, at most about Level 20 or so, and a maximum of 1,000 of them."

Yue Zhong frowned and asked, "Fertilizer? Will corpses work?"

Bi Lǚ replied, "Yes! The higher the level, the stronger the effect."

Yue Zhong then continued, "If that's the case, immediately get the Mother Tree to produce a thousand Treants first. I'm in need of them."

"Yes!" Bi Lǚ then shut her eyes as a green radiance shone out of her, enveloping the mother tree.

The mother tree shuddered slightly, and countless fruits began to drop onto the ground, as low-level Treants climbed out of the shapes, their strength about Level 20.

Yue Zhong eyed these Treants and smiled. With these Treants as cannon fodder, his human soldiers would suffer less casualties.

Not long after, under Yue Zhong's orders, Hu-er Ran, Lie Ming Yi and Li Guang led 3,000 riders and shot for a small city that had 70,000 zombies.

Lie Ming Yi roared out to drum up morale, "Attack!! Attack!! Our riders are the sharpest blades that our Leader has trained! We are invincible and we must conquer the city without fail!"

"Attack! Attack!!" The soldiers under Lie Ming Yi responded with equally passionate yells. This was the first battle they were taking part in after forming this brigade, and as long as they gained enough merit, they would be upgraded to a regiment.

On the other side, Li Guang also rose the morale of his troops, "Brothers! Our 1st Regiment is the strongest weapon of our Leader! We are the strongest!! This battle, we must let the rest witness our strength! We can't lose to the 3rd Brigade!! Our 1st Regiment MUST WIN!!"

"WIN!! WIN!!"

The excited roars resounded throughout the area. This Victorious Troops were the most elite soldiers before the reorganization, and had defeated countless Manchurian and Mongolian soldiers. They had reached a peak, and were unafraid of death, nor was defeat on their mind.

Hu-er Ran turned to his soldiers and hollered, "This is the chance for us to gain merit! Our Mongolian men are all heroes! Let them see, even if we have a disadvantage in equipment, we're still

stronger!!"

Right at this time, Lian Da Zhong chipped in with a smile, "That's right!! Our 3rd Regiment will definitely gain a stronger foothold with the leadership of our commander!! Commander, LONG LIVE!! Everyone, shout with me!! Glorious commander, long live!!!"

"Commander long live!!"

"Commander long live!!"

"..."

The soldiers exchanged looks, in the end, joining in the roars as Hu-er Ran looked on helplessly.

Chapter 660: The Strange Movement of 4 Million Zombies!

Under the lead of the 3 leaders, the 3 units charged forth with a total of 16,000 soldiers, as they joined forces to assault the city.

With such coordination, the small city was soon conquered, and the 70,000 zombies were quickly wiped out. The soldiers even discovered 200 emaciated survivors hiding out at different corners of the city.

When humans were forced to the edge, they could show incredible tenacity. These people were actually able to survive under the harshest of conditions.

After resting, the 3 units continued to launch attacks on the other surrounding counties.

Yue Zhong had only deployed the 3 units for the sake of training the troops.

As they continued to kill the zombies, they were forged through the flames of battle and grew in experience. With each battle, they became more confident and cleared out more counties.

The relentless assaults continued on, and as each county was conquered, they uncovered plenty of resources and rescued many survivors.

Other than them, Yue Zhong even sent out Tenpyo Saka, Yin Shuang, Zhuo Ya Tong and Bi Lǔ as they led the Treant army to attack other territories.

Ji Qing Wu had led 8 Youth Guards as well as the reinforcement troops to gain levels in the various towns and counties. Yue Zhong intended to raise up a large number of Enhancers, and thus, he could only delegate Ji Qing Wu to go help a bunch of ordinary soldiers become Enhancers.

With her supervision, there were a huge number of Enhancers of about Level 10 being churned out everyday. These were then deployed to the battlefield to join the other troops.

After all, the soldiers under Lie Ming Yi, Hu-er Ran and Li Guang were also human, and would feel tired. They needed to rest.

As for the Treant army, it was different, and they continued to smash through city after city, and leaving instantly. The corpses were then transported back to nourish the mother tree and the wheat plant.

When the wheat trees consumed enough zombies, they could produce large amount of rice, whereas the Mother Tree could churn out countless low level Treants to send to the battlefield.

Everyday, Yue Zhong's faction was growing stronger out here in the Central Plains.

When he called for the assault on the zombies, Yue Zhong had stayed put in the central base and not roam about. Without him, it was hard to direct the various aspects of his plans.

Should things turn awry, only Yue Zhong himself could quell the situation. If he were to disappear, then the large-scale attacks on the towns and cities would have to stop.

On this day, one officer came up to Yue Zhong with a grave expression, reporting, "Leader!! Baoxi City's zombies had started moving!! The 2 million of them had left the city and is marching towards Bayan City. The zombies there have also acted strangely, leaving their own and marching towards Baoxi City."

"What? It seems that the two groups are converging?" Yue Zhong's face fell and he quickly made for the command center.

Yue Zhong quickly came to the command post, and pulled up the image. He had obtained quite a number of observatory equipment as well as unmanned reconnaissance drones.

Through the pictures, Yue Zhong could ascertain that the 2

groups of zombies were marching towards a single location.

His expression turned incredibly ugly.

When the number of zombies reached above a million, it will be a sizeable force. If these 2 groups of 2 million zombies were to converge, even the Kingdom of God would have a hard time dealing with them.

Yue Zhong watched the moving zombies with furrowed brows and gave the order, "Convey my command, get the 1st Regiment, 2nd Rider Brigade, 3rd Brigade to all retreat. Have the 1st and 2nd Support Brigade prepared for battle. All resting activities are to be put on hold. From now on, martial law is in effect, and all factories are to extend their hours from 10 hours to 12..."

Under the many orders, the troops of the Central Plains began to move. The 3 main forces turned back from their areas, and began to converge at Mu Yuan County, which was the first line of defence.

About 100,000 survivors were deployed to the town to prepare fortifications and defensive constructs, while resources were transported to the frontlines.

The unmanned drones were also deployed out to keep watch over the 2 groups of zombies.

Yue Zhong watched the vast sea of zombies and muttered, "If only they could fight each other!!"

The 2 masses of zombies were too fearsome. The 4 million number alone was enough to fill anyone with despair. Even army forces from before the apocalypse would feel a headache when dealing with 4 million freaks.

After marching for 2 days, the zombies finally converged.

The 2 groups did not engage in a clash as Yue Zhong had hoped for, instead, coming to a silent stop.

"What's going on?" Yue Zhong watched with his frown deepening, as a bad feeling arose.

At one particular corner, where the drones could not capture, a tentacle with a huge head with sharp teeth slithered and opened its huge jaws as it burrowed into the body of a Z2. With a huge breath, it began to suck, turning the Z2 into a dried corpse.

After that, the strange zombie continued to pierce another 2 Z2s and absorbed their body fluids.

It then let out a satisfied howl.

Hearing that howl, the various Z2s and Z1s trembled and returned to the zombie horde.

The strange snake-like zombie with a huge head blinked, its eyes flashing with a human-like intelligence. It seemed to ponder for awhile, before burrowing into the chest of a large L4.

Soon after, the 4 million zombies began to move, towards the direction of Bayan City.

Yue Zhong watched and his expression turned bad, "Not good! They didn't fight!! Convey my orders, get the 1st Regiment, 2nd Brigade and 3rd Brigade to fire at will! Use whatever necessary to whittle away at their numbers!!"

Chapter 661: Snipe!

The moment Yue Zhong gave the order, all 3 troops rushed for the frontlines.

"So many zombies!!" Lie Ming Yi rode a Black Scaled Stallion, leading his 3,000 men, quickly locating the zombies. He watched them swarm, and his face turned pale.

A million of them was already a sight to behold, seeing the 4 million zombies felt as though they were facing a sea, and there was nothing that could stop them.

It didn't matter how strong a person was, charging headlong into this horde was equivalent to suicide.

Facing such a huge zombie horde, accurate soldiers were more efficient than a single Enhancer.

Lie Ming Yi surveyed the horde before pointing and giving an order, "Charge!!"

The 3,000 soldiers swiftly readied their guns and began firing.

The dense rain of bullets enveloped a large patch of zombies, causing them to fall.

However, the swarm of zombies immediately turned to face them, making their way to surround them.

"Retreat!" After a few rounds, Lie Ming Yi waved his hands and called for his troops to retreat quickly.

After retreating a certain distance, the 2nd Brigade quickly pulled away from the zombies with their superior speed. They then turned around to continue firing, killing huge patches of zombies.

Lie Ming Yi's 2nd Brigade was filled with 300 Enhancers that had changed their jobs to become Soldiers, and they were specially trained to reach Level 30, with their Gun Manipulation Skills at Level 3. Even on horseback, they could achieve headshots.

Under his hit-and-run tactic, Lie Ming Yi and his men quickly disposed of a huge number of zombies, without suffering a single casualty.

On the other side, the 1st Regiment charged forth with its armored battalion, bringing 20 tanks, 20 IFVs, 60 machine gun-mounted vehicles and fired wildly at the zombie horde. The dense rain of heavy fire fell upon the zombies, blasting many of them into pieces. Of course, it came at a price, that was the quick expenditure of ammunition.

In front of the large zombie horde, the armored battalion had no choice but to retreat when the zombies got close as well. After all, there were Devourers, L3s and L4s, the moment the tanks charged right into the horde, those terrifying evolved zombies could demolish them.

Every single tank and armored vehicle was a powerful weapon against the zombies, and naturally could not be destroyed. Yue Zhong's current production was not enough to support any manufacturing of tanks or armored vehicles.

"What a large zombie horde!!" Hu-er Ran had also reached the frontlines with his 3,000 Grey Wolf Riders, his expression similarly ugly when he caught sight of the zombies.

He turned around and saw his soldiers, each of them holding a rifle, and heaved a sigh of relief. If they didn't have guns, his 3,000 men would definitely be swallowed up if they charged at them.

The 4 million number was a terrifying figure, Yue Zhong had to utilize every single thing on hand. He could not afford to care about Hu-er Ran's craftiness, and decided to arm them. However, the 1st Regiment and 2nd Brigade were equipped with the more advanced stuff, while the 3rd Brigade was equipped with the older weapons.

Although they had all been equipped with weapons, there were too many types, from different places, and they had no choice but

to try and use them.

Lian Da Zhong looked at the zombie horde, his face pale, "Let's just try our best, then we should quickly scatter eh?"

The sight of those zombies truly spooked him. He was a coward, and he couldn't muster his will to fight.

Hu-er Ran's eyes flashed as he spoke solemnly, "No way! This battle concerns the future of my 3rd Brigade. We have to do our best!"

He knew that Yue Zhong had kept him because he had use for him. The moment he showed that his value had decreased, he would be sent far away, never to return to the Central Plains. This 3rd Brigade that was made up almost of all Mongolians would be scattered and reorganized as well.

By now, the entire Central Plains was already in Yue Zhong's hands, Hu-er Ran had no way of revolting. A single order from Yue Zhong could put him to death. Unless he was willing to abandon all his subordinates, family and loved ones to flee.

Hu-er Ran glanced at his men, raising his silver curved blade high and roared, "3rd Brigade, aim for victory!!"

"3rd Brigade, aim for victory!!"

"3rd Brigade, aim for victory!!"

"..."

When the soldiers saw Hu-er Ran roaring so passionately, their hearts were filled with valor and loyalty to him. These were all his elite soldiers.

"3rd Brigade, forwards!! Attacke!!" Hu-er Ran pointed his curved blade at the zombies and roared.

Under his lead, the 3,000 riders charged for the zombies. They were like an arrow that reached about 100m away from the zombies quickly, pulling out their weapons and firing at the

zombies.

As the bullets and arrows fell, many of the zombies were killed, and they were trampled by the others behind.

As the zombies pushed closer, Hu-er Ran's men then quickly pulled back and retreated a distance before continuing once more.

The 3 units continued to whittle away at the huge zombie horde, culling a large number of them every second. However, the rate was almost negligible, as the horde still continued towards their target.

Within one of the L4s inside the horde, the huge mutant tentacle-like zombie watched coldly as the rest of the zombies were slaughtered one by one.

Within the horde, a number of Devourers were gobbling up those zombies that had been taken out by Yue Zhong's units.

A horde that was 4 million strong was simply too terrifying. After fighting for 4 days, the 3 units were able to chip away at their numbers, killing 600,000 of them, but they had to retreat to rest. After all, there was a limit to how much humans could do. Fighting long battles would wear them out.

The zombie horde might have lost 600,000 of their numbers, but their speed wasn't impeded in the slightest as they entered Bayan City.

Soon, they entered the city and began to continue towards the direction of Yinzhou City.

"Are they intending to converge with the zombies there?" Yue Zhong used the unmanned drones to watch the movement, growing suspicious.

Yinzhou City was a large place in the Central Plains, and had over 2 million population in the past. If the 3 million zombies were to meet those, the total number would swell to hit almost 6 million.

Yue Zhong had sent out his 3 units, expending energy and ammunition over the span of 4 days, managing to kill about 600,000 of them. Most of them were ordinary zombies. Once the remaining met those in Yinzhou City, their numbers would truly be undefeatable.

"No! I can't let those 2 groups meet!!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a resoluteness, and quickly gave a flurry of orders.

As he gave his orders, the 1st Regiment in Mu Yuan County deployed their motorized infantry unit to launch an attack at the 3 million of them.

The Mongolian Troops were also quickly equipped with even more weapons, as they relied on their riding skills to take on the zombies.

As the battle became even more intense, more zombies were being killed. From time to time, some of the zombies would retaliate, and the evolved zombies amongst them would manage to kill some soldiers.

Yue Zhong even sent out a huge force of snipers to snipe them, but the horde continued on its slow march.

Ning Yue Gorge was an important channel located on the way towards Yinzhou City. Yue Zhong had already deployed the Infantry Brigade of the 1st Regiment as well as Hu-er Ran's 3rd Brigade to take up their stand here.

After utilizing so many means, and killing such a large number of zombies, they had not done anything that could slow the march of the horde.

Ning Yue Gorge was too important a channel, the moment they got past, the zombies in the nearby cities would join up and fill up their ranks.

Yue Zhong was clear that his troops might be able to kill a million zombie with their powerful firepower, but these were ordinary

zombies, the true elites within the horde had not been dealt with yet. He wasn't willing to see the 3 million of them joining with the 2 million in Yinzhou City.

Yue Zhong's troops had no way of retreating now, the moment they abandoned the Ning Yue Gorge, the 3 million zombies would quickly converge with the other 2 million. His troops had already expended so much effort to wipe out a million, and it would go all to waste.

Beyond Ning Yue Gorge, the 30,000 survivors were currently setting traps and preparing trenches all around the gorge, from afar, it looked like many ants were scurrying about.

"They're here!!" Li Guang stood at a vantage point, watching the distance with a cold look.

At a distance, the ant-like zombies continued to move, and with the passing of time, their numbers grew over the horizon, appearing in the sights of the survivors.

Seeing the approaching lifeless corpses with blank eyes and hole-riddled bodies, with a heavy stench, the survivors felt their skin crawl, and started to panic.

Chapter 662: Zombie with Art of War!

Zombies were terrifying, with their high infection rate, and the virus with no cure. Survivors who had not experienced fighting with them would feel the crippling fear, and did not dare face them.

"Let the workers retreat!" Li Guang waved his hands and ordered.

With that, the 30,000 survivors quickly made their way back.

The vast sea of zombies continued to shamble forwards, in a short while, they got closer to Ning Yue Gorge.

The many traps and structures laid by the survivors began to exhibit their usefulness.

As the zombies continued to march on, all of a sudden, there was a split of the ground, as a trench of about 3m-deep and 20m-wide appeared. Many zombies fell into it, and the zombies behind them followed after, trampling those beneath into meat paste.

The zombies had no intelligence, just a simple trap like this was extremely effective.

The survivors had prepared this huge pit, which could easily take care of at least thousands of zombies, which would be trampled upon by the zombies behind.

Yue Zhong had used such measures in the past plenty of times, and it had become a powerful tool to utilize.

Many of the zombies continued to fall into the huge trench. The 30,000 survivors had spent 6 days on this after all, and the total number of trenches and pits they had dug were over a thousand.

The sea of zombies had yet to reach the soldiers at Ning Yue Gorge, and already, over 300,000 of them had been lost to the various trenches and ditches. However, these holes were also gradually filled up.

With the corpses of the zombies filling the holes, the rest of the horde continued on their slow march.

After passing through those trenches, the horde came to a number of cement walls of about 1.5m high.

When these ordinary zombies came to these walls, they could not proceed. After all, ordinary zombies did not possess the power to pummel through cement. They could only claw at the walls helplessly.

The zombies behind continued to push forward, and it resulted in a whole load of them squashed together.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

At this time, a number of cannon fire blasted the dense horde of zombies, each volley killing at least dozens of zombies.

The soldiers of Ning Yue Gorge at the frontlines had also raised their weapons and were firing at the zombies, shooting down the zombies that had come to a stop in front of those walls.

The soldiers that had not undergone the job change as soldiers were also firing with all their might, although their efficiency was lesser, only killing about 60% or 70% of the time.

The cement walls had stopped the horde, and the horde retaliated in their own way, as a number of L2s came towards the walls.

L2s were strong monsters and could pummel the cement walls.

Peng! Peng!

The L2 had just gotten close to the walls when 300 snipers hidden from view quickly sniped the L2s.

The L2s could withstand the bullets of normal rifles, but the high-caliber bullets from the sniper rifles were enough to splatter their brains.

As the L2s got close to the walls, they were immediately killed by

the snipers, causing even more of a blockade. Yue Zhong's forces were then able to continue to slaughter the zombies.

Deep within the horde, the Mutant zombie that had a huge head closed its eyes, its mouth twisted in an ugly expression.

The horde suddenly split apart, and 10,000 L2s came charging out carrying H1s.

The H1s opened their mouths and sent large fireballs blasting on the cement walls, destroying them.

"Fire the artillery!!" Li Guang saw that things were turning bad and quickly gave the order.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

The artillery forces from afar began to fire rapidly, sending volleys of heavy fire raining upon the zombies, blasting many of them into pieces. The 10,000 L2s and H1s were incinerated instantly.

For the sake of supporting the battle and Ning Yue Gorge, Yue Zhong had sent out 80% of his artillery forces of the Central Plains. As the ammunition for artillery was precious, Li Guang would also only use it at the most pressing of times.

The 10,000 L2s and H1s were turned into ash, and the mutant zombie within the horde opened its eyes, a murderous look flashing across them. It leapt into the chest of an L4 and urged it back.

Any being with intelligence had a common trait, which was the fear of death. If they weren't scared, Bi Lǔ wouldn't have been subdued so easily. Even Yue Zhong himself was not entirely unafraid of death.

The L4 continued all the way to a secretive location at the back before it stopped. As it retreated, a large number of the ordinary zombies continued to attack Ning Yue Gorge.

Under the blows of the H1, the cement walls on the front lines were blasted into nothing. After a harsh round of firing, the soldiers quickly abandoned their posts and retreated to the secondary defense line.

The army had constructed a number of defences, and Yue Zhong was clear that there was no way for the 1st line to withhold the entire horde.

At the secondary defense, there were a whole bunch of low cement walls as well. The huge sea of zombies were once again held up by the walls, and many of their heads were shot.

After the mutant zombie had escaped to a safe place, the huge sea of zombie abruptly started to retreat.

"What's going on?" Li Guang watched the huge sea of zombies retreat, his eyes flashing with shock, and a bad feeling arose in his heart.

After all, zombies have never been known to retreat, they only knew how to advance and tear into their enemies, or get torn apart by their enemies.

The zombies retreated, and suddenly, 50,000 L2s and 100,000 S2s charged out from their midst, together with 3,000 L3s.

This zombie unit of over 150,000 zombies galloped forward like a sharp knife, making their ways for the 2nd defence line viciously.

"Calling for artillery strike!!" Li Guang watched the appearance of these 150,000 zombies, his face unsightly.

The pressure from these 150,000 evolved zombies was even stronger than a million ordinary zombies.

Against the ordinary zombies, Li Guang could still make use of the various traps to wipe them out. However, against the L2s and L3s, the traps were basically useless. Even the 1.5m-high cement walls could be destroyed in a single punch.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

As the rounds of artillery fire rained upon the 150,000 zombies, a huge number of them were blasted to pieces.

However, even the powerful artillery strike couldn't possibly wipe out all the evolved zombies, many of the L2s managed to evade the heavy fire and charged right through the cement walls.

With their monstrous strength, the L2s and L3s charged right through the army camp, as they started slaughtering the soldiers.

Yue Zhong's soldiers started to engage in close quarter combat, and many were quickly bitten to death or torn apart.

"Beasts!! We can die together!!" One soldier was surrounded by 3 S2s, and as the 3 of them opened their jaws and bit him, he pulled the pin of his grenade.

Hong! Following a loud explosion, the 3 S2s were blasted apart.

"Go to hell!!" One soldier saw an L3 killing his comrade with a single punch and grabbed a bag of explosives, running towards it and igniting it.

With a loud boom, the L3 and the soldier were blasted together.

At every part of the battlefield, many of the soldiers were fighting with their lives.

Unfortunately, the sheer numbers and the sudden assault of the zombies overwhelmed the forces at the 2nd defence line.

The evolved zombies that got through might be only a small portion of the entire sea of zombies, however, they were not a force ordinary soldiers could stand up to.

When the zombies overran the 2nd defence line, they did not rush everywhere, instead allowing the forces behind to fill up, until all 150,000 came in, before continuing for the 3rd defence line.

Such a tactic was truly terrifying. Even if the artillery fire had

taken out about 50,000 zombies, the unit of evolved zombies quickly managed to destroy the 3rd defence line, and killed about 100 soldiers that were retreating.

With such a strategy, the evolved zombies continued to wreak havoc on Yue Zhong's army, and the casualty count soon reached 500.

Losing 500 comrades dealt a huge blow to the morale of Yue Zhong's troops. They were humans, and not zombies. The force that had been stationed numbered 6,000. Losing 500 was 1/12 of their forces. Unfortunately, the vast sea of zombies seemed indomitable, and their morale dipped lower.

Li Guang heard the reports coming from the frontlines, his expression becoming unsightly, "Damn it!! What do we do? Should we retreat?"

One officer came up to him and said, "Regiment Commander, why don't we retreat first?"

Li Guang frowned, as he considered his suggestion seriously, the life and death of 5,000 soldiers riding on his shoulder weighed heavily. This was the pressure of being a commander.

"We're not retreating!!" Just then, a voice resounded from the door.

Li Guang lifted his head, his eyes flashing with excitement, "Leader, you're here!!!"

Chapter 663: Yue Zhong arrives personally!

The might of the Laser Gun!

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a solemn look, "That's right! I'm here! I will go to fight together with you guys on the frontlines. From now on, we definitely must not retreat a single step!"

"Yes!" Li Guang's heart shuddered, as he quickly passed the order.

"Leader is here!!"

"Leader Yue Zhong is here!!"

"We'll definitely win!! We'll definitely win!!"

"..."

Yue Zhong's arrival soon spread through the entire battlefield, and the soldiers on the frontlines instantly cheered in a resounding roar, and their morale instantly skyrocketed.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Round after round of artillery fire rained down upon those evolved zombies, blasting them into pieces. Zhuo Ya Tong wore a black leather suit and brought a heavy mace that weighed at least a few hundred kgs and was about 3m long, charging to the frontlines with a few Evolvers and began to mash the evolved zombies.

The situation had seemed dire, until Yue Zhong appeared, and the tide suddenly turned. The soldiers were filled with a renewed confidence, a certainty that they would win this battle purely because of Yue Zhong.

"Yue Zhong! This man is really too fearsome!" Hu-er Ran watched as the moment Yue Zhong appeared, and the morale as well as the combat intensity of the soldiers began to skyrocket, as a complicated look appeared in his eyes.

Having won battle after battle, Yue Zhong's troops were basically

convinced that Yue Zhong was a war god, as long as he appeared, victory was sure to be theirs.

When Lian Da Zhong heard the news of Yue Zhong's arrival, even he heaved a sigh of relief and chuckled, "The leader is here! We're sure to win!"

Hu-er Ran glanced at him, and back at his own subordinates, and noticed that even his generals and soldiers had relaxed considerably.

Li Guang saw that the situation was stabilizing and asked, "Leader! Why do we have to stand our ground here? If we continue fighting here, we will definitely suffer!"

Yue Zhong's expression was grave as he replied, "We have discovered that there're many evolved zombies here. Based on the intelligence and conjecture, those evolved zombies can consume the dead zombies to evolve further. If we fight and retreat, although we can destroy the ordinary zombies, it will result in even more evolved ones. If we retreat all the way, at the end, we might even have to face over a million Type 2 Evolved zombies."

Li Guang's face fell and gasped, "What?!"

The terror of the evolved zombies had been etched deep in Li Guang's mind after the battle today, they were simply on another level.

If they had to deal with a million ordinary zombies, just cement walls and traps were enough to block them, leaving the soldiers to pick them off slowly.

However, just 150,000 of them were enough to charge through a rain of heavy artillery, and smash through the various obstructions and traps, decimating many of the soldiers.

A million evolved zombies were much more terrifying than 4 million ordinary zombies.

150,000 of those Type 2 evolved zombies were enough to give Li

Guang a huge headache. If he had to face a million of them, it was sure to be a disaster.

After all, other than the high level Enhancers, none of the ordinary soldiers could take on any Type 2 evolved zombies in close combat.

Hearing Yue Zhong's words, no one dared to insist on retreating. That would only give the zombies opportunities to evolve.

Under the joint attacks of the artillery and the special forces led by Zhuo Ya Tong, as well as the support of the various structures, Yue Zhong's forces forcefully held their positions and defended the place.

As Yue Zhong's army slowly left, a huge number of zombies were gobbling up the corpses of their fallen comrades, including the flesh of the evolved zombies. Amongst them, there were even a number of Devourers.

At this time, 30 assault helicopters suddenly appeared in the horizon, shooting past the vast sea of zombies and releasing countless napalm bombs.

The moment the incendiary explosives landed on the ground, they exploded and turned into a huge sea of flames, enveloping the zombies.

The flames raged on, incinerating huge numbers of zombies at once. Those ordinary zombies and evolved zombies that were feasting on their comrades' flesh were burnt to death.

A few hundred Devourers managed to dash away, escaping in various directions. The moment these Devourers were allowed to grow and reach their full potential, they would be terrifying existences at Level 70, which even tanks could not affect.

The speed of the Devourers was shocking, as they weaved in and out of the flames. However, the coverage of the flames was extensive, and even though the Devourers were fast, they were

unable to escape in the end.

The skin of the Devourers could withstand the flames, but their brains could not stop frying under the high temperatures. Their slightly burning corpses slumped to the ground.

When the hundreds of the Devourers were killed, the huge-head Mutant zombie hidden dozens of kilometers away seethed in rage.

The Devourers were one of the strongest evolved zombies at this point, and only an L4 could consume the Devourers. However, in terms of speed, the Devourers surpassed the L4s. 400 Devourers were more than enough to eradicate 40,000 L2s, this was how terrifying they could be.

To any zombie horde, any existences below the L3 could be lost. However, Devourers and Type 3 zombies were hard to come by. They were the core of a horde.

The Devourers had been killed by the napalm bombs, causing the huge-head Mutant zombie to be enraged. It closed its eyes and sent out its consciousness.

Within the horde, a number of L4s led 100,000 L2s and 300,000 S2s, together with 500 Devourers as they charged towards the direction of Ning Yue Gorge.

There were over 60 L4s, each of them towering above 4m, and their strength monstrous. They could easily grab a tank like a toy. If they got close, they could even pummel a tank flat. Furthermore, as long as the cannons of the tanks did not hit their heads, they could only injure the L4s slightly, but not kill them.

Seeing the strange movements of the evolved zombies, many soldiers turned pale.

The projectiles of the heavy firearms only bounced off the L4s, and even grenade launchers could do nothing to them.

"Send an artillery strike to blanket the entire area!!"

Yue Zhong watched the approaching elite horde and ordered coldly.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

With his command, the artillery forces went all out to fire multiple volleys at the hundreds of thousands of evolved zombies.

As the artillery fire rained down, many of the evolved zombies were blasted into bits and pieces. Even so, a substantial number of them managed to rush out, and got closer to the camp, with 7 or 8 L4s leading the way.

A creature like the L4 was enough to charge through a bunch of Evolvers, not only was it impervious to most weapons and bullets, its strength was terrifying, and it had the ability to infect. An entire group of hundreds of Enhancers at Level 30 would not be able to do anything to it. A single L4 could decimate an entire infantry battalion.

Li Guang and the other intelligence officers watched the nearing L4s with pale faces. The moment the L4s reached their camp, they would have no choice but to abandon the place.

Their gazes fell upon Yue Zhong, only to discover he was still calm.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly as he ordered, "2nd Special Forces Battalion, go!"

The moment he gave the order, 500 soldiers rushed out with weapons that were about 1.5m long, the muzzles caliber of about 25mm, and the entire body silver in color.

These 500 soldiers adjusted their weapons to face the L4s and began firing.

A number of white beams shot towards the heads of the L4s, easily penetrating their heads, leaving holes of 25mm diameter.

These guns were the latest products of research under Yue

Zhong's scientists, the ultra high-tech laser guns. With these weapons, the thick armor of the L4s were basically ineffective.

The 500 soldiers had gone through Job Change and were at least Level 30, possessing the Marksmanship skill and enhancing them. They could aim accurately and fire at the heads of the L4s.

As one L4 was fired by those beams, its brain was fried instantly, and it slumped to the ground.

The rest of the L4s suffered similar fates, before even reaching the camp, their heads were pierced by the laser guns and they died.

"Long live!! Long live Leader!!"

"Long live!! Long live Leader Yue Zhong!!"

"..."

Seeing the heads of the L4s pierced through and their corpses slumping to the ground, the entire battlefield erupted in cheers, as the morale reached an all-time high.

Hu-er Ran saw the weapons, his eyes flashing with shock and fear, "Those are laser weapons!! Another form of hi-tech equipment! He could actually produce those?! Truly fearsome!!"

Chapter 664: Cunning Zombie!

The might of the laser weapons was evident to everybody, piercing even the L4s. Hu-er Ran did not think that he could withstand such might as well.

Should he try to rebel, he would have to face 500 of these weapons. He might have the means to resist bullets, but against laser weapons, there was nothing he could do.

With the technology in Yue Zhong's hands, many experts did not dare harbor any more strange thoughts.

Li Guang watched the L4s die and spoke excitedly to Yue Zhong, "Leader!! This is a laser gun!! We hope that the 1st Regiment can get these!!"

If the entire 1st Regiment could get these weapons, their might would increase greatly. Many Mutant Beasts and high level zombies were not afraid of bullets, causing major headaches for the soldiers. If they had these weapons, they could take care of these problems, and ordinary soldiers could also kill evolved zombies.

"The entire regiment? You think these are cabbages?" Yue Zhong chuckled and rebuked him in amusement, "These are the latest developments over at Guang Xi. After all their efforts, they only managed to produce 500 of them. Based on the current manufacturing rate, there's only about 300 each month. Asking for 10,000 right away, you think the rest of the forces aren't asking the same? If it wasn't for the seriousness of the situation, I would not have deployed them here."

The laser gun had been something Yue Zhong insisted on researching. The many Japan researchers and people who went through the scientist Job Change had been thrown into the research, this was how he managed to produce them.

However, even after the success of the research, he still lacked

the necessary equipment and resources. That was why they had only managed to produce 500 laser guns. Furthermore, the usage in this dire situation displayed their effectiveness.

Li Guang had a fawning expression, "Like this! Leader, why don't you leave these 500 with us first. Isn't your next target the capital? As long as we have these 500 laser guns, we can utilize it to reach there faster."

If those 500 laser guns were left with them, they could use them against the L4s. Even Mutant Beasts with powerful defences would no longer be an issue.

Yue Zhong laughed mildly, "I'll consider it. We'll have to see the performance of every unit this time."

Li Guang crossed his hands over his chest, "Leader, rest assured, our 1st Regiment will definitely contribute the most."

Yue Zhong replied with a grin, before turning around to observe the situation.

On the ground, there were artillery fire and the attacks from the assault rifles enveloping the evolved zombies, killing them before they even got close to the defense line.

The tank-like L4s suffered the worst, the laser beams penetrating their heads causing them to slump dead.

The laser guns were concentrated on the L4s, leaving the rest of the evolved zombies open to the cannons and artillery fire, as well as the elite forces led by Zhuo Ya Tong.

The zombies that could actually get through the flames and bombs weren't many, and were easily taken out by Zhuo Ya Tong and her subordinates.

The intense battle continued for over 2 hours, before the horde started to retreat under the command of the huge-head Mutant zombie.

"Not good! This zombie has a strong learning capability." Yue Zhong watched the retreating horde and frowned.

If it was in the past, the zombies would definitely not retreat.

However, they had somehow retreated after realizing they could not penetrate Yue Zhong's defense lines, causing him to be solemn. The commander behind this horde was getting smarter, and seemed to be capable of human-like intelligence.

The smarter the zombie commander, the more dangerous it was for humanity. Yue hong could easily destroy and defeat million-strong hordes was because they were too stupid, and the Z2s were usually cowardly and foolish as well. The Z2s only had a certain degree of intelligence, and could just command a large horde. However, this time round, the commander was obviously much more capable than the Z2s.

Under Yue Zhong's orders, the 30 assault helicopters flew over the horde, dropping napalm bombs everywhere.

The flames quickly spread out and enveloped large patches of the horde, incinerating many of the ordinary and some evolved zombies.

"What a pity! If only I had more heavy fire, these zombies would just be an appetizer." Yue Zhong watched the burning sea of flames, and thought silently.

The hidden mutant zombie eyed the 30 assault helicopters coldly, and burrowed into the L4's chest.

Soon after, the 2,200,000-strong horde began to retreat towards Ba Yan City.

"Long live!! Long live!!"

"..."

Seeing the huge horde retreating, the soldiers all burst out in cheers

The 3 million zombies had given them a pressure they never felt before. The moment the zombies left, they all heaved a sigh of relief.

Hu-er Ran saw the remaining 2.2m zombies leaving, his eyes brightening, "3rd Brigade, chase!!"

Soon, Hu-er Ran led the 3,000 riders of the 3rd Brigade and chased after the retreating zombies, firing at them.

Li Guang watched Hu-er Ran charging out and his brows furrowed, bellowing in anger, "Hu-er Ran that guy really acts fast!! 3rd Platoon, move out!! Don't let those asses from the 3rd Brigade get one over us!"

A thousand-strong motorcycle riders swiftly moved out towards the zombies.

Just as Hu-er Ran and his men were hunting the zombies, all of a sudden, the horde split, and 50 Devourers, 100 S4s, 1,000 S3s and 10,000 S2s charged out. This speedy unit suddenly pounced towards Hu-er Ran's 3rd Brigade.

"Not good!! Retreat!! Retreat!! Hu-er Ran watched as the zombies charged out, his expression falling and he quickly roared.

The 3,000 riders were also elites of the Central Plains, and quickly urged their horses back.

The 100 S4s exploded out with a terrifying speed, many times faster than even the fastest sports car, and they quickly chased up to the 3,000 riders, pulling some of them down, and ripping their throats, before tearing into them.

Soon, over dozens of them had been pulled down from their mounts.

The speed of the S4s was terrifying, and unless they were high level Evolvers, the moment they were caught, they would be ripped apart.

"Beast!! Fucking beast!!" Hu-er Ran immediately caused his body to be covered with his signature blood Dou Qi, and he waved his silver curved blade, slashing the S4s that got close to him into 2. As a peak expert, those S4s still couldn't do much to him.

As he was killing those S4s, the 1,000 S3s and 50 Devourers managed to catch up. Their speed might not be able to match the S4s, but their speed and strength was higher than the Black Scaled Stallions, catching up only in moments.

One of the Devourers leaped atop a rider, opening its huge mouth to bite the rider, tearing his heart out, before absorbing his blood essence.

Another Devourer opened its jaws to spit out a gas of poison, which instantly corroded 6 riders, causing them to fall off their mounts. The black gas covered their bodies, and their flesh started to emit a rotting stench.

One S3 charged right at a rider, pulling him off his mount and tearing into him.

Faced with this sudden assault, the riders of the 3rd Brigade could not help but scream in fear, as they were taken down one by one.

Yue Zhong watched this horror unfold, his expression unsightly, "Fuck!! When did the zombies become so cunning?! They actually know how to utilize their elites to trap our soldiers!!"

Hu-er Ran watched in despair, "It's over! Is our 3rd Brigade going to fall here?"

At this time, the unit of evolved zombies showcased their terrifying nature, surrounding the 3rd Brigade and tearing into the soldiers. If no support came, the entire 3rd Brigade was sure to fall.

Hu-er Ran was clear about Yue Zhong's wariness and caution against him. He had taken the risk to chase after the zombies, and if Yue Zhong did not save him, it wasn't anything unexpected. Hu-

er Ran thought about it, if he was in Yue Zhong's position, he would also let Yue Zhong die. After all, his position amongst the Mongolian riders was too high, exceeding that of Yue Zhong. As long as Hu-er Ran was not dead, many of the Mongolian riders would not be truly loyal to Yue Zhong.

At this time, the sounds of intense machine gun fire came from the skies, raining upon the zombies. There were some cannon rounds as well that blasted the Devourers into pieces.

With the support of the assault helicopters, Hu-er Ran led the remaining 2,100 riders out of their encirclement and fled from the evolved zombies.

Chapter 665: Obtaining Bao Xi City!

The evolved zombies had launched a quick attack, and now, they slowly begun to retreat.

Seeing this, the rest of the troops that had intended to chase were filled with alarm, and did not dare to chase too close. Lie Ming Yi also recalled his troops slightly, following the motorcycle unit of the 1st Regiment. With the support of the assault helicopters, they slowly chipped away at the huge zombie horde.

The Devourers and S4s were considered a precious fighting force amongst the zombies as well, and after that retaliation, they didn't make any more strange movements, allowing Lie Ming Yi's forces to kill the ordinary zombies at the outskirts.

As the soldiers chased, all of a sudden, a force consisting of 20,000 L2s and S2s charged out, while the rest of the horde separated into 4 parts as they made for Lie Ming Yi's forces.

With this sudden movement, Lie Ming Yi and his men felt the pressure, and had no choice but to retreat, while sending troops to take the evolved zombies out. If they did not clear these zombies, their path of retreat would be cut off, and they would suffer on both sides.

The force comprising of the evolved zombies was strong, with their numbers, Lie Ming Yi and his soldiers were outmatched and at a disadvantage. If they were not careful, they could be wiped out.

Without any base, fortifications, traps or the support of other weapons, 50,000 evolved zombies were more than enough to wipe out the forces Yue Zhong had established out here in the Central Plains. After all, humans could not stand against evolved zombies.

"The zombie commander is really learning!" Yue Zhong watched the tactics of the evolved zombies, and his brows furrowed.

Yue Zhong had experience facing the Z1s and Z2s. They could at most just gather the scattered zombies, and would only command them to use their numbers to overwhelm a target. There were no strategies or tactics involved. A horde of this size was already terrifying, once they learnt to utilize war tactics, the threat level would heightened.

The moment the zombie horde split into 4, it was difficult to eradicate them completely. Lie Ming Yi led the 2nd Brigade towards the backup sent by the 1st Regiment, with 20 tanks taking the lead, as they fought against the 20,000 evolved zombies for over 4 hours. They suffered 20 casualties before fulling wiping them out.

After Lie Ming Yi and his forces wiped out the 20,000 evolved zombies, the sky was turning dark, and the soldiers had no way of chasing after the zombie horde.

At night, the fighting capabilities of humans would suffer, while the zombies were not affected.

The retreat caused the soldiers to relax, and there were sounds of joy and cheers everywhere. They might not have wiped out the 4 million zombies, but after close to a month's of battle, they had already wiped out close to 2 million of them, and this caused them to feel a sense of pride and achievement.

Hu-er Ran came up to Yue Zhong, with a complicated look, and said, "Many thanks Leader!!"

In the battle earlier, had Yue Zhong not sent timely help, even if Hu-er ran had managed to escape from the zombies with his strength, his 3rd Brigade would have been lost entirely.

Yue Zhong eyed him and replied mildly, "There's no need to thank me! Since you're my subordinate, and fought for me on the battlefield, I would not abandon you. However, if you were to harbor any thoughts you shouldn't, then don't blame me for being merciless!"

Hu-er Ran, having been the leader of the entire Mongolian Empire, was definitely an ambitious man. His capabilities were definitely outstanding, and amongst Yue Zhong's subordinates, no one could possibly control a huge force the way Hu-er Ran did with the Mongol riders. Since Yue Zhong wanted to quickly extend his power, he had to fight the zombies with Hu-er Ran's help.

Hu-er Ran replied with a bitter smile, "Yes! Hu-er Ran will bear Leader's words in mind!"

The huge horde retreated, gathering together before heading towards Bao Xi City.

Yue Zhong deployed his 1st Regiment which had the tanks, Lie Ming Yi's 2nd Brigade, and Hu-er Ran's 3rd Brigade as they chased after the horde.

The 30 assault helicopters continued to rain napalm bombs down on the zombies, incinerating large patches of zombies.

Due to the lack of artillery fire, Lie Ming Yi and the rest had to be wary of the potential sudden attacks of the evolved zombies. They continued their guarded assault, and only managed to kill another 400,000 zombies.

The horde retreated to Bao Xi City and did not stop, instead continuing towards the north.

After the continuous assault and chase, the fuel and ammunition spent by Yue Zhong's forces had started to accumulate. The factories continued to churn out ammunition, but under such circumstances, Yue Zhong could only call for a halt.

Zhuo Ya Tong came up to Yue Zhong, dressed in her tight military suit, as she reported, "Ba Yan City is under our control now, we have lost 120 soldiers of the Scum Battalion, 6 from 1st Regiment, 7 from the 2nd Brigade, 13 from the 3rd Brigade. The guns we found in Ba Yan City number..."

The moment the zombies left Ba Yan City, Yue Zhong quickly led

his troops to take over the city, and clean out the remaining zombies.

Most of the zombies had been commanded to leave by the Mutant zombie, however, a few were still trapped within the various structures. Cleaning up was a dangerous job, and from time to time, there would be a few casualties.

Zhuo Ya Tong carried a piece of document and eyed Yue Zhong, "Currently, based on the reports, Bao Xi City is already under our control, and we should be able to clean it up fully within a week."

Yue Zhong closed his eyes, and heaved a sigh of relief. Ba Yan City and Bao Xi City were two large cities on the Central Plains, and there were many large-type factories within them. As long as they were within his control, with adequate manpower, he could begin manufacturing his ammunition.

The Mutant zombie might have developed human-like intelligence, but it still did not fully understand the importance of a city to humankind.

Ba Yan and Bao Xi landed up in Yue Zhong's hands, and in only a short period of time, he could turn them to boost his military forces, and churn out ammunition. With enough ammunition, he could deal with large hordes.

This time, the fact that he could deal with 2 million zombies, other than his subordinates, the main reason was that he had the ammunition to back his forces. Without the ammunition and fuel, the tanks, and helicopters were just useless metal. After this single battle, his expenditure had been massive.

Especially the fuel, it had almost wiped out all that he had gained from Ulan Mountain Range. He had no way of continuing the chase, and could only watch as the horde continued north.

Yue Zhong knew that letting them go was going to be a huge disaster, but he had no means of wiping them out entirely in the

short future.

Almost a year had gone past since the world had changed, and although Yue Zhong had regain Ba Yan and Bao Xi, there was no notification of any levels gained. This was because the time limit for the mission he had accepted was over, and the conquering of cities was no longer on the mission board of the God and Devil System. Only the reclamation of the capital still had some incentives.

Yue Zhong knew that with just a little more time, his forces would become stronger. He opened his eyes and looked at Zhuo Ya Tong.

Her tight attire accentuated her mature curves fully, looking extremely attractive.

Zhuo Ya Tong could feel the heated gaze of Yue Zhong on herself, and her face flushed slightly, as a sense of confidence arose in her heart. There was a slight sexual tension in the room.

At this moment, an officer came to the door and knocked, disrupting the atmosphere, "Reporting!!"

Yue Zhong eyed the officer and replied solemnly, "Come in!"

"What is it?"

The soldier replied solemnly, "Leader! Our unmanned drones have discovered 30,000 soldiers making their way towards us from Mongolia."

Yue Zhong's face fell as he stood up abruptly, "Hu-er Ran has rebelled?!"

Hu-er Ran's position amongst the Mongols was important, if he chose to rebel now, Yue Zhong would be forced to wipe them out. The 3rd Brigade were all decent elite soldiers, and Yue Zhong could not bear to kill them.

The officer quickly explained, "No!! Leader! It's not Hu-er Ran.

It's the Mongol Empire from the outer parts of Mongolia."

Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief, and swiftly make his way to his command center.

"Leader!!"

"..."

The moment Yue Zhong entered the command center, the officers quickly saluted.

Yue Zhong looked towards the display, and noticed the 30,000-strong troops on top of their mounts galloping towards Ba Yan City.

These soldiers led plenty of their livestock, as well as their horses. They were accompanied by tanks and armored vehicles, while a few Eurocopters and some Russian MI24 assault helicopters accompanied them in the skies,

"Kingdom of God!! Damn bastards!" Yue Zhong took a look at the images taken by the unmanned drones, and his eyes flashed coldly, his fists clenched tightly, as a tinge of fury arose in his heart.

Before the apocalypse, the strength of the outer parts of Mongolia wasn't strong, and their military was definitely incomparable with the rest of the country. However, they suddenly had over a hundred assault helicopters, it was evident someone had supported them. The only power that could do that was the Kingdom of God.

Chapter 666: The Allied Forces Appear!

Li Guang took a look at the displayed images, his expression solemn as he asked, "Leader, what do we do now?"

The Outer Mongolia had deployed 30,000 soldiers to attack Yue Zhong, they had obviously received support from the Kingdom of God. Not only were their troops stacked, they had the backup of helicopters, tanks and armored vehicles. This was an enemy not to be underestimated.

Yue Zhong could defeat Hu-er Ran, was because the 30 assault helicopters in his arsenal played a huge role. Without them, he could not have done so easily.

Yue Zhong replied, "I shall lead the troops personally to wipe them out!"

This battle would decide the master of the Central Plains, should Yue Zhong lose, then the authority would fall to the Outer Mongolia, and he was not willing to let them happen.

Out on the Central Plains, the 30,000 troop was currently charging forth.

Within the troops, there were 6 armored vehicles that was dragging along a converted caravan, that was 20m long, 20m wide and 6m tall, with 6 wheels underneath.

Such a luxurious converted caravan had no market in the past, because the roads could not possibly accommodate such measurements. However, on the Central Plains, it was possible to utilize it.

Inside the caravan, the interior design was lavish, and the floor was covered with expensive Persian rugs, while beautiful paintings hung all around. Even the roof had a crystal chandelier.

A blond-haired, blue-eyed man with extremely good looks sipped red wine while sitting on a sofa, beside him, 2 beautiful women

with only a silk cloth covering them sat while massaging his legs. Another 2 were helping him knead his shoulders. One busty babe kneeled in front of him while feeding him fruits carefully.

This man was enjoying himself as though he was the ruler of a nation, indulging in the services of the 5 ladies as well as their mesmerizing smiles.

He eyed a beautiful lady sitting opposite him, who was dressed in tight leather clothes, her hair tied up in a single ponytail, and her figure not losing out to any of the beauties present. Her exquisite features were radiating out a cold that seemed to freeze anyone who got too close. He spoke, "Lina! Relax a little. It's hard to get a break like this, why don't you just enjoy the scenery?"

Lina glanced at Harriman coldly, "Harriman, our mission is to eradicate Yue Zhong, and destroy his factions out here. If you fool around so much that you let him go, the Elders will not let you off!"

This handsome man and incredibly sexy woman with a sword-like aura were the strongest Apostles of the Kingdom of God, Harriman and Lina.

Besides them, there were 4 other people by their sides each, a total of 6 men and 2 women. They were the Divine Envoys brought along by the 2 of them.

Harriman chuckled and poured the wine in his hand over the beauty beside him, "The Elder Council? How would they question an Apostle over a small matter like this. Furthermore, Yue Zhong is just some yellow-skinned monkey that got lucky. Any Apostle can take him down without trouble. The Elder Council actually sent 2 Apostles, they're surely overestimating this monkey."

As the wine in the glass poured over the beauty, the rest of the ladies began to lick it off her.

This was something that Harriman loved to see, he liked to watch these beauties behaving like dogs. Although he might smile with

extreme warmth, he could likewise flip and slap a woman to death.

When the apocalypse happened, Harriman had not yet awakened as an Evolver, he was betrayed by his pretty girlfriend for a piece of bread. He almost died at the jaws of a zombie. Ever since then, he loved to torture pretty women, treating them like dogs.

Lina frowned when she watched him, after all, she was a woman. Seeing him step on and humiliate those women, she was extremely unhappy. Furthermore, she could detect his wild gaze roaming all over her at times, as though he wanted to do the same to her.

In truth, if it wasn't for her strength, and her worth, she would have long since become a plaything for the upper echelons of the Kingdom of God as well.

One of the Divine Envoys, who was black, looked at Lina, his eyes filled with lust, "Esteemed Apostle, we have satellites, Yue Zhong's every move would not be able to escape our sight. Whatever they might be planning, they won't be able to escape what's coming for them. This battle, since we have already made the decision to wipe them out, they've no way of running. His best option is to disassemble his troops, and head for the mountain ranges."

In modern warfare, intelligence was vital. With the satellites in their control, the Kingdom of God could easily spy on any part of the world. Regardless of where Yue Zhong wanted to attack, it would all be laid bare by the satellites.

Furthermore, the 30,000 Mongolians were stacked with the help of the Kingdom of God, and thus, they were filled with confidence.

Even Lina did not truly believe that they would lose, she was just seeking an excuse to admonish Harriman.

Harriman watched the 5 beauties struggle to lick the wine and he laughed, before taking a syringe from a box beside him and injected himself.

"Let's go!!" Lina looked at the syringe and her face changed,

quickly leaving.

What Harriman had injected himself with was poison. After he had become an Apostle, he had already enjoyed all there was to enjoy on the face of Earth. Thus, in his void, he had chosen to use poison to get his high. He would become a sick pervert when he injected himself, becoming uncontrollable. Lina did not want to converse with him any longer when he was in that condition.

Lina led her 4 Divine Envoys and left the room, going to their own places.

Soon after, there was the sound of clothes ripping and the moans of the women from Harriman's room.

Chapter 667: The Tyrannical Apostles!

Within a forest of about 10 li away from the Outer Mongolian troops, Yue Zhong had draped a layer of grass over him, as he observed the surroundings quietly. Behind him, there were a thousand elite soldiers and 3,000 treants.

Yue Zhong knew about the satellites of the Kingdom of God since a long time ago. Whatever actions he took, he knew it was hard to hide from the satellites.

However, the movement of any Mutant life forms in the night was able to evade the satellites. Furthermore, the 1,000 elite soldiers had spread out and gathered at this location from different locations under Yue Zhong's orders.

If it were a large army, there was no way he could have avoided the satellites. However, if he didn't use any tanks, armored vehicles or assault helicopters, it was still possible to proceed.

Right now, the sky had turned dark due to night, and a shadow appeared suddenly, revealing herself to Yue Zhong. It was precisely the beautiful but emotionless Tenpyo Saka.

She spoke coldly, "There're no problems!"

Tenpyo Saka specialized in assassination, and was a top-notch recon soldier in the night. After the enhancement from the God and Devil System, she had gained plenty of skills and techniques, becoming one of the top 10 recon soldiers in Yue Zhong's troops.

"Do it!" Yue Zhong glanced at Bi Lǔ, as he ordered.

She closed her eyes, and a spiritual wave radiated out, before she opened them and pointed to the camp of the Outer Mongolians.

The 3,000 treants surged forwards silently, making their way towards the Mongolian camp.

Yue Zhong himself led the 1,000 elites and launched a sudden

attack.

If it were a frontal assault, Yue Zhong was not confident that he could win the numerous tanks and assault helicopters prepared by the Kingdom of God. He only had a chance with a night raid.

The 10 Type 3 Treants were like a gust of wind that swiftly entered the camp and swiped their claws, beheading numerous Mongolian soldiers.

8 high-level Treants tore apart the defense line of the camp.

A large number of treants as well as the 1,000 elites immediately charged right into the camp and started slaughtering any living things they saw.

The sounds of gunshots rang out throughout the camp, and the entire place was thrown into chaos. Many soldiers rushed out from their camps, their expressions full of fear as they ran around like headless flies.

The Outer Mongolia had been peaceful for a long period of time, and the soldiers were mostly ordinary citizens. After the apocalypse, due to the sparse population over a wide spread of space, many of them had survived. They were unlike the soldiers under Yue Zhong, who had to fight many battles to survive, accumulating experience. Furthermore, a night raid was hard to prepare against, and it was easy for the victims to panic. With such a charge, most of them immediately fled.

The scattered troops ran in all directions, leaving behind their armor and weapons.

"Night raid!!! Come with me!!" As the strongest among the Kingdom of God elites, Lina immediately reacted the moment she heard the screams. With a single punch, she blasted the wall of the caravan, and leaped out, leading her 4 Divine Envoys out.

The moment she leaped out, she saw Yue Zhong with a cold look, aiming a RPG at the caravan. There were 10 other soldiers also

hoisting RPGs on their shoulders. On top of that, 40 other soldiers with laser guns were aiming at them. A deadly sense of crisis arose in Lina's heart.

"Kill them!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, as he pulled the trigger.

With a flash, 10 rockets blasted towards the caravan.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

With a loud explosion, the caravan was instantly blasted into pieces, while Lina and her 4 Divine Envoys were enveloped by the debris and dust.

As the rockets exploded, multiple laser beams fired out, ensuring that everything within was blasted to death.

Although Yue Zhong did not know Lina's identity, he was sure that the luxurious caravan was the residence of someone of important. The first thing he did was to ensure that no one inside could survive.

"Get down!!" Just as he was about to leave, a chill came over his heart, and an incredible sense of danger rang in his mind. He roared and got down on the ground.

His words had just rang out when 4 large wind blades swept out from the cloud of dust, slicing 4 of the soldiers, piercing through their Type 2 Mutant Beast hide, and slicing their bodies in half.

Witnessing this, the rest of the soldiers immediately got down.

"It hurts!! It hurts!! Who is it?! Who dares to attack me! I will kill him!! I will slaughter him!!" From the dust, an enraged voice resounded out, as a figure stepped out. His head had a pair of horns, his entire body was covered in black scales, his face etched with demonic runes, and a pair of demonic wings spread out from his back. His entire frame was covered with injuries, while his bloodshot eyes swivelled around.

This demonic-like figure was Harriman, he was a Strength, Agility, Spirit and Vitality quadruple-attribute Evolver, and had the powerful Second Order ability Demon Transformation. With this skill, he had always enhanced it, reaching its Level 3 potential after spending much resources and his valuable skill points. With another 3 more skill points as well as the Third Order Skill Book, he could immediately push it to the next realm.

Activating this skill allowed Harriman to reach terrifying speeds, even faster than Lightning. In a breath, he had reached the frontlines, slashing out with his hands casually, and ripping the heads of 3 Strength-based Evolvers by Yue Zhong's side. These Evolvers were Level 43 and above, yet they could not even put up resistance. This was the true terror of the Apostles in the Kingdom of God.

On the other side, a huge gust of wind blew out from the debris, as Lina stood up, her eyes flashing with murderous rage. The hurricane behind her blew forth towards Yue Zhong, as her hands waved and sent 2 wind blades out, instantly slaughtering 2 other soldiers wielding the laser guns.

Yue Zhong's sudden attack had instantly decimated the 8 Divine Envoys before they could even do anything, leaving behind only Lina and Harriman.

If it weren't for their terrifying strength, they would have also perished under the joint attacks of the RPGs and laser guns.

"Yue Zhong! Is that you? Very good! Die for me!!" Harriman roared out as he crushed the heads of 2 soldiers, pulling their entire spine out, before laughing cruelly at Yue Zhong. He flapped his wings, and charged right for Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's gaze turned cold, as he activated his Shadow Steps and Bone Encompassing Armor. With a flip of his hands, the Flaming Blade made from the claw of the Type 4 Flaming Bird appeared in his hands.

It was the sharpest weapon Yue Zhong had in his arsenal, even the Level 5 weapons he had enhanced could not match it. The only weak point was that there's no way the weapon could absorb the experience gained from killing Mutant Beasts.

As Harriman was about to reach Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed, and he activated his Gravity Manipulation, enveloping Harriman.

Harriman's body sunk slightly, as though he wasn't affected at all, and he reached out with his claws towards Yue Zhong's head, "Gravity skills? Just 2 times?! WEAK! If you want to give me some problems, it has to be at least 10 times! Fool, you can die because of your foolishness!"

After transforming into a Second Order Demon, Harriman possessed terrifying strength, his claws could rip through the hull of a tank. As long as his claws connected, even White Bones' bone carapace would crumble.

Harriman grabbed forcefully, and Yue Zhong's head dissipated into nothing.

"Shadow clone?" Harriman's heart jolted in shock and he retreated backwards.

A sharp blade brushed past his chest, tearing a bloody wound. Had he been slightly slower, his entire upper body would have been sliced apart.

He retreated some meters, when suddenly, dozens of laser beams fired at him. He flashed from his position, and the laser beams shot past his original location, creating holes in the ground.

When he reappeared, there were a few more light wounds on his body, as well as a 25mm bullet hole in his right wing. Even his demonic body had no way of defending against laser beams.

"Great! Great! Yue Zhong, you're truly someone who has gotten close to the Apostle's strength. You even have such powerful

subordinates. Seems like I need to exert more strength to kill you. Let me kill all your subordinates first, then I'll deal with you!! Today will be the day you die!! I will capture your women, and turn them all into bitches!! Haha!! HAHA!!" Harriman's eyes turn red, as he laughed out manically. With a single step, he managed to leap over dozens of meters. He reached out with his right hand and instantly tore the head as well as the spine of a Level 40 Strength-based Evolver. It was a horrifying sight.

Chapter 668: Intense Battle with the Apostle!

Harriman weaved in and out of the soldiers like a demon, clawing the brains out of the Evolvers, as fresh blood splattered everywhere in a horrific manner. Strength-based Evolvers were killed instantly by him, while Agility-based Evolvers could barely withstand his first blows with their blades before they were killed by the second. In just a short breath of time, 6 Evolvers that had followed Yue Zhong since Vietnam, and had killed many enemies of his, were instantly killed.

Yue Zhong pointed at Harriman and bellowed, "Yin Shuang!! Kill him!!"

Yue Zhong's strength was tyrannical, but his speed could not compare to a quadruple-attribute Evolver with a Second Order Demon Transformation. If Harriman attacked him, he could still endure and take on the blows, but he had no way of preventing him from killing his subordinates.

"Yes! Father!! Yin Shuang will go kill him now!" Yin Shuang smiled brightly at Yue Zhong, before shooting forward with the speed of sound, aiming for Harriman.

In just a short breath, Yin Shuang had appeared in front of him, her eyes radiating with a cold and cruel killing intent. Her pale little fists exploded towards his brain. Harriman's preferred method of killing was to grab the head and pull out the entire spine of his victims, while Yin Shuang caused her opponents' heads to explode with her strength.

Harriman looked at Yin Shuang with a hint of excitement as he grabbed out with his massive claws, "Haha!! What an outstanding little girl!! Good!! Good!! This trip to China was worth it!! After I capture you, I will train you properly!!"

Harriman's claws could tear apart even a tank, he would obviously not fear the fists of a little girl, even if she was an Evolver.

Yin Shuang's little fists brought about a terrifying whistle as it shot through the air and landed on Harriman's claws. With a loud blast, Harriman's entire right arm was blasted apart, along with his entire shoulder.

Harriman himself was sent soaring through the air for about 70 and 80 meters as he spat out a mouthful of blood.

As he got up, he spat out more blood and stared at Yin Shuang in shock, "How?! My defense in this form is absolutely invulnerable. Even heavy caliber bullets can do nothing to me!! How could I have been injured by a little girl?!"

After transforming into a Second Order Demon, Harriman's strength was at least 5th amongst the Apostles. Even the 1st ranked Apostle could not blast his arm apart with a single blow.

Yin Shuang's feet dug into the ground after sending Harriman flying, then shooting right for him immediately, her little fists flying towards his head.

Harriman no longer dared to face her, and flapped his demonic wings and flew into the sky. In his transformed state, he could fly for a short while.

Yin Shuang continued to chase after him, leaping up into the sky with the speed of a cannonball, appearing in front of him, and her eyes flashed with a cold light as she brought her fists towards him again.

"Dark Dou Qi!!" Harriman's eyes flashed in response, as a dark energy surged out of him, covering his entire left arm, blocking in front of him.

Yin Shuang's fist blasted the Dark Dou Qi that enveloped Harriman's left arm, and he was sent flying once more, spewing

out blood.

However, under the enhancement and protection of the Dark Dou Qi, Harriman's left shoulder was not destroyed by Yin Shuang's strength.

"I'll kill you! Then Father will reward me! You can die!" Yin Shuang continued to smile sweetly, yet evilly at the same time, as though she was a raptor eyeing her prey.

"Yin Shuang is truly formidable!" Yue Zhong watched how Yin Shuang was dominating one of the powerful Apostles, and his eyes flashed with a complicated gleam. He then turned around and discovered the other Apostle, Lina, currently slaughtering his subordinates.

Lina was an Apostle that controlled the wind, and she was also a quadruple-attribute Evolver with Stamina, Spirit, Agility, and Vitality as her stats. She wore a set of equipment that was all based on the wind, and her combat strength was on another level. In the time that she lifted her hands, she could fire multiple wind blades of various sizes that sliced up the soldiers.

When Yue Zhong was engaging Harriman, Lina had already killed 7 Evolvers who were Level 40 and above.

"Go to hell!!" Just as Lina was about to continue killing, Hu-er Ran bellowed, his entire body covered with his Blood Dou Qi, as he slashed towards her.

"Seeking death!" Lina's eyes flashed with a cold light, as she retreated slightly, pointing at Hu-er Ran and sending multiple invisible wind blades towards him.

Although Hu-er Ran could not see the wind blades, his experience was abundant, and he could discern the directions they were flying from. He broke through the onslaught and charged towards Lina like an enraged lion.

Lina continued to send out wind blades at him, and the sheer

numbers managed to slice and injure Hu-er Ran in many places.

As one of the Apostles, her control over the wind blades was exceptional. Even Type 3 Mutant Beasts would have difficulty preventing her from slicing through their hide.

Hu-er Ran's eyes flashed with a vicious light as he bore through the wind blades, charging right for Lina, and activated his ability Giant Cleave together with his Blood Dou Qi, slashing at Lina.

As the Mongol King in the past, Hu-er Ran was also a peak level Evolver, and his combat experience was not lacking. While he might not reach the power of an Apostle, he was not to be underestimated.

Lina watched the incoming blade, her face finally showing an expression of shock. With a flash, a white shield materialized and blocked in front of her.

Hu-er Ran's earthshaking strike slammed into the white shield, and with a loud shatter, the white shield broke apart, not impeding the cleave of the blade in the slightest.

However, the shield brought a sliver of time, enough for Lina to conjure a gust of wind, sending her body soaring up in the air. She flew above Hu-er Ran and made to claw at his head with her blades.

As long as she activated her skill, countless wind blades would turn Hu-er Ran into meat paste, that was the difference between Hu-er Ran and an Apostle.

Just as she was about to activate her skill, her face fell and conjured her wind to bring her higher.

At the next instant, a laser shot past her original location. Had she continued to use her ability to kill Hu-er Ran, she would be blasted in two herself.

Hu-er Ran heaved a sigh of relief, and retreated a few steps, staring at Yue Zhong with a complicated gaze as he said, "Thank

you!!"

Yue Zhong had saved his life again. Had he not acted, Hu-er Ran would have been dismembered.

Every single Apostle had a lot of resources at their disposal and went through countless battles. Even Yue Zhong did not possess the confidence to win every single one of them.

"Let's work together to kill her!" Yue Zhong barked out as he aimed his laser gun again to fire at Lina.

On the other side, the rest of the soldiers continued to fire their own laser guns, and many beams rained upon her.

Lina's eyes flashed, and she pointed, causing a tornado to appear out of nowhere, blowing towards the rest of the soldiers.

Under that intense gusts, most of the soldiers could not open their eyes.

Yue Zhong fired the laser gun in his hands continually, but she dodged them easily.

After evading 3 shots, she looked at Yue Zhong coldly, and pointed, sending her signature wind blades at him.

A moment of danger arose in his heart, and he activated his Shadow Steps, before he rolled to the ground, and sought cover.

Those dense wind blades tore into Yue Zhong's original location, causing many scars on the ground

Under Lina's skillful control, the blades seemed to have their own lives as they chased after Yue Zhong.

Peng!!

Just as Yue Zhong was about to be sent fleeing by Lina, the clear sound of a gunshot sounded from afar, as a bullet made straight for Lina's head.

The bright bullet that was enhanced blew through the countless

wind protected and shot for in between her eyebrows.

Just as she was about to have her head explode, the treasure Bronze Necklace of Protection flashed with a profound light, enveloping her.

The bullet landed on that green shield and blasted apart the huge green shield.

A gust of wind blew past, and the smoke was blown away, revealing Lina whose hair had been split apart, her face bearing 2 new scars and her clothes in shambles.

From afar, the number one sniper Bai He under Yue Zhong's forces eyed Lina coldly from atop a tree in the distance, leaping down as he moved towards another location.

Chapter 669: Hitting the Apostles Hard!

Lina managed to block that powerful shot, her beautiful eyes finally gleaming with a cold light. As an Apostle, she was one of the toughest and strongest, but against Yue Zhong's elites, she actually felt a sense of threat to her own life.

The fact that she could kill 8 high-level Evolvers while under the joint attacks of Yue Zhong, Hu-er Ran and the rest of the 60 Evolvers proved that she was strong with no doubt.

If there was no Yue Zhong, Hu-er Ran or Bai He, Lina could definitely slaughter the rest of the 60 Evolvers.

After she blocked that terrifying sniper shot, with a flash of her body, she disappeared from her original location.

A few laser beams shot past Lina's shadow.

Other than Bai He, there were a few other top snipers amongst Yue Zhong's subordinates. It was just that they didn't possess the uncanny skills and abilities of Bai He. Compared to him, they were not as good, and because of that, they didn't manage to hit Lina.

Yue Zhong watched Lina disappear, his eyes flashing with a vicious glint. He immediately channeled his Dark Dou Qi, and the dark layer of energy started to envelop his body, and he disappeared from his location as well.

At the next instant, Yue Zhong had already leaped into the air, appearing beside Lina, and sending a powerful, oppressive fist right at her.

"Seeking death!" Lina noticed that Yue Zhong had appeared and her eyes also flashed with a fierce glint. Her fair hands pointed at Yue Zhong, and multiple wind blades shot at him.

"Die for me!" As numerous wind blades blasted Yue Zhong's body, it caused his Bone Carapace to be chipped away. Many black bone chips were shattered, however, under the protection of his twice

enhanced Dark Dou Qi, his defense was still pretty tough. It withstood the multitude of wind blades, and he charged right at her, sending a fierce fist at her face.

As she was about to be blasted right in the face, Lina flipped her hands, and a white shield appeared again to block in front of her.

"Break for me!!" Yue Zhong yelled out in anger, and his right fist was enveloped by his powerful Devil Flame, slamming into the white shield.

The terrifying Second Order Devil Flame burst out, causing the white shield to shatter. At the moment of its destruction, Yue Zhong sent a sharp bone spike out from his fist right at Lina. As long as it penetrated her face, he could instantly kill this Apostle from the Kingdom of God.

Lina had never expected Yue Zhong's attacks to be so insidious. Her face flashed with a trace of shock, and at this critical juncture, she burst forth with her terrifying strength as an Apostle. With a thought, a gust of wind slapped into the bone spike, sending it off target.

The spike was broken with that powerful gust of wind, and it brushed past her face, giving her skin a deep gash as fresh blood flowed.

Lina relied on her strength and her experience to break away from Yue Zhong's strike when an even more dangerous premonition arose in her heart immediately after. She activated her control over the wind to dodge to another side.

Peng!!

Following the loud and clear sound of a gunshot, a bullet that was enhanced shot over, blasting onto her left hand.

If it were under any normal circumstances, she would have been able to dodge the bullet of snipers. However, right in front of her, Yue Zhong was an opponent she could not afford to underestimate.

Her attention was wholly on him, and hence, her left hand had been taken out.

Even then, she was truly an elite of the Kingdom of God, at the first moment, she had flown even further into the sky, shooting a glare of hatred at Yue Zhong, before flying away into the distance.

Yue Zhong landed from the sky as he watched Lina fly away with a glint in his eyes, "What a pity! If only I could fly!"

As a Dark Knight, it was likely that further down the evolution line, he could possibly gain some flight-related abilities. However, as of now, it was rare for most others to gain flight. The few skills that could do so were wind-related.

The moment Lina fled, Yue Zhong turned to face Harriman, who was being beaten by Yin Shuang, as he continued to spit blood and retreat.

Harriman was truly an existence that even Hu-er Ran could not take on. However, Yin Shuang was a life form that was borne out of the Mutant Infected Womb, and she used her Strength and Agility to suppress Harriman entirely. If it wasn't for his ability to fly, Yin Shuang would have pummeled him to death long ago.

Harriman saw that Lina had fled, and his eyes flashed. He gritted his teeth and spat out a mouthful of his blood essence, as his wings shone with strange runes. As he flapped them, his entire person turned into a terrifying beam of black light that shot through the clouds and disappeared.

The skill he used was a Level 4 Blood Escape skill, which only those with demon blood or dark-related classes could use. When used, the person could immediately get away from the battlefield with insane speed, likewise, the aftermath of the usage was horrendous, causing the user to only recover his or her optimal fighting strength after half a year.

"Shit!" Yin Shuang watched Harriman escape, as she sighed in

frustration. Although her power was beyond imagination, she could not fly, and could only watch as Harriman fled.

Yin Shuang returned to Yue Zhong's side, her face slightly downcast as she spoke somewhat dispiritedly, "Father, sorry, Yin Shuang did not manage to kill the bad guy."

Yue Zhong reached out to ruffle her head and chuckled, "It's alright! Yin Shuang has done well!"

Yin Shuang immediately broke into a bright smile, "Hehe! Father has praised me!"

Under this strange education by Yue Zhong, Yin Shuang had become even more fearsome, to the point of not blinking when she took lives.

Bai Xiao Sheng came up to Yue Zhong, his face contorted in grief, "Leader! We lost 23 brothers!!"

Harriman and Lina were simply too ferocious, under the crazy assault, they were still able to kill 23 of Yue Zhong's Evolvers. Many of them were old comrades that had followed Yue Zhong for a long time, through Japan, Country A, Guang Xi, the Central Plains, and they were sadly killed by Harriman and Lina.

Yue Zhong was filled with rage, as he gritted his teeth, "They will not die in vain! I will make those bastards pay the price of blood!"

The moment the 2 Apostles fled, the rest of the Outer Mongolia crumbled, and the soldiers fled in different directions, while many others surrendered.

They weren't fighters in the first place, and after the apocalypse, they were even more untouched and had not really experienced any battles. With Yue Zhong's night raid, they had killed over 6,000 soldiers, with 3,000 that escaped, and another 20,000 that surrendered.

They had 30,000 assault rifles, a dozen tanks, a hundred over machine gun-mounted vehicles, and some tens of assault

helicopters. All these fell right into Yue Zhong's hands, together with their resources and flocks.

Regardless of how advanced the weaponry was, the users were still humans. If the 30,000 Mongolian soldiers were like the elites of Kingdom of God, they would have given Yue Zhong some trouble.

"Damn it!! Damn Yue Zhong, you actually injured me to this extent!! I will not let you off!!" Within a forest of the Central Plains, Harriman's face was pale, as he cursed out. By now, he had dissolved the Demon Transformation, and he looked extremely weak.

Lina looked at her disembodied left hand, bearing the pain as she cursed, "He has already defeated the troops and gain all their equipment. In this region, no power could possibly stand up to him. What other means can we use?"

Harriman could not help but burst out in unhappiness, "Those Outer Mongolians were a bunch of trash!! 30,000 and they were actually defeated so easily! Fools!! Useless!! What were the Elders thinking, using those clowns?! To even give them the resources from Russia as well. Now they are all in Yue Zhong's hands, it's going to be tougher!!"

No one could have expected the Outer Mongolians to crumble so easily. Even Yue Zhong who had launched the night raid did not think he could have won so easily.

After the night battle, with the resources in hands, Yue Zhong was truly like a tiger that grew wings. Since he had expended a lot of resources in the battle with the zombies, he had suddenly gained a refill.

Since the Kingdom of God controlled a large part of the Earth, their resources were truly magnificent. In order to defeat Yue Zhong, they had deployed a lot of resources and weapons. Now they had ended up in his hands, and he could arm 3 regiments with

them.

Lina's face was sullen as she replied slowly, "There're many experts by his side. It would be hard for the 2 of us to deal with him. We definitely need to activate at least 12 Divine Envoys and 36 backup Envoys. Maybe an additional Adjudicator troop as well."

Chapter 670: Erek!

Lina, Harriman were 2 of the strongest amongst the Kingdom of God elites, and few could measure up to them amongst Yue Zhong's people, other than Yin Shuang.

However, this time, they had suffered such a loss because the 8 Divine Envoys had died before they could even exhibit anything.

The original number of Judges by their side did not number more than 50, and before they had even reacted, they had been assassinated one by one by Tenpyo Saka. Because of this, Lina and Harriman were ambushed by Yue Zhong's forces.

Harriman thought of Yin Shuang and his eyes flashed with trepidation, "What was that little girl by his side? How is she so terrifying? Even after my Demon Transformation, I could not even compare with her!"

Whenever Harriman shifted to his Second Order Demon form, he was extremely tough, even heavy caliber bullets could not pierce him. Grenades would just cause him to be scratched slightly. Yet, his resilient body could not even withstand a single hit from Yin Shuang, and he could not help but feel some fear towards her.

Lina replied softly, "There was nothing in the intelligence report. At first, it seemed like she was one of his favorites that he kept around him. Seems like it is more than that. If she isn't a powerful Evolver, she's likely an intelligent biological life form from the apocalypse."

Harriman's eyes flashed with shock, "Highly intelligent being? Like that strange thing in South America? She's actually something like that?"

Since the Kingdom of God was active all around the world, they knew many things.

Lina's reply was solemn, "That's right! 3 of our units had been

wiped out by such a being over at South America. It seems that everything had collapsed over there, and there's no human resistance any longer. It's a playground for the zombies."

South America was originally an important location to the Kingdom of God, and yet, it had actually become a zombie-land. Hearing this, Harriman frowned.

As one of the Apostles, he had always gained his intelligence easily. Therefore, he would rather focus on drugs and women.

In the end, he was only aware of little things that were going on. He knew that there were biological entities similar to Yin Shuang over at South America, but did not know that the forces of the Kingdom of God over there had already fallen.

With the flow of time, zombies and Mutant Beasts would evolve constantly. The Kingdom of God had made use of their intelligence and people to expand quickly. However, they discovered that their enemies grew, and were stronger as well.

Some of them were the local hegemonies, like Yue Zhong or Hu-er Ran. However, some were zombies and Mutant Beasts. Even a horde of over millions in numbers would give the Kingdom of God a headache. Many of their troops had been run over by the terrifying zombies.

Harriman looked up at the sky, "Regardless! We have to head back first! I would need to spend at least a month in the Recovery Pod."

There were the sounds of helicopter motors roaring, as a Thunder Fighter arrived at their location.

Both of them had GPS capabilities in their suits, as long as they did not lose them, they could receive reinforcements easily.

Harriman and Lina had not gone long, but the results of their battle had traveled to the headquarters in Europe.

This news caused a tremor amongst the upper echelons of the

Kingdom of God. After all, in order to ensure success, they had not sent any troops directly, but they had still provided a hefty amount of resources and equipment on the Outer Mongolians.

After losing their weapons, their military might suffer by about 70% over at Outer Mongolia and Russia. Furthermore, there was no other chess piece they could utilize against Yue Zhong anymore.

"Those damn Outer Mongolians, what a bunch of fools!! We've given them so much help, yet they lost so badly! What trash!"

"They're worse than the Vietnamese. Why did we work together with them in the first place?! We must have been blind!"

"With their defeat, our power in the East has already suffered. How can we prevent that tyrant Yue Zhong from expanding?"

"I feel we should deploy our elite troops in India, and send at least 5 army corps over to the Central Plains. There's already such enmity between us, it is the best chance to eradicate him!"

"No way! We're still consolidating our power at India! Furthermore, it's a haven of resources there! If we were to deploy so many of our troops, the local powers will rebel!"

"Then do we just let Yue Zhong do as he wants? Based on the satellites, he had already conquered Ba Yan City and Bao Xi City in Mongol! If he continues like this, his power would only grow, he already has a quarter of the entire China in his hands! Sooner or later, he would become the only power of the entire China. It won't good news to us by then!"

"Yue Zhong's power has already consolidated, I feel we shouldn't invest any more troops over there. If it's too little, there's no way to fight, too many, and our other locations will suffer. We need to focus our strength and eradicate the zombies over at Germany. We haven't fully dealt with the situation over there."

Germany had about 80 million zombies, and such a number was basically a nightmare to any power. The Kingdom of God had

established plenty of bases everywhere, however, they only managed to conquer a few industrial cities locally.

It was not that they didn't prioritize their local area, but that the Kingdom of God was originally a worldwide conglomerate. Due to that, after the apocalypse, they had swiftly utilized their different divisions to obtain resources and build up their bases. Since then, while they had responded and expanded the fastest, their power was still too widely spread out, and their strength was being chipped away little by little.

In truth, many of the Elders hoped that they could tighten their circle, and redeploy some key personnel to deal with the 70 million zombies in Germany, having lowered the number from 80 million.

However, by transferring personnel, not only did it require the necessary equipment and fuel, the various bases would also be affected. Some locations might even be wiped out the moment their people were transferred out.

This caused the head of the Kingdom of God to be in a dilemma. Every location could provide a huge amount of resources and people to the main base. That was how the entire faction had grown so powerfully in their research and grooming of their Apostles.

If Yue Zhong had not meddled, the laser gun design would have landed in the hands of the Kingdom of God. With their technology, they would have developed the laser guns much faster and armed their troops, propelling the might of their soldiers.

If the Kingdom of God lost their bases outside of the country, after Harriman and Lina were injured, they would not have gotten their support.

Thus, every single base was important to the Kingdom of God.

"No, I think it should be possible to bargain with him. Benefits of trade between countries. Since he already has the qualifications to

negotiate with us. The Outer Mongolia and Russia have no way of recovering from this defeat. We need to allocate the resources back to our main base."

Erek roared out with fury, "No!! We must wipe him out! We have to kill this bastard. I recommend sending 4 Apostles as well as 2 Judges Corps to deal with him. It would definitely be enough to eradicate him. He's too dangerous, we cannot let this guy continue to live any longer."

Erek was a staunch supporter of a single power. He wasn't willing for another hegemon to appear in the East, it would not be beneficial to their Kingdom of God.

After the apocalypse, the current period was where the humans fought to evolve. Erek believed that humanity would win the zombies and Mutant Beasts with their intelligence and strength, after that, they would then regain their cities and seas. By that time, it would be a struggle between humankind, and he did not wish for another contender to rise.

The Elder Jonas listened to everybody, thinking long and hard before replying, "Erek, you shall head to China and work with the Greater China Alliance, and eradicate Yue Zhong. 10th Apostle Wade, 11th Apostle Wilson, 12 Divine Envoys, 36 Divine Envoys-in-waiting, a battalion of Judges and 3 battalions of Adjudicators will follow you to China. I want Yue Zhong dead!"

Erek replied in delight, "Yes! Great Elder, I will definitely kill Yue Zhong!!"

2 Apostles, 12 Divine Envoys, 36 Divine Envoys-in-waiting, a battalion of Judges and 3 battalions of Adjudicators was a force that could decimate an entire country. Erek thought of the command of this elite troop under him and he trembled with excitement.

Jonas stared at Erek and spoke coldly, "4 months, if you can't take him out in 4 months, you can kill yourself."

Erek's face turned pale, before he regained the ferocity in his eyes, "Yes! Great Elder!"

Chapter 671: Yin Shan Mountain Range!

After eradicating the troops of Outer Mongolia, Yue Zhong had gained a huge amount of resources. He made use of them to launch an assault in the direction of Hu He City.

The big-head Mutant zombie did not continue to harass Yue Zhong, instead, it summoned the zombies from Hu He City and made their way further northeast.

After collecting the 3 million zombies from Hu He City, the entire horde swelled to a size of over 4 million again.

Yue Zhong watched the horde advance towards the northeast, and although he was extremely worried in his heart, there was nothing he could do to impede them.

Yue Zhong had somewhat guessed that the commander behind this horde wanted to amass as many zombies as it could, before seeking him again. If the numbers were to exceed 10 million, then it would truly be a nightmare for humanity. This was what Yue Zhong was most afraid of.

There were over ten billion zombies in China, if they were to gather, just one billion of them could overrun Yue Zhong and his bases.

The zombies continued north, allowing Yue Zhong to swiftly recover the cities, and rescue the emaciated survivors from various corners.

Many survivors were assigned to work in the different factories.

As the numbers of survivors swelled, other than the military factories, the rest of the steel, coal and clothing factories began to operate again.

The entire Central Plains soon regained some semblance of society, as well as prosperity.

The Yin Shan Mountain Range seemed endless, and after the apocalypse, countless mutant plants had overrun the entire place, while Mutant Beasts had herded together. It was not a place that humans could survive in.

One particular bespectacled male, who was haggard and only dressed in a simple turf-woven fabric, his skin tanned, was currently searching for food carefully on the ground. His name was Lei Yun.

He was a botanical expert before the apocalypse, and when the apocalypse happened, he had followed a number of survivors as they fled into the mountain range.

At the start, the city was filled with zombies and Mutant Beasts. It was easier to survive in the Yin Shan Mountain Range then.

However, the mountain range started to evolve as well, with countless plants transforming into man-eating plants. What was once edible disappeared, and animals also started to mutate and hunt the humans. What was the scariest was that some people gathered together to lord over the rest. The lives of the ordinary people became extremely tough. Lei Yun was one of the survivors that escaped from the cruel factions within the mountain range.

His eyes suddenly brightened, as he crawled on the floor and dug the ground with his callus-filled hands, obtaining a stalk of edible wild grass.

After digging out that wild grass, Lei Yun continued to look around for food.

Although there was plenty of vegetation that can be seen on the Yin Shan Mountain Range, most of them were inedible. Lei Yun saw some people bursting apart, with vines growing out from within. On top of that, there were some who even spat out blood, before turning into corpses.

Lei Yun was also relying on his prior knowledge of botany to find

some wild grass that could be eaten. As to those he didn't recognize, he didn't dare consume.

As he bent down, there was the sound of rustling in the tall grass nearby. He went rigid, only to discover 5 militants dressed in grey clothes, with blades and shields on their backs appearing in front of him.

"There's somebody! Not bad! Looks like our group is pretty lucky!" One of the men had scars on his face and as he laughed, his expression looked savage.

Lei Yun's face flashed with despair, and he threw the wild grass in his hand, turning around to run.

In the Yin Shan Mountain Range, the humans were scarier than Mutant Beasts. They would capture ordinary people to be slaves after they were utilized, they would consume these slaves like wild beasts.

There were Mutant Beasts and wild vegetables that were not existences normal humans could deal with, at the same time, edible vegetation was rare. In comparison, humans were the weakest link, and also a form of food.

The man with scars was instantly enraged and he charged right after Lei Yun, "Damn it, you dare run after seeing this senior, are you tired of living!!"

Lei Yun had starved constantly, and his body was malnourished. There was no way he could handle the man with scars. In just a few steps, he was grabbed by the man, who pushed him down onto the ground.

Lei Yun immediately yelped in terror, "Don't kill me! Don't kill me! I know which wild vegetation can be eaten, please spare my life!! I can help you look for food!"

The leader, who was a burly man with deep-set eyes, spoke solemnly, "Tiger, don't use too much force. If you kill him

accidentally, we won't even get our merit points."

Tiger immediately let Lei Yun go, but not before staring at him, "Got it! Kid, don't run! We don't even want your wild vegetables! If you dare run again, even if this senior was to be reprimanded by the higher-ups, I will still hack you!"

The man with deep-set eyes asked Lei Yun coldly, "Kid, what's your name?"

Lei Yun trembled a little as he looked at them and replied carefully, "I'm called Lei Yun, I was a botanist before the Apocalypse. I can recognize many Mutant Plants, and find at least 5 types of edible plants."

Xu Wei pulled out a chocolate bar from his clothes and handed it to Lei Yun, "I'm Xu Wei, the captain of the Scum Battalion, 3rd Battalion, 2nd Company, 3rd Platoon, 1st Squad. We're here on orders to look for survivors in the mountain range. Lei Yun, do you know if there're any other survivors out here?"

Tiger's face turned black, "Captain! Can we not report our full names? The title of the Scum Battalion is too humiliating."

The rest of the armed men chuckled bitterly.

Xu Wei's face was indifferent, "It's a fact. Those who are in the Scum Battalion, which of us are not scum? If you want to get rid of such a label, other than working hard to gain merit, there's no other way."

Lei Yun received the chocolate bar with care, his eyes turning moist. These chocolate bars were something he would not even eat before the apocalypse. Now, any single one could get him a night with a woman.

Lei Yun suppressed the urge to swallow the entire thing together with the wrapping, as he assessed the 5 men in front of him, "I know the situation of a faction that's about a 100 li from here."

Lei Yun pointed to a small hill, saying, "Atop that hill, there's a

faction calling themselves the Tiger Head Clan. There's a leader, 5 fighters, and 13 women. The leader is called Nangong Tian Feng, and his weapon is a thick blade. The 5 fighters all use wooden bats."

Inside the Yin Shan Mountain Range, it was already something for these small factions to possess a melee weapon. After all, they had mostly brought along worthless currency at the time of their escape.

Hearing this, one of the soldiers became excited, "Captain! 19 survivors, this time we can gain 95 merit points. Adding to our past efforts, if we save a few more, we can finally gain freedom from the Scum Battalion!! Let's go all out!!"

Searching for survivors in the mountain range was a dangerous job. The task was delegated to these scums. For every survivor found, the party would earn 5 merit points, equivalent to killing 5 zombies. Ordinary scums would need 40 merit points to regain their freedom as citizens. Thus, these soldiers were extremely excited.

Yue Zhong wasn't worried that these soldiers would run. After all, in the Yin Shan Mountain Range, danger was everywhere, if they tried to flee, with their ordinary strength, they would just become meals for the Mutant Beasts or nutrients for the Mutant Plants.

Although the training was tough for the Scum Battalion, they still suffered casualties on missions like this. In certain situations, they even had to become cannon fodder. Those who went against orders would be directly executed. They could eat their fill, and from time to time, there was meat. At the same time, when cleaning up zombies in cities, they would scavenge for resources and get to keep some for themselves. Compared to the wild, it was a lot better than in the Scum Battalion.

At the same time, if any of those who fled from the Scum

Battalion were caught, they were instantly executed or sent to become research subjects. These people were thus afraid of Yue Zhong.

Xu Wei frowned and asked, "Are there any Enhancers up there?"

Lei Yun eyed the weapons on their backs with envy, "No! Nangong Tian Feng used to be some small-time hoodlum and learned some martial arts. He shouldn't be an issue for you guys."

A ferocious glint appeared in Xu Wei's eyes, "Good!! Brothers! Let's go!"

The Tiger Head Clan turned out to be some mountain cave, and there was only one man who was wielding a wooden bat, patrolling outside with obvious boredom, from time to time, looking into the cave.

Inside the cave, there were the sounds of moaning.

"Do it!" Xu Wei came up carefully and shot towards the man with the wooden bat.

When the man saw Xu Wei with his huge blade, he immediately turned pale and kneeled, "Spare me, Lord!! Spare me, Lord!! I surrender!!"

"That easy?" The rest of the men were speechless upon seeing this scene.

Chapter 672: Tiger Wolf Army!

Xu Wei barked coldly and charged into the cave, "Continue!"

3 of the soldiers followed Xu Wei and charged into the cave.

They discovered 4 naked men tangled with 11 women, while 2 other younger girls were crouching at a corner. There was a stench in the cave.

One of the males immediately stood up upon seeing Xu Wei and his men, grabbing the blade beside him as he stared at them, "Who are you people?"

Xu Wei looked at Nangong Tian Feng coldly, "You're Nangong Tian Feng? I'm Xu Wei from the Scum Battalion, the 3rd Battalion, 2nd Company, 3rd Platoon under the command of Leader Yue Zhong. We've been tasked to search for survivors in this mountain range. It's not too late if you surrender now, otherwise, only death awaits."

Nangong Tian Feng looked at the strong and burly men, and let out a long sigh. He threw the blade in his hands away, "I surrender."

Tiger looked at all the naked women, as a lustful look appeared on his face, "Captain, I've not touched a woman in a month. There're over 10 here. Shall we take our time to enjoy them?"

The rest of the squad also stared stupidly at the women. They were all criminals of some sorts, that was why they were banished to the Scum Battalion. Not a single one of them did not enjoy women. Being cooped up in the Scum Battalion for so long, they were close to losing control.

Xu Wei laughed coldly, "If you want to toy with them, by all means. Let me remind you though, playing around with a woman while on mission, you'll have to kill another 60 zombies or gain 60 merit points. These 11 are free for you guys to fuck around with,

but if you touch those 2 girls! I will kill you! I'd rather not have you guys drag me down. I still want to enter the Tiger Wolf Army."

Hearing Xu Wei's words, the rest of the squad immediately sobered up. It wasn't easy to earn those merit points. 60 points were enough for them to get out of the Scum Battalion, and with some excess cash to boot.

10 merit points were enough to exchange for 50 dollars of the new currency. Outside, 50 dollars was enough to get a woman for a night. 50 dollars could get them a fresh and clean woman who was considerably prettier than the women in front of them. They would be able to enjoy themselves for an entire night without worrying about anything else.

The women in the cave were dirty and smelly and had traces of whatever the other men left on them. The squad immediately felt that it wasn't worth it.

As for the 2 lolis, there was an order in the Scum Battalion, should there be any case of rape of underage children, the perpetrator would be caught and executed. The entire unit would be equally liable as well.

The Tiger Wolf Army was a unit newly set up by Yue Zhong, with plenty of Enhancers that managed to leave the Scum Battalion. They had all undergone tough training and killed many zombies. Their resolves and mental fortitude were on another level. At the same time, they were conditioned to listen to orders, and they were the best soldiers.

Many of those who earned enough merits and felt that they could not reenter society would aim to enter the Tiger Wolf Army. As a member of such an elite unit, they would regain their pride, position, and strength.

Bai Xiao Sheng was the current commander of the Tiger Wolf Army, leading them to use system equipment to continuously enhance and evolve themselves. It was a unit that was made up

entirely of Enhancers, and every single soldier inside was a tough elite.

Tiger considered the matter from all perspectives and felt that giving into his lust wasn't worth it, and a look of pity flashed in his eyes, "Forget it!!"

Nangong Tian Feng looked at them and spoke carefully, "Sirs, you're here to search for survivors right? I am familiar with the area, I know where there are survivors!!"

Xu Wei and the rest were all strong and well-equipped, their faces ruddy. It was easy to see that they were well-fed.

Nangong Tian Feng might claim to be a leader of this cave, he had to starve frequently. Not to mention his subordinates, most of them were barely skin and bones. That was why the moment Xu Wei and the rest appeared, they instantly surrendered. They were simply not in a position to resist.

Xu Wei's brows arched slightly, as he threw a chocolate bar to Nangong Tian Feng, "Oh! That's great, this is your reward!"

Nangong Tian Feng's eyes flashed with delight the moment he received the chocolate bar, and nodded profusely to express his thanks, "Thank you, sir! Thank you, sir!"

The rest of the survivors within that cave looked on with envy and hope. They had not eaten anything sweet in a long while. This simple chocolate bar was even more appealing than lobsters and luxury food.

Nangong Tian Feng walked out the cave and pointed to a direction, "Sir, after you cross this hill, in about 1 km, there's a camp, with over 300 survivors. Their leader is a pretty strong Evolver."

Nangong Tian Feng looked towards Xu Wei after he finished. Evolvers were a terrifying existence, and they had incredible abilities. Even special forces from before the apocalypse weren't a

match for them. To him, this squad of 5 were not a match for that Evolver.

When Xu Wei heard those words, he frowned, "Evolver? Seems like this is beyond us! I need to notify the Tiger Wolf Army and request for reinforcements!"

Xu Wei pulled out a walkie-talkie and reported, "Hey! It's me, Xu Wei! My squad has discovered a large survivor base, there should be about 300 people inside, and there's an Evolver. Requesting backup from the Tiger Wolf Army!"

"300!! Damn! Well done! Xu Wei, you guys have contributed greatly!! Stay where you are, I'll immediately get the guys from the Tiger Wolf Army to head over." From the other end, an excited voice sounded.

Soon, a unit of about 50 people with helmets, camouflage uniforms, and assault rifles arrived in front of Xu Wei and the rest.

"Strong!! This unit is strong!! They have so many guns!!" Nangong Tian Feng looked at the 50 soldiers and his eyes flashed with shock.

Within the mountain range, as long as someone had weapons, they could establish a small force. 50 gun-toting militants were enough to eradicate and crush many other factions within the mountain range.

The leader of this unit, Liu Niu slapped Xu Wei on his shoulders and exclaimed, "Well done, Xu Wei! As long as we can rescue those 300 survivors, you'll definitely be able to enter the Tiger Wolf Army!"

Xu Wei's eyes flashed with a resolute light as he responded, "Yes! This battle, your subordinate Xu Wei hopes to follow commander in, and pleads commander to grant this request!"

Liu Niu eyed Xu Wei and chuckled, "Fine!! Follow us then, we'll show you the strength of the Tiger Wolf Army!"

Led by Nangong Tian Feng and Lei Yun, Liu Niu brought his 50 subordinates and arrived silently on the opposite hill.

They discovered that the peak was surrounded by a wooden fence, with 4 sentry posts, with 2 soldiers at each post. There were also 8 soldiers at the main entrance, and within the camp, there were many simple wooden houses.

Liu Niu brought 8 soldiers and walked out from the grass, firing his gun at the sky as he hollered, "The people inside listen up! Throw down your weapons and kneel to surrender, otherwise, everyone will die!"

The moment the gunshots rang out, the soldiers turned pale and ran into the camp.

"A bunch of fools! Open fire!" Liu Niu's eyes flashed with unhappiness as he raised their weapons and fired at the fleeing soldiers.

Following the dense gunfire, of the 8 fleeing soldiers, 6 fell to the ground, while the remaining 2 got down on the ground and trembled uncontrollably.

The intense gunfire alerted the leader within the camp, and a skinny Evolver, Shen Tu Yi led 30 subordinates and rushed out the camp.

Shen Tu looked at Liu Niu and his party, his face full of shock and anger, "This brother, I'm Shen Tu Yi, the chief of this Tian Yang Camp, we have no enmity between us, why did you kill my men?"

Liu Niu stared at Shen Tu Yi, barking, "I'm Liu Niu, the Commander of the Tiger Wolf Army 2nd Battalion 3rd Company, 1st Platoon. We're under the command of Leader Yue Zhong, here to extract your people. Shen Tu Yi, you can surrender now, and we can let you live, or, choose to resist and die. You only have 3 seconds to consider. 3...2..."

A ferocious glint appeared in Shen Tu Yi's eyes as he roared,

"Brothers! Prepare for battle!"

Shen Tu Yi was happy with his life as the ruler of his small camp and wasn't willing to submit to anyone else, nor give up his authority.

Peng!

Right after Shen Yu Yi had shouted, 4 sniper bullets fired out. 1 pierced the head of Shen Tu Yi. Although he was a Strength-based Evolver, he could not withstand a single shot from a sniper.

"Those who resist will die! Everyone get down! Otherwise, we'll kill without mercy!" Liu Niu roared out as he pointed his gun at the subordinates of Shen Tu Yi.

Another 10 fully armed soldiers walked out from the forest behind, their guns trained on the men of Shen Tu Yi.

The men from the camp were all afraid, as they threw their guns down and kneeled to surrender.

The entire camp was thus easily conquered by the Tiger Wolf Army.

"Powerful!" Nangong Tian Feng watched how Liu Niu easily smashed the resistance of Shen Tu Yi, and he was filled with even more fear and awe towards them, even more so, the mysterious Leader Yue Zhong behind them.

After they took down this camp, with Nangong Tian Feng's help, the Tiger Wolf Army continued to bash a few more camps around the area and rescued a total of 2,000 survivors.

Chapter 673: 8-Leaf Blue Plant!

There were numerous survivors in tattered clothes scattered throughout the Yin Shan Mountain range. Currently, the riders of the 2nd Brigade, the new 4th Brigade of the Tiger Wolf Army, as well as the soldiers of the Scum Battalion 3rd Battalion were all keeping their eyes on the survivors.

Many of the factions regardless of size were easily breached by the soldiers of the Tiger Wolf Army, and the leaders either submitted or were killed instantly.

The frail and weak survivors were all squatting on the ground, carefully sipping their hot porridge. There was a look of satisfaction on their face.

The hundreds of soldiers from the Scum Battalion were holding whips as they eyed the survivors. The moment any of them tried to use snatch the food of any others, they would face the wrath of the soldiers, suffering a number of whips before being to the backend support of the Scum Battalion.

Within the mountain range, many small factions had appeared due to the small time tyrants, and countless depraved deeds had been carried out. For those who had engaged in crimes too heinous, they were instantly decapitated. Those who committed severe crimes were sent to the Scum Battalion, to be reformed and trained, before becoming soldiers.

A Hummer rolled over from the distance, entering the mountain range. The moment the doors appeared, Yue Zhong, Yin Shuang, Ji Qing Wu and a few others came out.

Lie Ming Yi came forward to salute them, "Leader!"

"Leader!" One by one, the rest of the commanders also came behind Lie Ming Yi and saluted Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong waved his hands and dismissed them, "Go do your

things, don't bother about me!"

"Yes!" Most of these commanders were all soldiers that were deployed over from Guang Xi and Hunan and knew Yue Zhong's character. They left one by one, with only Lie Ming Yi remaining behind.

Under Lie Ming Yi's lead, Yue Zhong came to Lei Yun, and asked, "The report about a missile base in this mountain range, is it true?"

A missile base was a top secret in the country, and it was the first time Yue Zhong had heard about something like this.

If he could gain control over this base, he would gain a terrifying trump card against his enemies.

Lei Yun looked at Yue Zhong with a little fear, "It's true! I stayed near the base for a period of time once. At the start of the apocalypse, I came across the base together with a few officials. However, the base only allowed the officials in, not us ordinary people. I've remembered the location though."

In Lei Yun's eyes, this is the leader of the mighty troops. He was extremely clear on the frightening might these people possessed, and anyone who was suspicious was dragged out to be executed. They didn't look like some motley bunch, and he wasn't willing to antagonize the leader of these powerful soldiers.

Yue Zhong was satisfied, "Good! You're Lei Yun right. As long as the information is real, I will award you with a thousand dollars."

Lie Ming Yi smiled at Lei Yun, saying, "A thousand dollars can buy you a 1,000 jin worth of rice. You're truly lucky!"

Lei Yun immediately expressed his thanks profusely, "Thank you, Leader!! Thank you, Leader!!"

Those who did not starve would not truly understand the value of a thousand jin of rice. With it, Lei Yun could eat his fill for an entire year.

Lei Yun spoke, "Leader! I have an additional piece of information!"

Yue Zhong's eyes were filled with curiosity, "Oh? What is it?"

Lei Yun pulled out a few items, a piece of debris that was the size of 2 fingers as well as a blue plant that had sprouted 8 leaves, handing them to Yue Zhong, "Leader, this is a Mutant Plant that I discovered, the flowers can secrete a strange liquid that is incredibly hard after drying. Based on my conjecture, the hardness of the dried up liquid is even harder than metal, and can be applied over armor."

Yue Zhong took the items and used his strength to pinch. His Strength of 12 times a normal person exploded out, which could twist even a steel bar, but the hardened debris was fine.

His eyes brightened, and he threw the item on the ground, pulling out his Level 5 Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade and slashed the debris.

The blade landed, but the debris was still undamaged.

Yue Zhong picked it up again, and to his surprise, his blade that could slash apart the hull of armored vehicles could not even leave a mark on the debris. It was obvious that the hardness of this liquid was many times tougher than metal.

Yue Zhong turned to fix his gaze on Lei Yun, "Do you know if there are more of this Mutant Plant?"

Lei Yun pulled out 5 blue seeds, "I know!! I even collected a few seeds. Before the apocalypse, I was a botanist."

Yue Zhong looked at Lei Yun and his eyes flashed with a look of appreciation, "Good! Lei Yun, I now appoint you the head researcher over the Central Plains Mutant Research Institute, your responsibility is to conduct research on the various Mutant Plants of Yin Shan Mountain Range. Your rank is Captain, and your first task is to collect more of this 8-leaf Blue Plant."

Lei Yun thanked Yue Zhong excitedly, "Yes!! Thank you, Leader!! Thank you, Leader!!"

Lei Yun knew that once he entered Yue Zhong's group of personnel and become an officer, as long as Yue Zhong did not fall, he would not have to worry about his future.

Yue Zhong turned solemn, "Lie Ming Yi, send an experienced soldier to protect Lei Yun. The matter of this 8-leaf Blue Plant is top secret, do not let anyone else know about it."

The secretion of this plant could harden to become a material even tougher than metal, yet so much lighter than it. It had a wide variety of usage, it could be made into Defence Vests, airplanes, tanks, and much more. If it had landed in the hands of any faction before the apocalypse, it would have become a precious resource. If it were in the hands of any ordinary person, it would be useless, but in Yue Zhong's hands, with his many facilities, it could be exploited fully, just like that laser gun and the Sky Fortress design.

Lie Ming Yi immediately replied, "Yes! Leader!"

Yue Zhong then replied, "Before that, Lei Yun, take us to the missile base!"

"Yes!" Lei Yun replied respectfully.

Under Lei Yun's guidance, Yue Zhong deployed a battalion of Tiger Wolf Army soldiers and headed up

"It's right there!!" From afar, Lei Yun pointed towards a tall mountain.

Yue Zhong looked towards the direction, noticing a long road extending all the way up the mountain. It was obvious that this road was the only road to the missile base.

Yue Zhong and his troops followed the road all the way, eradicating about 20,000 soldiers, and came to a large iron door.

Outside the door, there were 4 security cameras, sweeping across

his party.

Yue Zhong came to the gate and his voice rang out, "My name is Yue Zhong, I hope to talk to your Leader!"

Behind this door was one of China's missile base, and there were all sorts of missiles and rockets inside. Although Yue Zhong had the confidence to blow down the door, he didn't want to take the risk.

Right now, within the compound, inside the command center, 20 men in uniform were arguing.

One of the officers looked at the display, his face scowling, "This bunch of militants actually dare to set their sights on the country's property, what galls!"

To many of these old-timers, they weren't willing to let the weapons of the country fall into the hands of private individuals. Yue Zhong and his people were obviously not here in any official capacity.

Hearing the words of the officer, the rest of the military men exchanged glances, before a young officer spoke up, "Colonel, I think that we should talk to them."

The colonel turned and rebuked, "Nangong Yan, what are you thinking of? What is there to discuss with these bastards? Don't tell me that you want to betray our country and our citizens?"

Nangong Yan stared right back at him and retorted, "Colonel!! It has already been a year since we last heard from the central government! What does this mean? The central government has already most likely fallen. If we continue like this, we will only starve here. We should go out and interact with them, and find out who they are! If they're reliable, I feel that we should the base over.

The colonel was utterly enraged by Nangong Yan's words, and he pulled out the gun at his waist, his body trembling as he roared,

"You! I will execute you, traitor!!"

Nangong Yan closed his eyes and said softly, "By all means! Colonel! Holing ourselves up here is no solution. There's no entertainment, nor hope. I'm going insane! If you want to kill me, do it, please. I hope that you can retain some consideration for the rest of the people."

After the world changed, many people had holed up within this missile base. Many could not take the life anymore and they committed suicide. Even within the military, many killed them. The rest who remained were slowly losing their rationality.

The Colonel looked at Nangong Yan and the rest, "What are you doing?! You want to surrender to those people?!"

"I want to live on!"

"I want to eat my fill!!"

"I want to see the sunlight!"

"..."

After a moment's hesitation, most of the military men stood up one by one.

Chapter 674: Obtaining the Nuclear Bombs!

The Colonel looked at his subordinates with a flash of hurt in his eyes. He sighed, and turned the gun to his own temple, closing his eyes and pulling the trigger.

Peng!

Following the gunshot, the Colonel slumped to the ground slowly. He wasn't willing to betray his own principles and hand this base to Yue Zhong. However, he could not bring himself to kill his subordinates. Furthermore, he had already lost his loved ones to the zombies, there was nothing holding him back. Thus, he committed suicide.

"Colonel!!"

"Colonel!!"

"..."

Seeing that the Colonel had committed suicide, the soldiers under him could not help but shed tears. This superior of theirs had treated them well and fairly through the years, and they were upset that he had chosen to die.

"Colonel, we're sorry!" Nangong Yang came up to the body and saluted, before going to the monitors and spoke into the mic, "I'm the one in charge of this nuclear base, Nangong Yan. Who are you people?"

Yue Zhong replied, "I'm the leader of the Central Plains, with over a million people under me. I hope to receive this nuclear base peacefully. As long as you hand the base to me, whatever requests you may have, I can grant them if they're not too overboard."

When negotiating, both sides had to display their might. Without it, who would be willing to yield? With a million survivors under him, he had the qualifications to persuade the soldiers to submit to him.

After being silent for a while, Nangong Yan asked, "What's the situation with the Central Government?"

Yue Zhong replied, "The capital had already fallen, and it is a land of zombies now."

If the capital hadn't collapsed, and the government had not crumbled, the situation wouldn't have been so bad. In fact, in the first half of the year during the apocalypse, many places were still waiting resolutely for the orders from the government. However, with the flow of time, since there was no communication, the various leaders started to get their own ideas.

Even after a year, there were still many loyal old guards who were still believing in the government, unwilling to hand the state's resources to private mercenaries like Yue Zhong.

Nangong Yan contemplated for a moment, before replying, "I need you to promise our safety. Furthermore, I hope you'll allow all of us here to remain as a troop. If within a year, we find that it's hard to integrate with your troops, we hope that you'll allow us to leave with a certain amount of rations then."

Yue Zhong thought for a while, "I promise you! However, I need you to teach my troops how to use the equipment here!"

Nangong Yan heaved a sigh of relief, "Ok!!"

Both sides came to an agreement, and the huge iron gate was finally opened. A number of survivors in tattered clothes, as well as a putrid stench, came out.

There were over 200 survivors inside the base, with 60 soldiers, the rest of them were their families and other high-ranking officials.

Nangong Yan came up to Yue Zhong and saluted, "Nangong Yan greets Leader!"

Yue Zhong did not stand on ceremony, and immediately ordered, "Give me a detailed report on the situation inside!"

"Understood! Currently, there..." Nangong Yan immediately reported everything he knew to Yue Zhong.

Inside the base, there were at least 15 intercontinental missiles armed with nuclear warheads within the base, instantly giving Yue Zhong a terrifying trump card.

When Yue Zhong heard this, he was instantly overjoyed but managed to calm himself down.

It was something he could only use as a last resort when things seemed bleak. Otherwise, he wouldn't even consider it against the zombies.

The moment those missiles were launched, the earth would be plunged into a radioactive environment. He would have to worry about the possibility of the zombies and Mutant Beasts further evolving.

However, with them, he at least had a trump card. Should there be anyone who dared to threaten him with missiles, he would be able to retort.

After obtaining this base, Yue Zhong quickly assigned his most loyal subordinates over and began the training under Nangong Yang.

Having made his preparations, Yue Zhong went back to Hohhot City.

Lei Yun had obtained a large number of the 8-Leaf Blue Flowers with Lie Ming Yi's help, and after returning to Hohhot City, they established a research center to begin research into the Mutant Flora.

At the same time, Li Guang and Hu-er Ran led 2 troops to continue pushing towards the east, annihilating many zombies, and recovering countless cities and towns.

The main bulk of the zombies had already been collected by that mutant zombie, leaving behind very few that could not withstand

the assault of the 2 well-equipped forces.

As the rate of reclaiming cities grew, more facilities and some military bases were discovered, and the resources were distributed to the 1st Regiment, 2nd Brigade, and the 4th Brigade.

Hu-er Ran's 3rd Brigade was armed with plenty of firearms, and the amount was just sufficient. As for tanks, armored vehicles, unmanned drones, IFVs, and assault helicopters, they weren't provided any yet.

However, even without all those, the 3rd Brigade was still able to make use of their tools and wits to wipe out small zombie hordes. At the same time, Hu-er Ran made use of his system equipment to train up a decent number of Enhancers.

On this day, Hu-er Ran was leading 3,000 riders into a county to lure out the zombies. They prepared some traps and managed to lure the zombies into the traps, before killing them.

Hu-er Ran watched his troops struggling to perform the old-fashioned way, his heart feeling slightly sour, "Our equipment is still lacking. Compared to the 1st Regiment and 2nd Brigade, there's no way to compare."

The 3rd Brigade had the lousiest equipment, and while everyone had a gun, they were all old antiques. They couldn't even compare to their melee weapons. As to the melee weapons, Yue Zhong was generous, whatever the 3rd Brigade needed, the factories would churn them out and deliver to the 3rd Brigade.

Hu-er Ran was clear that the 3rd Brigade was no match for the 1st Regiment, 2nd Brigade and 4th Brigade in terms of weapons. If they were to revolt, even the 4th Regiment that was comprised of ex-Scum Battalion members would be able to take them down easily.

Right as Hu-er Ran was thinking to himself, 13 soldiers in military clothing suddenly appeared from a corner.

The 13 soldiers had just appeared and immediately, rifles were trained on them. The aura exuding from the numerous Enhancer experts caused them to not dare make rash moves.

"Is this Yue Zhong's troops? They don't seem to be much?" The leader of the 13 soldiers assessed the equipment of Hu-er Ran troops and sighed.

Hu-er Ran glanced at them and asked, "Who are you?"

The leader replied solemnly, "I'm Dong Han, and I'm the envoy sent by the Greater China Alliance, we hope to meet Leader Yue Zhong."

Hu-er Ran summoned a decent Evolver and gave an order, "Oh! Got it, Zhali Mu, send them to Hohhot City!"

"Understood!" Zhali Mu responded, and led 100 soldiers to escort Dong Han and his party towards Hohhot City.

"Is this Hohhot City? They already reclaimed it?" The moment Dong Han and his men entered and saw the bustling streets, their hearts were rocked and their eyes filled with shock. They didn't dare believe their eyes.

Dong Han came from the Greater China Alliance, and they had already conquered a few counties, but they didn't dare touch the major cities. In the past, they had tried to attack a city once, and the wave of a million zombies enveloped their troops. Those alive managed to flee, but they had suffered a great loss then.

Hohhot City was a major city and had over 2 million zombies in the past. Such a city was actually reclaimed by Yue Zhong, this caused Dong Han and the rest to feel astonished. What was even more shocking, the streets were filled with food stalls and vendors. Food was precious in the apocalypse, and even in the territories of the Greater China Alliance, there weren't such scenes. After all, the moment there was a display of food, countless people would go crazy.

And yet, since Yue Zhong had reclaimed many cities, and obtained a huge amount of resources, adding on to his research of the Mutant Rice Tree, his food output was enough to support his territories. Since the other factions had not reached his level, they could not do what he did.

Dong Han and his men watched the look of bliss and contentment on the faces of the people here, they couldn't help but feel envious, "This place of Yue Zhong is truly prosperous!! Hohhot City seems to already regain its former stability!"

The Greater China Alliance claimed to have a wide reach, but each of their territories was governed by some small time characters, and they came together to form the alliance. All of their places had not yet recovered to a degree of stability, and the weak were still preyed on by the strong, and there was still lawlessness everywhere.

If it weren't for their own convictions, Dong Han and the rest might have been tempted to join Yue Zhong already.

Chapter 675: Strategic Granary!

Dong Han came up to Yue Zhong, assessing him carefully as he spoke with a neither-overbearing-nor-servile attitude, "I'm Dong Han, the envoy from the Greater China Alliance, pleased to meet Leader Yue Zhong!"

Yue Zhong replied indifferently, "The Greater China Alliance? Whatever your motive, just say it."

Dong Han's gaze turned fervent as he spoke, "Leader Yue Zhong, our Leader Ximen Tian Xiong was a minister before the apocalypse. Our Greater China Alliance is orthodox. I'm here on official orders, representing the country and citizens, hoping that you'll join us. We can work together to kill the zombies and restore the glory of our country. As long as you're willing to join us, Leader Ximen is willing to confer upon you the position of a Chairman of the China Development Committee. You will receive plenty of benefits. In the future, if we successfully reclaim the entire country, based on your contributions, you can become one of the 10 great founding fathers, and receive the respect and admiration of our people."

After the apocalypse, Ximen Tian Xiong had been one of the few surviving ministers and was also one of the most powerful politicians in the past. Because of his status, he had easily gained control over a surviving troop near the capital, at the same time, many factions decided to join him.

The military only served to obey, and since Ximen Tian Xiong was one of the ministers, many soldiers were willing to follow his command. Thus, his rate of expansion had been naturally smoother than Yue Zhong.

Dong Han looked at Yue Zhong with a look of confidence. Using those previous words about the country and orthodoxies, he had managed to persuade countless factions. Most of Ximen Tian

Xiong's troops were in fact won over by Dong Han's words. As long as he brought out promises of glory and riches, those commanders naturally gave in and joined Ximen Tian Xiong.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a strange light, as he replied mildly, "Chairman of the China Development Committee? You want me to hand over the control of my troops?"

Dong Han continued to persuade, "That's right! Leader Yue Zhong, whatever you've been doing is considered privatization, and if we're to pursue matters, your actions have already violated several laws and regulations. However, as the times are different, you have saved many people. As long as you surrender your military might, the government would not fault you for your actions and allow you to continue to contribute to the country. In the future books, you will be known as a hero, for everyone to learn from."

Yue Zhong looked at Dong Han with a sardonic smile, "Enough of your bullshit. This has all been established with my own efforts. Do you want to take it away from me? Fight me for it. If you're here to talk nonsense, you can scram! Just a little minister and he wants to represent the country and citizens? What a joke!"

Currently, Yue Zhong had over 2 million survivors under him, with over 40,000 elite troops, and Dong Han actually intended to try wrestle control with just words. It was impossible for Yue Zhong to give in.

The moment Yue Zhong gave up his military command, his subordinates would be purged. Even his own life would be threatened. If he gave up his military command, his life, possessions, and women would end up in the hands of others, and his fate would no longer be his to control. How could he agree to such conditions?

Even if he agreed, his subordinates would not. They had vested interests, and would definitely not agree to surrender to this

Greater China Alliance.

One bespectacled man beside Dong Han had a furious expression as he barked, "What guts! How dare you speak in this manner? You're going against the country and people!"

Yue Zhong frowned, and one of the soldiers by his side, Niu Guang Ming shot forwards and slapped the bespectacled man harshly. His teeth were knocked out, while Niu Guang Ming spat, "Shut your dog trap! Leader didn't get you to talk, you guys better be obedient!"

Seeing how ferocious and violent Niu Guang Ming was, Dong Han and his men were frightened.

Dong Han knew that his words had no meaning anymore. He hesitated a while, gathering his thoughts, "Our Greater China Alliance would like to form an alliance with you, and join forces to take down a granary of the capital! Are you interested?"

When Yue Zhong heard this, his eyes flashed with bewilderment, and he asked with suspicion, "The granary is such a precious resource, how would you guys be so kind as to share with us?"

The strategic granary of the capital had the ration to feed over 10 million people. It was truly a precious resource. Its important was on par with most armories, and if Yue Zhong himself came in possession of it, he would definitely not share.

Dong Han continued, "There's a huge Mutant Beast horde there, with Mutant Cats, Mutant Dogs, Mutant Snakes, Mutant Cockroaches and all sorts of strange beasts. Our Greater China Alliance is unable to breach through, therefore they have sent me to contact you to recover this granary."

Yue Zhong pondered, before asking, "After we reclaim it, how are we splitting it?"

Dong Han responded smoothly, "50/50!"

Without missing a beat, Yue Zhong retorted, "70/30, 70 belongs

to me, you guys take 30!"

Dong Han frowned, "45/55."

"60/40, 60 me, 40 yours!"

Dong Han immediately broke into a smile, "Deal! 60/40 it is, in any case, there are enough rations there. 40% will suffice for us!"

"You're truly easy to work with." Yue Zhong eyed Dong Han with appreciation and asked curiously, "Dong Han, you're a smart person, why did you start off with that bullshit?"

Dong Han responded with a strange glint, "It's not. Leader Yue Zhong, I have used those words to persuade countless people. Some words, if I don't use them, how would I know what the other party thinks? If I wasn't that forthright, who knew if you were actually willing to join us or not?"

Yue Zhong's eyes lit up and he assessed this man again, his respect and admiration growing, "Dong Han, I appreciate your skills, how about working for me?"

Dong Han was smart and knew when to retreat. His reaction was smooth, and he was truly a professional at communications. Yue Zhong had gathered a number of experts beneath him, and the closest he had was only Lian Da Zhong.

Dong Han chuckled, "Thank you for your praise, Leader Yue Zhong! I'm still a person of the Greater China Alliance, and have no intentions of leaving it as of now."

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with disappointment, "What a pity!"

Dong Han replied, "Other than joining forces to take down the granary, our Greater China Alliance also hopes to buy rations from you."

Yue Zhong asked, "Oh! What do you intend on using to purchase?"

Dong Han replied, "Pearls, gold, diamonds, antiques."

Yue Zhong's face turned sullen as he replied coldly, "We only use weapons, Mutant Beast meat, Mutant Beast materials, and fuel. 1 jin of Mutant Beast meat can exchange for 3 jin of rations. The weight of military weapons shall be the weight of the food exchanged. Mutant Beasts materials will use another form of trading value, for now, the hides are our priority. 1 jin of fuel can exchange for 1 jin of food."

Dong Han immediately chuckled bitterly, all these that Yue Zhong was asking for were what the Greater China Alliance also sorely needed. It was especially so for the military firepower. They were stringent even on ammunition.

Although the Greater China Alliance had opened a few weapons facilities, they were still lacking in factories. Every bullet they spent was a bullet gone. Fuel was also a precious resource now, without it, tanks and other vehicles could not move. As to the Mutant Beast parts, they were all vital materials in armor and weapons. They were obviously reluctant to give them up.

Dong Han pondered before gritting his teeth, "Leader Yue Zhong, we're willing to exchange 4 top beautiful virgins in exchange for 400 tonnes of rations. I can assure you, they're definitely on par with top models. You'll definitely like them. After we take down the granary, we're willing to give you 4,000 tonnes of rations."

Yue Zhong's gaze turned savage, "No! If you want to exchange manpower, it's possible, I want experts in the fields of optoelectronics, machine manufacturing, computing, doctors and any other professional fields. Every expert will be exchanged for a set amount of rations. Other than those, I want all beautiful virgins and a large number of them. Everyone of them will be exchanged according to my standards as well. Many of my subordinates are still single. You can also exchange with children, every child for 2 jin of rations. As to other women, 1 jin for 1."

Dong Han heard this and his scalp turned numb, he could only agree, "Alright!"

Yue Zhong then embraced Zhuo Ya Tong beside him, planting a kiss on her cheek, as he spoke, "Oh right, I'm still lacking some precious stones. My darling here loves them, as well as pearls and the Mutant Beasts nucleus. This time, you may use those nuclei to exchange. The bigger they are the better, the more value in the trade. If you do this well, I'll treat you well."

Dong Han looked at Yue Zhong somewhat enviously, "Understood!"

After both sides had come to an agreement, Dong Han left the place, returning to the Greater China Alliance.

Xie Le County was a small town near Zhang Kou City. There were people within the town, and from afar, one could tell that there were survivors gathered in the town. This was the headquarters of the Greater China Alliance.

Chapter 676: The 5 Heads of the Greater China Alliance!

The Greater China Alliance was one of the largest factions in China. Their reach extended across the country, with 60 member groups. The survivors under them also numbered in the millions. Their headquarters was at the Xie Le County near the capital.

The President of the Alliance was Ximen Tian Xiong, and he had gone to Xie Le County to do a routine inspection. He managed to avoid the initial devastation of the apocalypse and made use of his position to gather troops, establishing the Alliance.

The survivors of the entire alliance were definitely in the millions, but they were all spread out and thus, the actual number in Xie Le County was only about 200,000.

Inside a lavish mansion, 5 men sat on a sofa and stared at Dong Han.

"You're saying that he wants experts in the optoelectronics, mechanical engineering, and medical fields?" One elderly man frowned, his face flushed.

This was the President of the alliance, Ximen Tian Xiong.

Dong Han replied, "That's right!"

A middle-aged man of about 35 to 36, dressed in a suit, asked slowly, "Seems like his ambitions are big. He has already considered the future as a governing body. He isn't simple."

This was one of the 5 heads of the alliance, Chan Wei Hua. He had been a boss figure in the past and awakened as an Evolver. He relied on his own power to become one of the top figures within the alliance.

Another man with a thick gold chain around his neck and branded clothes, with system rings as well as jewelry around his

fingers spoke out, "You guys are overestimating him. The fact that he wants so many women proves that he's just some lustful person. He won't amount to much."

This particular man was called Zheng Da Long, and he was a farmer in the past, awakening during the apocalypse with immense strength. He was one of the rare triple-attribute Evolvers and made use of his strength to carve out a territory for himself, before being inducted into the alliance.

A neat and handsome man with gold-rimmed glasses and a slicked hairdo spoke out coldly, his gaze icy, "He doesn't want just women, he wants to populate."

This man was called Su Xing He, a low-level cadre from before the apocalypse. After awakening as a peak level Evolver, he used his wits and abilities to climb up the ladder, ending up as a head figure. He could tell Yue Zhong's motive.

There was a remaining military personnel with sword-like brows and a strict demeanor. He was called Zhang Jian Xing. He was the commander of the army, and although he and Ximen Tian Xiong were ordinary people, he had the command of the army and was one of the head figures of the alliance.

Zheng Da Long squinted, and asked with an honest look, "Oh? Why population? He already has a million survivors, he shouldn't be lacking in manpower."

Su Xing He had seen through Yue Zhong's objectives, and replied slowly, "His ambition is huge. He wants us to exchange experts because he lacks those talents. He wanted women because he wants to promote childbirth. Without women, how could he grow his population? As for the children, he could groom them and they would rely on him and become his loyal supporters in the future. He doesn't have to worry about men because as long he implements his plans, he could win the men from our hands. He's truly crafty and hard to deal with!"

Hearing his analysis, the rest of the heads fell silent, their brows furrowed, and found themselves agreeing with his words.

Chan Wei Hua asked Su Xing He, "Xing He, what should we do then? We don't have enough resources!"

Xie Le County had 200,000 people, and every day, their consumption was huge. Ximen Tian Xiong had already tried restricting the outflow. Other than the 10,000-strong army and 4,000 subordinates of the 5 heads who ate half their original meals, the rest of the survivors could only get gruel. Even then, it was still an astonishing dwindling of their rations. If it weren't for their scavenging troops heading out to look for food, they could not support themselves.

Yue Zhong's power had already reached the borders of the Greater China Alliance, and they found themselves stuck, between Yue Zhong's harsh terms of exchange and their own resources. Even if there weren't any major operations, they could at most hold out for another week.

Zheng Da Long continued squinting and suggested, "Why don't we try attacking the granary first. Since there're Mutant Beasts there, we should be able to gain some meat from there.

Su Xing He shook his head and rejected, "There should be at least 10 Type 3 Mutant Beasts. If we don't send all our forces, we will definitely lose. But then, if we did so, Yue Zhong would take the chance to attack us. Then whatever we have built up, we would lose."

Type 3 Beasts were no joke, each of them was terrifying existence.

Yue Zhong had 10 Type 3 Treants with him, and each time he launched a night raid, their rate of slaughter was extremely terrifying.

Chan Wei Hua asked, "Then what?"

Su Xing He's eyes flashed with fervor, "We can only exchange the people. Once we hold out for this period and implement that plan, we will recover whatever we've lost."

Ximen Tian Xiong turned silent, before his gaze also turned resolute, "Alright, let him be smug for a while."

Ximen Tian Xiong had made his decision and sent over a thousand experts and professors in various fields as well as a large number of women towards Hohhot City. Yue Zhong also kept his word, sending the rations over.

Without his support, Xie Li County would have faced a catastrophic food shortage.

In this exchange, Yue Zhong gained a large number of talents, as well as a huge pile of precious stones, diamonds, and Mutant Beasts nuclei. Of which, he had obtained 13 Type 3 Nuclei, 60 Type 2 Nuclei, and over 200 Mutant Beast nuclei.

After the Greater China Alliance received the food, they began to send envoys to urge Yue Zhong to join forces with them to attack the granary.

Yue Zhong wasn't particularly in a rush, instead, sending Hu-er Ran and Lie Ming Yi as well as their 2nd Brigade and 3rd Brigade to continue on their mission to wipe out the zombies in the surrounding counties, before reclaiming those territories.

The horde controlled by the mutant zombie had continued northeast, and although they weren't moving towards the capital, there were still a lot of zombies in the nearby counties making their way to congregate. However, these zombies were slowly being cleared by Yue Zhong's troops before they could join up with the rest.

The Greater China Alliance watched as Yue Zhong continued to reclaim territory after territory, and they couldn't sit still, feeling the pressure, and they started to deploy their own troops to

conquer the other towns.

There were over 14,000 soldiers in the Greater China Alliance. Although they had no way of contending with a million-strong horde, they could still deal with tens or hundreds of thousands in those small counties.

Yue Zhong watched them and didn't send any troops to attack them. After all, the zombies at the capital were too many, over 2 million. At the same time, there were too many people in the surrounding towns and counties. With just Yue Zhong's factions, even using 15 missiles would not be able to wipe out the zombies fully. Thus, as long as the Greater China Alliance attacked the zombies instead of him, he could still tolerate their existence.

Just as both factions went on their tacit understanding in clearing the zombies, there was a sudden movement from the 3 million zombies in Zhang Kou City. They left the city and formed a wave that made its way towards the capital.

Yue Zhong sent many unmanned drones to conduct reconnaissance on the zombies, and the moment the zombies left, he immediately deployed the Tiger Wolf Army to head there and clean up the remaining zombies. He reclaimed the city before the Greater China Alliance even had a chance to react.

The Greater China Alliance was plunged into a sudden disadvantage. They realized they were suddenly surrounded on 3 sides by Yue Zhong's factions.

Left with no choice, they could only continue towards the northeast direction and conquer 2 cities, and other smaller villages.

Although they conquered the 2 cities and annihilated over hundreds of thousands of zombies, they lost hundreds of soldiers and wasted a large amount of ammunition. Their military strength suffered a huge loss.

Under their efforts, Zhang Kou City was jointly shared by Yue Zhong and them. Both sides maintained an impasse. They didn't dare to attack Yue Zhong, and Yue Zhong wasn't willing to wipe out this 'ally' that could help kill the zombies.

Yue Zhong knew that if he wanted to swallow them, he would have to pay a huge price as well. In the end, forcing them to fight the zombies wasn't a bad choice.

Chapter 677: Arrival of the Beast Horde!

By now, the Central Plains had an established governing cabinet, and the troops had cleared out the zombies near Zhang Kou City according to plans.

Having secured the control of Zhang Kou City, Yue Zhong then led the 1st Regiment and its armored division, the 2nd Brigade, the 3rd Brigade and stationed them in Zhang Kou City.

After resting for a few days, Yue Zhong personally led the 2nd Brigade and 3rd Brigade, together with the 10,000-strong army of the Greater China Alliance, as they made their way towards the granary in the city.

The Greater China Alliance also sent out their long-time commander Zhang Jian Xing, their strongest Evolver Zhen Da Long, as well as the crafty Evolver Su Xing He.

Along the way, although both troops maintained their guard against each other, both sides had the common goal of taking down the granary. Hence, while tension was high, there wasn't any exchange of fire.

Under those conditions, both armies entered Nan Min Town.

The zombies in Nan Min Town had already been cleared out by the recon soldiers sent to investigate the granary previously.

By the time they entered the town, it was in the evening. Both armies occupied half the town each and began to prepare their dinner.

Yue Zhong's troops ate rice, as well as broth, together with their luncheon meat, Mutant Beast and Mutant Fish meat. Whereas the soldiers of the Greater China Alliance only ate bland cornbread.

The Greater China Alliance had managed to gain a large amount of corn and cornflour after obtaining 2 cities. Thus, their meals became cornbread. As for canned meat, luncheon meat, and all

sorts of nourishing food, these were only issued to the higher command, and the ordinary soldiers could not eat them.

"Shit! They got some really good food there!" One of the Alliance soldiers came back to his own camp, looking at the 2 cornbread in his hands, and thought back to what Yue Zhong's side was eating. He could not help but curse in envy.

Another soldier bit into his cornbread and spoke, "Be content! One month ago, we didn't even have enough to eat, it's already good that we could eat our fill now."

Not so long ago, the Greater China Alliance was facing a food shortage, and few among their troops could eat their fill. Compare to then, they were truly in a better position.

Another soldier looked around before speaking in a low voice, "Did you guys hear? The leader over there is called Yue Zhong, he had already led his troops to conquer Hohhot City, Bao Xi City and Zhang Kou City, and many other places."

One soldier grumbled, "I should have known! We stayed so long in those lousy places, how can we compare with others?"

On one side, there was a valiant leader who had gone to conquer the whole of Central Plains, while the other had kept themselves holed up in a few broken cities. The soldiers were naturally unhappy. They were after all humans with their own thinking and not undead zombies that only knew to follow orders.

That same soldier spoke softly, "Then do you know? It seems that if any of us were to go over and pass their questioning, we could become one of them. As a soldier there, not only is there meat to eat, if one gains enough merit, they can get their own wives and form a family again!"

The soldiers were immediately stirred, as they crowded around in a bid to make things clear, "Is that for real?"

In the camp of the Greater China Alliance, many small groups

started their own conversations, and many were tempted to join Yue Zhong.

There were over 10,000 soldiers in the Greater China Alliance, and they comprised of the survivors that had joined in the past year. Their sense of belonging wasn't as strong. Especially with a situation where they couldn't eat their fill, they were naturally dissatisfied.

In the dark of the night, as night fell over this town, many pairs of eyes lit up in the distance.

A sea of Mutant Rats came rushing towards the town.

"Mutant Beasts!! The Mutant Beasts are here!"

Both Yue Zhong and Zhang Jian Xing had been cautious and deployed many experts to be on sentry. The moment the Mutant Rat horde came close, the alarm was sounded.

The moment the alarm rang out, all the soldiers got ready and gathered in their positions.

After they got in position, there was a huge difference in the troops. Yue Zhong's soldiers had been through countless battles with zombies and Mutant Beasts. After the battles, their experience had groomed them into elites. The moment they heard the alarm, they had swiftly gathered under their respective commanders. As for the Alliance troops, many were just living meal to meal and had not undergone any formal training. They gathered in a messy manner, some even began to panic. That was the difference between a well-trained troop and a motley bunch of people.

"What an elite troop!!" Zhang Jian Xing saw the soldiers under Yue Zhong responding so efficiently, and he looked at his own subordinates, his lips pursed and a chill overcame his heart.

It was not that Zhang Jian Xing did not know the importance of training. However, the Alliance had always been lacking in food,

and if they trained without proper nutrition, it would be dangerous. Their previous food shortage simply did not allow them to.

However, it was not that they lacked elites. 1,000 elite soldiers got into position with a similar speed to Yue Zhong's troops and followed their orders to take up their defenses.

Yue Zhong came to the front lines of the town.

At this time, a number of flares lit up the night and area, and everyone could see the sea-like horde of Mutant Rats making their way towards the town.

"Open fire!"

Bullets flew from the Alliance, blanketing the Mutant Rats.

Yue Zhong watched them and did not issue any order to fire, instead, turning to Bi Lǚ and commanded, "Do it! Eliminate them!"

Bi Lǚ closed her eyes, and like a goddess, she waved her hands and a spiritual wave spread out towards the nearby Treants.

3,000 Treants charged towards the Mutant Rats the moment they were touched by the spiritual wave.

The 3,000 Treants charged right into the horde of Mutant Rats, using their sharp claws to tear the Mutant Rats apart. These were all creatures of above Level 20, their barks were tough, and the claws of Mutant Rats could not pierce through easily. The claws of the Treants were much sharper in comparison.

The 3,000 Treants had stood guard outside the town like rocks, and faced the incoming wave of Mutant Rats, tearing them apart and gobbling up their corpses.

These Treants still had room for evolving, as long as they consumed enough flesh, blood, and essence, they could become stronger.

The commanders of the Alliance looked at Yue Zhong and his

3,000 Treants, their eyes flashing with envy, "Strong! They could actually command such freaks!"

Over at their own side, while their soldiers were firing at will, many of the Mutant Rats managed to breach their defenses and bit their soldiers to death.

However, they made a swift reaction, as a number of firetrucks drove forwards and fired a few arrows with oil into the rats, and lit them up.

Long walls of flames instantly appeared, separating some of the Mutant Rats, and forcing many of them towards Yue Zhong's direction.

The Treants managed to hold off the huge horde of Mutant Rats, as any of them that managed to reach the Treants were instantly sliced apart.

Soon, there was a mountain of Mutant Rats corpses in front of the 3,000 Treants.

As for the human soldiers, they watched quietly as the 2 opposing sides of mutant creatures tore each other apart.

From time to time, one or two of the Treants would be broken down by the combined attacks of the countless Mutant Rats, however, many more Treants would retaliate.

The intense battle continued for an entire half hour, after which, there were suddenly terrifying roars that resounded from behind the Mutant Rats. A number of Mutant Dogs, Mutant Cats, Mutant Lizards, Mutant Snakes, Mutant Scorpions, Mutant Tigers, Mutant Apes, Mutant Gorillas and other variants all appeared, bringing a terrifying pressure.

"Fire the cannons!! Fire the cannons!"

Yue Zhong watched the swarm of Mutant Beasts and his eyes narrowed as he gave the order.

Among the sea of Mutant Beasts, there were many Type 2 Mutant Beasts and giant ones. They were not something that the Treants could handle.

Should the Type 2 Mutant Beasts charge through, the 3,000 Treants would be immediately ripped apart.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Yue Zhong's troops and the alliance troops brought their own heavy artillery, and both sides began to fire, as powerful missiles rained down upon the Mutant Beast horde, blasting large patches of them into oblivion.

Heavy firepower was the answer to dealing with Mutant Beasts hordes. As long as the missiles landed, even a Type 4 Mutant Beast would be heavily injured. Of course, a single round could instantly kill a Type 2 or Type 3 Mutant Beast, but it was not the case for a Type 4 Mutant Beast.

Under the rain of heavy artillery, many of the Mutant Beasts were killed, but much more managed to evade the rain of heavy fire, and charged towards Yue Zhong and the Alliance.

Chapter 678: Fierce Battle with the Mutant Beast Horde!

There were numerous Type 2 Mutant Beasts charging for the 2 armies, each of them possessing a terrifying strength. Facing those Type 2 Mutant Beasts, many of the soldiers of the Alliance began to pull out their rockets and grenade launchers, firing at the Type 2 Mutant Beasts, injuring them gravely. However, even so, the Type 2 Mutant Beasts managed to charge through their lines and began to unleash mayhem and hell upon the soldiers.

With the support of the other soldiers, the Alliance paid the price of 50 lives before killing the Type 2 Mutant Beasts that had breached their defenses.

Over at Yue Zhong's side, 300 soldiers wielded laser guns and fired from afar. The laser beams pierced the heads of the Type 2 Mutant Beasts, continuing through some of the other lesser Mutant Beasts behind them.

When the soldiers of the Alliance saw the laser guns in the hands of Yue Zhong's soldiers, their hearts were filled with shock, "Laser guns! They had already managed to develop such weapons!"

The laser gun was a technology that many major countries were researching into before the apocalypse. However, while the technology of laser existed, converting it into a weapon was likely something that required another 20 years.

However, there were laser guns now in the hands of Yue Zhong's soldiers, and this caused all the soldiers of the Alliance to be shocked. This meant that Yue Zhong already had a mature production line of laser guns. Furthermore, he already had the research ability.

Zhang Jian Xing watched as the soldiers fired the laser guns, turning the heads of the Type 2 Mutant Beasts into sieves, and they

slumped dead after roaring in agony.

His eyes narrowed in shock, and he immediately recognized the threat and importance of such a weapon.

After the world changed, Mutant Beasts were evolving constantly. The Type 2 Mutant Beasts were already largely invulnerable to bullets, and their defenses were strong. While anti-tank missiles might deal some damage, the Type 3 Mutant Beasts were another tier higher.

Ordinary soldiers were helpless against Type 2 Mutant Beasts, but with the laser guns, ordinary soldiers could kill them. In the future battles, any side that had laser guns would have a huge advantage.

Zhang Jian Xing had already realized that be it equipment, training or battle experience, Yue Zhong's troops were vastly superior to his own. If Yue Zhong had wanted them eliminated, he knew they would perish without a doubt.

Zheng Da Long saw how easily Yue Zhong's soldiers were killing the Type 2 Mutant Beasts and he couldn't help but feel a chill, "What a terrifying army!"

Although Zheng Da Long was a peak Evolver, he had no confidence that he could block the lasers. He was filled with trepidation towards the soldiers of Yue Zhong's troops.

"Strong!"

As the soldiers of varying ranks in the Alliance watched, their eyes were filled with a complicated gaze.

With the support of the artillery, numerous Mutant Beasts were blasted to death, and the soldiers of the Alliance and Yue Zhong continued to defend their own positions, withstanding this wave of Mutant Beasts.

After an hour, there was another earthshaking roar from behind the hordes of Mutant Beasts.

10 Type 3 Mutant Beasts appeared in the sight of everybody. One was a 6m-tall Ferocious Ape, another was a 90m-long Type 3 Green Jiao Serpent with a single horn. Another was a 6m-tall Type 3 Golden Scaled Mouse, covered entirely in gold scales. There was a Type 3 Red Panther covered with red scales, a 10m-tall Type 3 Mutant Black Gorilla, a Type 3 Mutant Dog that had thick black fur that made it look like a lion, a Type 3 Giant Turtle with a shell the size of a moveable fortress, a Type 3 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar of about 10m, a Type 3 Steel Armor Bull, 10m-tall and covered in metal, a Type 3 Black-Spotted Spider of about 2m, and finally, a Type 3 Lykoi (Werewolf Cat) that was larger than a panther, with extremely sharp claws.

On top of the Type 3 Red Panther, there was a demon-like creature who stood 3m-tall, covered in a layer of gold scales, it had a tiger head, and yet it had golden wings behind its back. This creature stared at the town coldly.

This creature with a tiger head suddenly let out a piercing howl, and all 9 Type 3 Mutant Beasts responded in kind, before charging right at the town.

Of these beasts, the Type 3 Lykoi and Type 3 Mutant Dog were the fastest, on par with Lightning, and managed to breach the sound barrier.

The Type 3 Lykoi managed to charge right into the camp of the Alliance, and with a flash of its claws, many of the soldiers were ripped apart, their organs and brains splattering everywhere. It was a horrific sight.

Zheng Da Long eyed the Type 3 Lykoi and shouted out in a solemn voice, "Su Xing He, let's charge together!"

"Ok!"

Su Xing He followed behind Zheng Da Long, leading a dozen Evolvers as they rushed towards the Type 3 Lykoi.

Zheng Da Long activated his Second Order Werewolf Transformation, and his muscles rippled, as he transformed into a 3m-tall werewolf. After he transformed, he activated his Second Order High-Speed Movement, and pushed his speed to the limits of the sound barrier, rushing right at the Type 3 Lykoi. With a swipe, he managed to rip a huge chunk of meat from the body of the beast.

The Type 3 Lykoi roared out in anger and slashed back at Zheng Da Long. However, before it could reach his body, a powerful psychic barrier appeared in front of Zheng Da Long.

The Type 3 Lykoi slapped the psychic barrier, causing it to disintegrate.

Zheng Da Long took the opportunity to escape the attack range of the Type 3 Lykoi.

Su Xing He was a psychic Enhancer, and his barriers were all well-controlled. By working together with Zheng Da Long, they had killed many Type 3 Mutant Beasts before.

A dozen Evolvers quickly reached the battlefield, unleashing their skills at the Type 3 Lykoi. If any of them were to go against the beast alone, they would definitely be killed in an instant. However, working together with Su Xing He and Zheng Da Long who held it down, they could quickly unleash their abilities and injure the Type 3 Lykoi heavily.

On the other side, the Type 3 Mutant Dog had reached Yue Zhong's camp, however, it was met with a flash of a pale-white fist. Yin Shuang burst forwards with a terrifying strength.

Although the Type 3 Mutant Dog wasn't a Strength-based Mutant Beast, its strength was still higher than humans, and most Strength-based Evolvers could not match it. It slashed viciously at Yin Shuang, intending to turn this little human into meat paste.

A powerful explosion happened as the 2 parties brought forth

their terrifying strength.

With a loud ‘hong’, the right claw of the Type 3 Mutant Dog was blasted apart, its bones disintegrating. A large amount of blood sprayed out, and the ferocious dog was also sent tumbling back in a pathetic manner.

"Strong!!" Yue Zhong watched how Yin Shuang had sent it flying and praised. A single fist could actually send a Type 3 Mutant Beast flying back, her strength was truly terrifying.

Among the intelligent life forms Yue Zhong had, Yin Shuang did not have the ability to summon other Sea Mutant Beasts like Hai Lan, nor the ability to control a Mother Tree or other Treants like Bi Lù. She didn’t seem to have any special skills, except her pure strength and speed. Even Yue Zhong with his Steel Body would be gravely injured if punched by her. She was truly an intelligent life form meant for combat.

"Enemies of Father, die!!" Yin Shuang’s eyes shone with a bloodthirsty light, and her entire body shot forwards like a cannonball, her fist blasting towards the body of the Type 3 Mutant Dog. It caused the entire body to cave in, and a number of bones broke.

The pitiful Type 3 Mutant Dog flew through the air, spitting out blood.

Yin Shuang continued to give chase, forcing it to retreat further.

Yue Zhong looked at the other 7 incoming Mutant Beasts, and pulled out his Electromagnetic Gun, firing at the 10m-tall Type 3 Black Gorilla.

Although it was a large beast, its reaction was swift. Yue Zhong had just fired, and it already dodged to the side.

Yue Zhong cocked the gun once more, and a beam shot out, penetrating the body of the Black Gorilla, leaving a large, smoking hole.

The Type 3 Black Gorilla roared out in rage and pain and charged at Yue Zhong as though nothing had happened. Its wound from the Electromagnetic Gun was healing at a speed visible to the naked eye.

The Type 3 Black Gorilla wasn't exactly fast, but it was still at least 18 or 19 times faster than an ordinary human. However, its defense, recovery rate and strength were among the strongest of the Type 3 Mutant Beasts. As long as its head was not damaged, or its heart pierced, it could quickly recover.

Chapter 679: Strange Change!

The Type 3 Green Jiao Serpent opened its jaws and activated its innate ability. A large green cloud of poison spread out all over the soldiers of the alliance, enveloping the defense post.

Many soldiers instantly started to rot, their flesh dripping off their bones. They struggled for a while, before helplessly turning into a puddle of liquid.

The soldiers of the Alliance watched as their comrades were dissolved into liquid and their faces were filled with shock. Many were stricken by fear and immediately turned to flee.

With that single attack of the Type 3 Green Jiao Serpent, the defense post of the Alliance immediately crumbled, and the suppressing fire on the Mutant Beast also stopped.

However, there were still elites within the Alliance, and Zhang Jian Xing quickly assigned a platoon of soldiers to charge forward and defend against the attacks of the Mutant Beasts.

After spitting out the poison fog, the Type 3 Green Jiao Serpent swiftly headed towards Yue Zhong's direction to spew out another round.

Yue Zhong's eyes turned cold and he flicked his right hand, congealing a ball of Devil Flame. He then threw a punch towards the skies, and a beam of flame that seemed to be able to burn through everything fired at the poison fog, incinerating the green fog into smoke.

The Type 3 Green Jiao Serpent wanted to continue spewing its poison, but it was unfortunately met with a volley of artillery fire, enveloping it.

Hong! Hong!

Following the sound of an explosion, the Type 3 Green Jiao Serpent was injured heavily by the blasts and was sent tumbling to

one side.

"Chance!" A small cat hidden at a high vantage point watched quietly, and its eyes flashed with a human-like intelligence.

As the Alliance and Yue Zhong's forces were entangled with the Type 3 Mutant Beasts, a number of large trucks came from the distance. From within them, numerous Kingdom of God soldiers, Adjudicators and Judges came charging out wearing high-level Defense Vests.

These Kingdom of God troops began to launch an assault on Yue Zhong's troops.

One soldier came up to Zhang Jian Xing in panic and reported, "Commander!! Commander, it's bad! The Kingdom of God has just attacked Yue Zhong's forces!"

"What? Without my order, how can they choose this time to attack? If the Yue Zhong's troops are done, we will be killed by the beasts as well! Mr. Ereka! This wasn't our agreement!!" Zhang Jian Xing's face turned steely as he questioned the European beside him.

According to the agreement between the Alliance and the Kingdom of God, both sides would launch an attack on Yue Zhong's forces after they had repelled the wave of Mutant Beasts. The Kingdom of God would then support the Alliance to swallow up Yue Zhong's forces. Zhang Jian Xing had not expected for Ereka to suddenly choose this time to attack.

Ereka revealed a carefree smile, "Mr. Zhang Jian Xing, this is the best chance to kill Yue Zhong. We will not let go of this chance. Thank you for your foolishness, you are of no use now. Go and die."

As he smiled at Zhang Jian Xing, another European beside him who wore a black leather suit grabbed at Zhang Jian Xing with a stern expression. 5 air blades shot out from his fingertips and

instantly sliced Zhang Jian Xing's head off.

"Go to hell, yellow-skinned monkeys!" Another male in a jacket and cowboy pants laughed savagely and pointed.

A number of transparent lines shot out from all directions, and twirled among the people present, slicing the numerous soldiers of the Alliance into pieces.

As things had progressed too fast, the experts and commanders of the Alliance had not the time to react. They didn't expect their ally to act against them, and they died with a look of loss and shock on their faces.

Erek looked at the corpses with an expression of distaste, speaking to Wade and Wilson, "Wade! Wilson! Yue Zhong is yours to handle. Once you've accomplished your mission, let's head to Heaven's Playground to enjoy ourselves properly!"

Wilson, who wore the cowboy pants laughed, "Your treat!"

Erek replied, "OK!"

"Alright! Then you can wait here for our good news!" Wilson chuckled and in a flash, both he and Wade disappeared from their location, making their way towards the distance.

"Fuck! Those bastards truly had something up their sleeves, they actually chose this time to attack! Damn it!!"

Yue Zhong had always been on guard against the Alliance and had likewise stationed a few soldiers of the 3rd Brigade to keep an eye on them. The moment the Kingdom of God made a move, Huer Ran cursed and led his elites to defend their positions, engaging the Kingdom of God in combat.

These Kingdom of God elites had the advanced rifles and they even had infrared vision, as well as other advanced equipment. As for the Judges and Adjudicators, they were all from Germany and had undergone strict military training, as well as life-and-death situations. Coupled with the job change of the system, their

combat prowess had been pushed to another tier. Although there were only 800 of them, the moment they attacked, they completely suppressed the 3rd Brigade.

"Commander! We're being pummeled here! Please send help!"

"Commander, please send help! A platoon! At the very least! We're going to lose at this rate!"

"....."

The Judges and Adjudicators were led by 12 Divine Envoys and 36 Envoys-in-waiting, and they launched a terrifying assault on the 3rd Brigade.

Modern warfare took lives extremely fast due to the firearms against firearms, unlike in the past, where melee combat was more drawn out. However, due to the apocalypse, there were Evolvers and Enhancers and all sorts of new battle techniques. Many Evolvers could make use of their powerful skills to attack enemies, causing the speed of the battle to become even faster.

The Divine Envoys were all peak Evolvers, and their battle ability would not lose to Hu-er Ran. With 12 of them attacking, the tide of the battle was with the Kingdom of God, and every second, there was a 3rd Brigade soldier being slaughtered.

Hu-er Ran heard the pleas for help and his head hurt, "Those bastards, how are those foreigners so strong?!"

Suddenly, his mind became clear, "The Kingdom of God! That's right, they're the soldiers from the Kingdom of God! No wonder they're so strong! Zha Ci, go inform the leader, request support from him!!"

"Understood!" Zha Ci replied and quickly went over to Yue Zhong's side.

Hu-er Ran then ordered solemnly, "Hua Bu La Tuo, go lead the special forces of the 3rd Brigade!"

Hua Bu La Tuo's Special Forces within the 3rd Brigade was formed of a number of Mongolian elites after they had joined Yue Zhong. There were 22 natural Evolvers and had been part of the Qie Xue Forces in the past.

"Yes!" Hua Bu La Tuo acknowledged and rushed off.

Hua Bu La Tuo led the forces of the 3rd Brigade and clashed with the Kingdom of God forces. Although they had suffered casualties under the assault of the Kingdom of God, they were extremely strong-willed and had no intentions of retreating.

The entire 3rd Brigade knew there was no way back for them, the moment they fled, Yue Zhong would exterminate them on legit grounds. By then, they would no longer have their own troops nor pride. To them, honor was the only thing keeping them banded together. Without it or resolution, it was hard to become a top-notch force.

"Trash! On what grounds do you yellow-skinned monkeys think you can impede us?! Go to hell!" One Divine Envoy became a huge werewolf, and his eyes flashed with a vicious glint. He laughed savagely, and charged forwards, tearing out the heart of one soldier from the 3rd Brigade.

Countless bullets fell upon the werewolf, and he managed to dodge most of them, while those that hit just bounced off.

"Animal!!" One soldier roared out in fury, his eyes bloodshot as he charged for the werewolf.

"Trash! Since you want to die, I'll grant it to you!" The werewolf laughed cruelly, his body flashing and his claws entered the chest of the soldier.

The soldier revealed an ugly smile as the grenade in his hands landed on the ground, and with a huge boom, the explosion enveloped both of them together.

As the dust settled, the werewolf's right arm and leg were blasted

apart, his body riddled with wounds, but even then, he still had not died.

"How could....this...be?" The werewolf's eyes were filled with shock, at this time, 2 rocket launchers blasted out on his body, blasting his body apart.

A Divine Envoy of the Kingdom of God had died in combat!

This was the cruel battlefield, even peak Evolvers would be killed by ordinary people they underestimate. After all, these were ordinary soldiers with extraordinary fighting spirit and powerful weapons!

Chapter 680: Fierce Battle with the Apostles!

Wilson came to the battlefield and saw that while the KoG soldiers had the advantage, they still could not destroy the 3rd Brigade entirely. He chuckled coldly, "What an eyesore! They still haven't settled this yellow monkeys. Wade, it's our turn! Let's go kill all the Evolvers first!"

Wade nodded slightly and immediately charged towards the Special Forces led by Hua Mu La Tuo.

In a few breaths, Wilson and Wade had appeared in front of the Special Forces.

The 2 of them were quadruple-attribute Evolvers, with Strength, Agility, Spirit, and Endurance as their main attributes. They were peak Evolvers and their system equipment was considered top-notch, gathered through the efforts of the Kingdom of God. They were at least Level 4 and above.

Wilson immediately waved his hands the moment he appeared in front of the Mongolian Special Forces, sending 5 blades of air out. That caused 5 soldiers of the 3rd Brigade to be sliced in two at the waist, fresh blood pouring everywhere.

Wade transformed into a blur, with 10 transparent lines on his fingers as sharp as knives. He charged through the crowd, slicing the soldiers into countless parts. Within the Special Forces, no one seemed to be able to defend against the 2 of them.

"Beast!! I'll kill you!!" Hua Mu La Tuo watched as the 2 Apostles slaughtered his subordinates, and his eyes turned bloodshot, before leading 7 Evolvers towards them.

Hua Mu La Tuo was a Level 60 Spirit-based Evolver, and his main skill was Earth Manipulation. As he slapped down hard on the ground, a number of earth spikes shot out from the ground, each

about 6m-tall, striking at Wilson and Wade.

The 2 Apostles flashed and dodged the spikes like ghosts.

"Die!" The 7 Evolvers formed a small team that launched a sudden assault on Wilson with a pronged attack.

A number of Gravity pulses, flaming arrows, flying blades and ice shards formed a myriad of attacks that slammed towards Wilson, together with a few other shockwaves, weapons as well as summon beasts.

"It's useless! There's only one outcome for you guys, which is death!" Wilson faced the onslaught of attacks and his face revealed a cold smile. He extended his fingers and 7 large air blades shot out as though they had a will of their own, instantly slicing the 7 Evolvers into halves.

After taking out the 7 Evolvers in a single move, the myriad of attacks dissolved onto an air barrier that Wilson had conjured around him, not damaging him in the slightest.

"How is this possible? How is this strong?" Hua Mu La Tuo stared at the uninjured Wilson, his eyes flashing with shock. The 7 Evolvers had joined hands, and their attack was something even Hu-er Ran dared not face head-on. However, they had actually died in an instant under Wilson's methods, and Hua Mu La Tuo could not believe his eyes.

"Go to hell!" All of a sudden, there was a shout, and 10 transparent lines pierced through his head before they started spinning and sliced up his brain.

Hua Mu La Tuo, the strongest expert within the 3rd Brigade, had died!

With his death, the rest of the soldiers immediately went crazy, pulling out their weapons and firing madly at the 2 Apostles. They had plenty of experience and knew that if they were to charge forwards like bees, they would only rush to their deaths.

Only by having Hu-er Ran, their own peak Evolver to hold them off, the rest of them could find the chance to take them out.

"Are you guys Apostles?" Just as the 2 brothers were preparing to slaughter the rest of the 3rd Brigade, a voice resounded.

"Leader!"

"Leader is here!!"

"Long live Leader!!"

"..."

The moment the voice resounded, the entire 3rd Brigade cheered out in an earthshaking roar. In the past, they had been Yue Zhong's enemies, but even then, they were full of respect for him. When on the battlefield, as long as Yue Zhong came personally, they would achieve victory. With such an aura, not only did they roared out in triumph, their morale was pushed high again.

Any troop that had victories and glory under their belt, would be able to grow even more in confidence with each additional victory.

At the same time that Yue Zhong appeared, 8 high-level Treants, 2,000 low-level Treants of above Level 30, as well as the 10 Type 3 Treants charged out and engaged the KoG soldiers.

Wilson and Wade stared fixedly at Yue Zhong, this man was their target. As long as they could kill this man, they would have done a great deed for their organization, and their position in the Kingdom of God would be further cemented. Their resources would be more as well.

The Apostles were the strongest existences of the Kingdom of God, however, there were only 12 Apostles, each of them representing the peak level of power. The closer the number was to 1, the stronger they were. Wilson and Wade were the last 2 Apostles, and they sought to gain a better ranking and foothold. Only then, they would gain more resources.

Wade eyed Yue Zhong with a look of excitement, "You're Yue Zhong? You'll die here today! I will use your head as my wine cup. A cup made out of the skull of an expert on the level of us Apostles. It truly makes me excited. Haha!! Go to hell!"

10 strings had already shot out from behind Yue Zhong, making their way towards his head.

Wade had only about a 2km-distance in handling the transparent lines. Within that distance, the strings could even pierce the hulls of armored vehicles. He could also assassinate numerous experts. Before he had become an Apostle, he had made use of this ability to wipe out plenty of strong enemies.

The line moved, and Yue Zhong was filled with a bad feeling. The possibility of death loomed in his heart, and his body was surrounded by a green radiance, as the Bronze Spiritual Bell protected him.

The 10 transparent lines slammed into the shield, and there was a grating sound of metal striking metal.

"You're an Evolver that makes use of strings!" Yue Zhong discovered that ordinary people could never make out the transparent lines.

"Kill him!!" Wade and Wilson both pointed at Yue Zhong and roared.

The remaining Divine Envoys and Envoys-in-waiting charged at Yue Zhong together with the rest of the Judges.

Yue Zhong watched them and coldly laughed as he ordered, "Fire the cannons!"

Hong! Hong! Hong!

With loud bangs, a volley of heavy artillery came raining down on the elites of the Kingdom of God, blasting many of them into pieces.

300 soldiers were hiding behind cover, armed with laser guns, and they began firing at the KoG soldiers.

Many laser beams shot out towards the KoG soldiers, and one werewolf had was even turned into a sieve with multiple smoking holes on his body. One of them directly pierced his spine, and he crumpled to the floor.

Wade saw the 300 soldiers appeared with laser guns, slaughtering his subordinates, and he roared out in shock, "How is it possible?! You should only have 500 laser guns, how could you have an additional 300 more?!"

In the reports on Yue Zhong, the Kingdom of God thought that Yue Zhong only had 500 laser guns, and the Central Plains weren't equipped to manufacture them. They had seen that Yue Zhong's forces had fought off the wave of Mutant Beasts with all the laser guns they assumed Yue Zhong to have, that was why they had launched their attacks.

"Your information is out of date!" Yue Zhong laughed coldly, and opened his palm, as a terrifying Devil Flame dragon shot out towards Wade.

Wade's expression turned ugly, and he retaliated by sending his strings towards Yue Zhong from different directions. At the same time, more strings shot in front of him to form a huge shield.

The dragon made out of Devil Flame swallowed the shield, and in a flash, it was incinerated. Without stopping, the Devil Flame continued to pounce towards Wade.

Yue Zhong's flame ability was precisely the bane of Wade's ability, as the flames could burn the wires that Wade controlled. Other abilities could not do the same.

Wade waved his hands, and a shield of light appeared in front of him.

The Devil Flame dragon exploded on the shield of light and

shattered it.

As for Wade, he had retreated dozens of meters.

Wilson's eyes flashed coldly and he conjured up a blast of air from behind him, sending him hurtling through the air towards Yue Zhong. He pointed at Yue Zhong and sent 7 sharp blades of air towards him.

Yue Zhong had already activated his Shadow Steps and Bone Encompassing Armor, and though he could not see the air blades, he had already sensed them through his danger perception and abundant battle experience. He pulled out his sharpest weapon, the Flame Blade made of the claw of the Flame Bird, and slashed apart 6 of the air blades with a burst of flames.

The last air blade managed to slam into his left shoulder, breaking the bone armor but was stopped by the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake hide underneath.

Chapter 681: Collapse!

Yue Zhong was also sent flying back a few meters due to the powerful skill.

Bai Xiao Sheng, who had already evolved into a Strength and Agility dual-attribute Evolver shot towards Wilson with a cold look, bringing his blade down.

"Trash! Die!" Wilson's attack was broken and his eyes burned with a furious gaze. He pointed towards Bai Xiao Sheng, sending another 4 air blades towards him.

A suffocating pressure enveloped Bai Xiao Sheng and his face fell as he slashed out with blade beams, while retreating quickly.

The 4 air blades managed to breach his attacks and landed on his body. One in particular actually pierced through the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide on his body, leaving a deep wound as fresh blood flowed from his shoulder.

Bai Xiao Sheng looked at Wilson with a look of shock, "Strong!! This is an Apostle of the Kingdom of God? Truly on another level!"

Yue Zhong had led his troops to launch a night raid on the 2 Apostles the other time, and it was due to Yin Shuang that managed to fend off one of the Apostles, while the rest of the soldiers had injured the other Apostle.

As Yin Shuang was tied up with the Type 3 Mutant Beast, these 2 Apostles had appeared with their incredible fighting prowess, and none of Yue Zhong's subordinates could handle them.

It was precisely because of the Apostles' strengths that the Kingdom of God was able to expand in so many areas. As long as an Apostle appeared in a local area, there would be almost no trouble whatsoever. Each of them was on par with an entire elite battalion. They could single-handedly destroy a faction of 10,000 with no problems.

Yue Zhong retreated slightly, his eyes flashing and he barked, "Qing Wu! Do it!!"

A 2m-tall blue, human-shaped biological armor suddenly appeared with a 1.5m-long blade, slashing at Wilson with a bright green blade beam.

"Fast!!" Wilson's face finally fell, and he even felt a sense of danger for the first time. He was forced to retreat, his right hand extending out. 7 sharp blades of wind that could pierce through even the hulls of armored vehicles fired at the blue armor.

Ji Qing Wu was controlling the Biological Armor within, and she did not dodge the incoming air blades, instead, her eyes flashed with a hint of madness. Her blade came slashing down, slicing apart 2 wind blades before she continued towards Wilson.

The remaining 5 wind blades landed on the blue Biological Armor, and caused deep gashes, but ultimately not slicing through nor damaging the suit.

Wilson flipped his hands, and a bright shield appeared, blocking in front of him.

The terrifying blade came slashing down on the white shield and split it apart. As the blade continued through its trajectory, Wilson's Level 4 Defense Vest was sliced through, and his right arm was chopped off.

Ji Qing Wu had chosen to strengthen her sword Qi as her path. Her selected Job was the Swordsman, which allowed her to evolve her skill into the Level 4 Sword Radiance. After enhancing sure-kill skill, when she activated it, it was truly unbridled and uninhibited, slashing through the Type 4 Mutant Beast hide like it was nothing.

However, in training this skill, there was a requirement, which was to give up all long-range attacks. After Ji Qing Wu learned this skill, she had no way of picking up any other long-distance skills through the system.

"AH!!! IT HURTS!!! IT HURTS!!" Wilson's face was contorted in pain as he grabbed what remained of his right shoulder, and a huge pocket of air blew him up into the sky.

Ji Qing Wu eyed Wilson coldly as he was forced away by her.

At the next instant, an Empowered bullet shot through the skies, blasting at Wilson.

Wilson suppressed the pain and conjured another shield, forcefully defending against that shot.

"Wade, retreat!!" Wilson roared out, as he commanded the air around him to propel him through the sky.

"It's too dangerous, these uncouth yellow monkeys are truly something, seems like we need the 1st Apostle here." Wade's heart was shocked, and he abandoned the rest of the KoG soldiers, rushing into the distance.

These Apostles were truly strong, but they were more afraid of death than most others. As long as they remained alive, they could enjoy life's pleasures, but if they were to die, they would have nothing.

And since each and every Apostle was an important tool of the Kingdom of God, the KoG would not blame them. Even if they decided not to be in the KoG anymore, they could easily become high-ranking members of any other factions. Under such circumstances, with the exception of a few Apostles, the rest were all selfish, and once they felt any danger to their lives, they would choose to retreat.

"They fled real quick!" Yue Zhong watched as Wilson and Wade both abandoned everything with such decisiveness and was shocked.

The escape of the 2 Apostles caused much mayhem and chaos within the Kingdom of God soldiers. The remaining Divine Envoys and Envoys-in-waiting immediately fled as well.

The Judges and Adjudicators were plunged into despair, and some became enraged and fought with more vigor, while others threw their weapons down to surrender. Some chose to flee.

As Yue Zhong was intending to execute all of them, the troops of the Alliance fell back from their defense post like a surge of flood waters.

The Alliance was not comparable to the troops of Yue Zhong, and they were already holding on with all their might. After Zhang Jian Xing was assassinated by Erek, the troops crumbled without command.

Zheng Da Long and Su Xing He were both peak level Evolvers with impressive fighting strength, however, the brains behind most of the operations on the ground had been Zhang Jian Xing. With the death of the 'brains', the huge troop was easily swatted around by the Mutant Beast horde.

The thousands of soldiers of the Alliance fled in different directions, chasing behind them were the Mutant Beasts.

"AH!! NO!!! AHH!!! AH!!!" One soldier ran slower than the rest, and dozens of Mutant Rats immediately pounced onto him, knocking him to the ground. In an instant, countless Mutant Rats came scurrying, completely burying him out of sight.

When they left, there was only a pile of bloodied bones.

A Type 2 Mutant Bullfrog of about 4m-tall continued to hop quickly, its elongated tongue shooting out once in awhile to latch onto some unfortunate soldiers, sucking them into its mouth. It then clamped down hard with its mutated sharp teeth, crushing the soldiers before gobbling them.

Zheng Da Long and Su Xing He fled quickly, and they instantly jumped over the rest of the soldiers, making their way out of town.

As Zheng Da Long was about to escape successfully, the castle-like Mutant Giant Turtle activated its innate ability, firing out a

terrifying mist of frost.

Wherever the mist touched, everything would be frozen solid in an instant, turning into shiny ice sculptures. Zheng Da Long was caught in the mist, and he immediately froze. Within the ice sculpture, his expression of shock could be seen.

Su Xing He saw this and his face turned pale. With a flicker of his body, he disappeared into a house within the town.

By now, the entire town had been surrounded by the Mutant Beasts. Those soldiers that tried to flee out were easily picked off.

Under such circumstances, the Alliance soldiers could only flee towards the defense post of Yue Zhong's troops as it was the safest.

The disorder caused the soldiers of the Alliance and Kingdom of God to be squeezed together, and both immediately engaged in a slaughter among themselves.

Yue Zhong took a look at the chaos and his eyes blazed with fury, "The Kingdom of God is truly damnable!"

Originally, the Alliance and Yue Zhong's troops could still somewhat hold off the Mutant Beast Horde. However, the balance was broken because of the interference of the Kingdom of God, and even Yue Zhong's troops were plunged into danger. If they were not careful, Yue Zhong's troops might end up being annihilated.

"Save me! Let me through!"

"Help!!

"..."

The soldiers of the Alliance rushed past the KoG soldiers and tried to plead with the soldiers of Yue Zhong. Behind them were the Mutant Beasts, and in front of them was dense gunfire. They could only beg Yue Zhong for help.

Yue Zhong went to a corner and roared out, "ALL OF YOU COME HERE! Put down your weapons and get in orderly!"

The soldiers of the Alliance all heaved a sigh of relief and came to the designated point to put down their weapons.

The Judges and Adjudicators of the Kingdom of God also raised their hands and called out, "We surrender! We surrender!!"

Being abandoned by the 2 Apostles, those elite soldiers of the KoG felt despair, they didn't want to die in the jaws of those Mutant Beasts as well.

These elites of the Kingdom of God might be Aryans but they were also humans and feared death just like anyone else. After being deserted by their leaders, their fighting spirit plunged.

Yue Zhong pondered a while and chose to accept the surrender of the KoG elites, "Come over here, and put down your weapons, before lining up orderly."

Chapter 682: Fierce Battle with the Type 3s!

The KoG elites also began to put down their weapons and submitted to Yue Zhong.

At this time, the Mutant Giant Turtle turned its head and looked at Yue Zhong's side. It opened its huge mouth and shot out the freezing mist again.

As the cold air churned, a number of elites of the KoG and soldiers from the 3rd Brigade froze solid.

Yue Zhong glanced at the Mutant Giant Turtle and hollered, "Fire the cannons!!"

Hong! Hong! Hong!

A number of heavy cannons immediately rained down upon the area that the Mutant Giant Turtle was at, blasting dozens of the Type 2 Mutant Beasts around it into pieces.

As the dust cleared, a huge chunk of ice appeared in Yue Zhong's eyes. Within it, the Type 3 Mutant Giant Turtle was uninjured, it was just that the ice was shattered all around it.

The Type 3 Mutant Giant Turtle was extremely slow, and even at its maximum speed, it was only about 10 times faster than an ordinary human. However, its innate ice ability was extremely strong, using it to turn other Type 3 Mutant Beasts into ice, and as defense, it can wrap itself such that even cannons could not damage it.

Even so, withstanding that volley of attacks had depleted much of the Type 3 Mutant Giant Turtle's ability, and it could not utilize its innate ability for the time being.

On the other side, the Type 3 Mutant Dog had finally been defeated by Yin Shuang as its corpse dropped into the town. A number of soldiers quickly came forward to bring the body away to deal with it.

Every single part of the Type 3 Mutant Dog was a treasure, and Yue Zhong would not allow it to be devoured by other Mutant Beasts.

When the Type 3 Mutant Dog was killed by Yin Shuang, the Type 3 Lykoi and Type 3 Gold-scaled Rat King charged at her.

"Great! Since you're all Father's enemies, I'll pummel all of you!!" Yin Shuang watched the approaching Type 3 Mutant Beasts and her beautiful eyes flashed with an excitement. The battle lust in her blood boiled, and her entire being leaped into the air, bringing her fist whistling towards the claws of the 2 Type 3 Mutant Beasts.

Following a terrifying shockwave, the Type 3 Mutant Lykoi and Gold-scaled Rat King were both sent flying by Yin Shuang, and they both spat out blood.

Shockingly, these 2 close combat-type Mutant Beasts were not a match for Yin Shuang even after joining hands.

Just as Yin Shuang blasted the 2 Type 3 Mutant Beasts back, the huge Type 3 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar turned its attention to her and opened its mouth to fire its innate ability. It was a powerful soundwave that was condensed into a ball like a cannon that hurtled towards Yin Shuang.

Without enough time to react, Yin Shuang bore the full brunt of the soundwave, and her little figure trembled slightly, losing control for the first time.

The Type 3 Black-spotted Spider immediately sprang forth and channeled its own ability, which was its silk, turning into spikes even sharper and tougher than steel beams.

As Yin Shuang was still reeling from the soundwave, her body was numb and she could not control herself. At the next moment, those silk spikes shot and pierced into her. While her defense was terrifying enough to block the impact of guns and cannons, faced with those sharp spikes, she was helpless.

"It hurts!! It hurts!! Father, I'm in pain!!" Yin Shuang's face contorted in pain when she was pierced by those spider silk, and tears flowed down her cheeks, while blood trickled from her lips.

The current state that Yin Shuang was in right now was pitiful, just like a doll that had been toyed with till it was ragged.

The Type 3 Black-spotted Spider tugged once forcefully, pulling Yin Shuang towards it.

Suddenly, there was a large burst of flames in the skies, turning the spider silks into cinders.

Yue Zhong appeared by Yin Shuang's side and held her tightly in his arms. He saw the numerous wounds caused by the Type 3 Black-spotted Spider, and the frail-looking Yin Shuang, his expression full of heartache as he spoke, "I'm sorry Yin Shuang, I came late!"

Yin Shuang didn't look like a fierce monster that could punch 2 Mutant Beasts away right now, instead, she looked like a broken little girl.

Yin Shuang saw Yue Zhong's face and her eyes lit up with happiness, "You're not late Father. Father is really Yin Shuang's hero! Yin Shuang loves Father a lot!"

"Turn to ash!" Yue Zhong turned to face the Type 3 Black-spotted Spider and with a ferocious look, he sent a terrifying tornado of Devil Flames towards the Mutant Beast.

At the same time, a number of laser beams fired at the other Type 3 Mutant Beasts, preventing them from assisting the Type 3 Black-spotted Spider.

The Type 3 Black-spotted Spider seemed to sense the imminent threat of death and opened its mouth to spit out a huge amount of silk that was even tougher than alloy towards the approaching flames.

As the spider silk came in contact with the flaming tornado, it

instantly sizzled and turned to ash, and soon, the Type 3 Black-spotted Spider was also enveloped by the flames.

As the flames disappeared, there was only a Beast Nuclei on the ground.

After killing the Type 3 Black-spotted Spider in a single strike, 2 gusts of wind blew towards him forcefully, as the Type 3 Lykoi and Type 3 Gold-scaled King Rat charged at him with a terrifying speed. Their claws made to slash towards his head with the speed of sound. Currently, Yue Zhong's arms were wrapped around Yin Shuang, and he had no means of facing the 2 Type 3 Mutant Beasts at the same time.

Right at this time, from the dark, a small odachi slashed out with a profound beam, slashing onto the Type 3 Lykoi.

In a flash, Tenpyo Saka was knocked back dozens of meters by the immense strength of the Type 3 Lykoi. Her odachi was also sent flying away. After all, her strength was far from the Type 3 Mutant Beasts.

However, the strike of the Type 3 Lykoi was also deflected by Tenpyo Saka.

At this time, Ji Qing Wu came slashing down on the Type 3 Lykoi with her blue Biological Armor, and the mighty sword beam sliced the Type 3 Lykoi in half.

A blue treasure box appeared beside the corpse of the Type 3 Lykoi, and the Beast Nucleus was sent flying into Yin Shuang's hands.

Yin Shuang looked at the nucleus, and her eyes flashed with a gleam. She threw the nucleus into her mouth and began to chomp on it. The nucleus that was impervious to even the slash of Ji Qing Wu was crushed into pieces by Yin Shuang before she swallowed it.

The moment she consumed the Type 3 Nucleus, Yin Shuang's wounds that were caused by the Type 3 Black-spotted Spider began

to heal at a speed visible to the naked eye. At the same time, her body also grew about 1cm.

On the other side, facing the slash of the Type 3 Gold-scaled Rat King, Yue Zhong flipped his available hand, causing a shield of light to appear and block the strike forcefully.

After taking that single hit, the shield of light shattered.

"Go to hell!" Yue Zhong took the chance and raised his right hand to fire out a beam of fiery hot Devil Flame that condensed into a spear-form that penetrated the head of the Type 3 Gold-scaled Rat King, before combusting within and frying its brain.

As they eliminated these few Type 3 Mutant Beasts, the Type 3 Iron Bull managed to breach the area where the cannons were firing upon and galloped into the town.

A number of laser beams that fired from all directions formed a net that pierced the body of the Type 3 Iron Bull, turning it into a sieve. A few beams penetrated its head, and halfway through its charge, it slumped to the floor, and it became the first Type 3 Mutant Beast that perished at the hands of ordinary soldiers.

As it fell, from behind, the Type 3 Ferocious Ape came leaping forward together with the Type 3 Mutant Black Gorilla. These 2 Type 3 Mutant Beasts had no innate abilities, but their Strength, Speed, Recovery, and Defense were on another level, and they didn't seem to have any weak points.

The Type 3 Ferocious Ape charged into the camp of Yue Zhong's troops and with a single palm, it slapped many soldiers dead. When the laser beams landed on its body, they only caused minor wounds. It wasn't enough to endanger its life.

The Type 3 Black Gorilla pounced over to Yue Zhong.

From a distance away, the Type 3 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar had also come to a stop, as it opened its mouth to fire a soundwave blast at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong had already experienced the might of such an attack before, and the moment the Type 3 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar opened its mouth, he had activated his Shadow Steps and dodged to the side.

The soundwave also had its weak point, which was that it could only travel in a straight trajectory, and could not be manipulated to turn.

The soundwave blast landed in an area, causing a number of the elite soldiers to bleed from their orifices and die. They were not as hardy as Yin Shuang after all.

Yue Zhong had just moved, when the Type 3 Black Gorilla appeared in front of him, its fist punching towards him with the pressure of Mt. Tai.

Right at this moment, Yin Shuang leaped up from Yue Zhong's embrace and lifted her tiny fists to meet the punch from the Type 3 Black Gorilla.

Hong!

Following a powerful impact, the Type 3 Black Gorilla was sent flying about 5 meters, while Yin Shuang also flew back about 7 to 8 meters.

Chapter 683: Su Xing He joins!

Ji Qing Wu controlled the Biological Armor to step down, her leg leaping onto the head of the Type 3 Mutant Black Gorilla. She then controlled the huge sword in her hand to pierce down into its head.

The mighty Sword Radiance tore a hole into the skull of the Type 3 Mutant Black Gorilla, slicing its brain into two.

With a flicker, Ji Qing Wu disappeared from on top of the Type 3 Mutant Black Gorilla.

The massive Mutant Beast that was the size of a fortress slumped down lifelessly.

The other Type 3 Ferocious Ape suddenly appeared in front of Yue Zhong, swinging its mighty fist at him.

The speed of the Type 3 Ferocious Ape was too fast, Yue Zhong had no way of dodging.

His eyes flashed, and a thick Dark Dou Qi enveloped his entire body. In a blink, he used his Shadow Steps, reaching speeds exceeding the sound barrier. He twisted and leaped backward, at the same time, pulling out his Flame Blade to slash the fist of the Type 3 Ferocious Ape.

The sharp Flame Blade managed to slice the fist of the Type 3 Ferocious Ape, leaving a deep gash.

Yue Zhong himself was also sent flying back from the recoil, the Flame Blade also flying out of his grasp.

As he flew back, the Devil Flames in his hand congealed into the shape of a spear, and he flung it with all his might. The Devil Flame Spear shot towards the head of the Type 3 Ferocious Ape, exploding upon impact and enveloping its head, frying its brain into cinders.

With its death, the total number of Type 3 Mutant Beasts dwindled down to 3, the Mutant Giant Turtle, the Black-scaled Ferocious Boar, and the Type 3 Red Leopard.

The strange Beast atop the Type 3 Red Leopard looked towards Yue Zhong coldly and frowned.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

The intense volley of cannon fire continued without stopping, blasting countless Mutant Beasts into pieces. At the same time, due to the death of the Type 3 Gold-scaled Rat King, the sea of Mutant Rats were broken apart, as the critters began to flee in different directions.

The remaining Mutant Beasts were also baptized by the laser beams that met them right after the blanketing artillery fire.

Upon seeing all these, the strange Beast atop the Type 3 Red Leopard let out a shrill howl.

When they heard the howl, the rest of the Mutant Beasts quickly retreated like a flood.

The strange Beast eyed Yue Zhong deeply, before turning around and disappeared into the night.

"Seems like yet another terrifying opponent has appeared!" Yue Zhong watched the retreating Mutant Beasts and his brows furrowed.

This time, in order to fight back the Mutant Horde, Yue Zhong had brought along a large amount of ammunition. Had they continued to surge forwards, he could easily wipe them out.

Since he held the upper hand, as long as they held out till daytime, he could even call for the reinforcements of the assault helicopters to rain hell upon the Mutant Beasts.

Now that the Mutant Beasts chose to retreat, he was full of trepidation. In fact, the Mutant Beasts were stronger than

zombies, if they also had a commander with a human-like intelligence, it would be a terrifying thing.

The ordinary soldiers did not consider so much, the moment they saw the retreat of the Mutant Beasts, all of them erupted in cheers, and they knew they had fended off their enemies successfully once again.

Bai Xiao Sheng appeared by Yue Zhong's side, wrapped in gauze, as he asked, "Leader, do we continue towards the granary?"

Yue Zhong's eyes turned cold as he replied, "No! We will eradicate the Greater China Alliance now. They dare to work together with the Kingdom of God, what imbeciles! If we let them live, they will pose a problem to us."

This time, due to their collusion, Yue Zhong's troops had suffered greatly. Hu-er Ran's 3rd Brigade had lost over 600 men.

After all, the 3rd Brigade only had 3,000 men at first, they were all made up of old veterans that had followed Hu-er Ran through countless battles.

600 elites who had abundant experience were killed off in this battle, and this was a huge blow to Hu-er Ran's forces. Other than the 3rd Brigade, Yue Zhong also lost another 20 Evolvers to the 2 Apostles. If it wasn't for capturing these huge elite force of the KoG, Yue Zhong could have been considered to have suffered a great loss as well.

The most important point was that Zhang Jian Xing was the core of the Alliance's military. With his death, the Alliance only had 4,000 soldiers left. They were basically a motley bunch without a capable leader.

After resting an entire day, Yue Zhong sent out his troops to transport the numerous Mutant Beasts corpses behind and sent the injured soldiers back. As to the corpses of his enemies, they were fed to the Mother Tree, becoming its nourishment. Yue Zhong

would only respect his own soldiers, while he had no mercy nor pity for his enemies.

At the same time, he deployed troops towards the base of the Alliance. He was still of the idea of co-existing with the Alliance. However, after everything, the Alliance was basically helpless against him. He also did not want to leave this cancer to fester.

Su Xing He saw that Yue Zhong's army had dropped all notions of advancing towards the granary, and his heart sank, "Is he finally going to act against the Alliance? There's no one who can stop him now."

Su Xing He was one of the upper echelons of the Alliance and knew the capabilities of the soldiers. Having lost their general, there was no one else who could lead them. Most of the commanders inside had obtained their posts through connections, and while they could somewhat deal with zombies in towns, fighting Yue Zhong's troops was a different thing altogether.

After pondering for a long while, his eyes shone with a resolute gleam, "That's right. This is also a chance. Once he swallows the Alliance, there will be no one who can stop his expansion in the North. It might not be just a dream for him to unite the entire country anymore. If I join him now, I might be part of the founding team."

With Su Xing He's strength, it wasn't difficult to gather a few hundred people and become his own local warlord. However, he wasn't happy with just doing something on such a small scale. He knew that even if he did so, and could possibly enjoy himself in some remote corner, once Yue Zhong succeeded in conquering the country, he would not allow Su Xing He's faction to exist anymore. Even if he were a peak-level Evolver, facing all the peak-level Evolvers of the country, he wasn't much.

Having learned something in life, Su Xing He had been a director before the apocalypse as well. He was clear on the splendor and

allure of power and authority. He wanted to become an official, and thus, he decided to join Yue Zhong.

Su Xing He was led by a soldier to Yue Zhong, before respectfully greeting him, "Leader Yue Zhong, I'm Su Xing He, I hope to be of assistance to Leader."

Yue Zhong eyed the man in front of him, his eyes flashing, "You're that Su Xing He? One of the 5 heads of the Greater China Alliance?"

Yue Zhong had not expected that one of the 5 leaders would take the initiative to submit to him.

"Yes!" Su Xing He chuckled, before he revealed his cards, "I am able to hand the entire Alliance to you."

"While the leader to the rest is Ximen Tian Xiong, the true pillar is Zhang Jian Xing. Because of his death, while the Alliance might still exist, it would never be a match for you. However, there're a number of experts within. If you were to still forcefully swallow the Alliance, you might suffer some casualties as well."

"Furthermore, those who will suffer will be the ordinary citizens. If you were to attack the Alliance, most of the survivors would suffer. In this current world, humans are the most precious resource. I know Leader you wouldn't want to see too many deaths as well. As long as you pass the responsibility of convincing the Alliance to me, I will make sure to deliver." Su Xing He spoke, a hint of fervor in his eyes.

Yue Zhong also agreed that Su Xing He had a point, and he chuckled, "Fine! What would you want?"

Su Xing He's eyes were practically ablaze by now, "I know Leader your current system is martial law. I hope to be able to become a Lieutenant Colonel and help to lead troops in your stead. Other than that, I would like to recommend Chan Wei Hua to be a major as well. Both of us are peak Evolvers, and we can definitely be

swords for you."

Yue Zhong saw the fiery ambition in Su Xing He's gaze and laughed slightly, "Alright! I'll promise you. As long as you can hand the Alliance to me, I will grant your wish."

The positions of a Lieutenant Colonel and a Major in exchange for over a dozen thousands of survivors as well as 2 peak level Evolvers was too good for Yue Zhong to pass up on.

Su Xing He replied, "Thank you, Leader! I hope that as I conduct the operation, you will assign me troops to assist in the plan. Only with sufficient pressure, I will be able to ensure the Alliance listens."

"Ok!"

Yue Zhong's troops continued to push towards the Alliance, causing them to fall into panic. Some people who were smarter knew that the death of their general Zhang Jian Xing meant that the Alliance was helpless against Yue Zhong.

"Yue Zhong is reaching, what do we do?" Within a secret base, Chan Wei Hua summoned his people and asked.

Chapter 684: Swallowing the Alliance!

One small-time leader looked at Chan Wei Hua and said, "Brother, Yue Zhong's army is too fearsome. We're not his match. Most of the Alliance's fighting force had been annihilated, even Zhang Jian Xing had died. There's no hope in staying here, let's flee! With our strength, even if we leave here, we can find a corner to live it out well!"

"That's right! Brother, Yue Zhong is truly too powerful, we're not his match! Let's flee!"

"Yea, Brother. If you're worried about the rations, we can go and steal some before leaving."

"...."

One by one, the various ringleaders spoke up, none of them were willing to stay behind to fight it out with Yue Zhong.

Chan Wei Hua listened to them and his eyes lit up. He knew that it was suicide intending to fight against Yue Zhong. However, he had over 40 beauties under his wing. As for the rest of them, some had at the very least one or two, while the most could have a dozen. If they were to all flee, just their women would reach a few hundred.

Such a huge troop would not be able to escape the grasp of Yue Zhong's army. Chan Wei Hua knew that it was difficult for him to bring his troops to flee. The moment he attacked, other than a few experts, the rest would be forced to stay. His women would not be free as well.

"Why should you run?"

Right at this time, a voice traveled over, and the moment it sounded, everyone in the room became wary, turning to the direction.

Su Xing He stepped into the room and revealed a smile.

Chan Wei Hua's eyes narrowed to a slit, as his entire body became tense. He was like a leopard ready to pounce as he stared at Su Xing He in wariness, "Su Xing He, I want to leave, are you intending to stop me?"

Su Xing He continued to smile, "No! If you want to leave, by all means. However, I have got a suggestion. Who knows, after my words, you might not want to leave anymore."

Chan Wei Hua saw that Su Xing He had no intentions of stopping him and heaved a sigh of relief. Su Xing He was also a peak level Evolver, and if both parties were to engage in a fight, they would likely draw. He had no intentions of fighting it out with Su Xing He.

Chan Wei Hua's eyes flashed as he spoke, "Su Xing He, Yue Zhong's reach is extensive. Even Zhang Jian Xing and the Kingdom of God couldn't do anything to him after teaming up. Such a fearsome person is not someone we can handle. No matter what you say, I will not stay. It's practically suicide. DO you want to leave with me? With our strength, we can carve something out for ourselves."

Su Xing He was also an Evolver, and if a faction had 2 such powerhouses as their core, they could deal with plenty of situations. As long as it wasn't a Mutant Beast wave or a zombie horde, they could handle themselves.

Su Xing He laughed lightly, "Why should we leave? Can't we just join Yue Zhong?"

"Join him?" Chan Wei Hua immediately sunk into thoughts. He was worried about Yue Zhong hunting him that he never thought about submitting to him.

"Wei Hua, if you want to flee now, you're free to do so. Based on your strength, it's possible to go to a small village and be the local tyrant. However, did you stop to think, Yue Zhong's influence will only continue to grow. Once he had conquered everywhere, you

will need to recede your territory even further, otherwise, he will send troops to wipe you out. Till when will you continue to live like that?"

"Plus, you can only do so much alone. There's still the issue about the zombie horde, the Mutant Beasts, rations, etc. Without a proper base, you can only continue to flee, and nothing else but flee. In the end, other than you, there will be a few dozen brothers. Those without enough strength will perish. Is such a lifestyle what you guys want?"

"Yue Zhong has already conquered the Central Plains and over 5 or 6 major cities. He has established the running of factories and farming, as well as a currency system and a working government. He is the only warlord with the most potential of uniting the entire country. Since he's still in the initial stages, if we were to join him now, after contributing, we might become founding fathers. Our future generations will stand to bask in our glory and achievements. If you don't want to choose this path and rather pursue a dog-like life, by all means. You can continue to cower in fear and live in the uncertainty of being swallowed by some other power, or killed by a wave of Mutant Beasts." Su Xing He rattled on and on with a strong logical reasoning.

Hearing his words, Chan Wei Hua's expression seemed to perk up. He looked towards his subordinates and noticed that they were all swayed by his argument already.

After all, everyone wanted to live a better life. No one liked to live like strays, living day to day.

Chan Wei Hua wasn't an idiot, he thought for a while and asked, "Su Xing He, you've already joined him, right?"

Su Xing He chuckled, "That's right! I am a Lieutenant Colonel within his army now."

Chan Wei Hua's subordinates looked at him with envy. Having become a Lt. Col. under Yue Zhong, his status was different.

Chan Wei Hua frowned and asked, "Then what if I join Yue Zhong?"

Su Xing He replied, "If you join him, you get to keep all your private possessions. As long as you have the ability to feed your 40 women, you can continue doing so. At the same time, you will be a major under Yue Zhong, and in charge of an infantry battalion."

Chan Wei Hua's frown deepened, "A Major rank? Isn't it too low?"

Although he was secretly satisfied with the arrangements, he wanted to try his luck in haggling. Mainly because he was unhappy with being under Su Xing He. However, he was extremely clear that Su Xing He had taken the initiative to submit first, that was why he got the longer end of the stick.

Su Xing He revealed a cruel smile, "If you want to gain a better position, you'll need to prove yourself. If you can join me and present the entire Alliance to Yue Zhong, you'll naturally gain a better position."

Chan Wei Hua swiftly made his decision, "Ok! Su Xing He, I'll work with you in bringing the Alliance to Yue Zhong!"

Within a meeting hall of the Alliance's headquarters, Ximen Tian Xiong and the rest of the upper echelons had gathered for a meeting, discussing how to deal with Yue Zhong.

Inside the hall, many of the officials were giving their own opinions, and everyone's faces were downcast. No one felt that they could withstand Yue Zhong's assault.

Ximen Tian Xiong listened to their discussion, his heart heavy as he asked, "What's going on? How come Chan Wei Hua isn't here yet?"

"I'm here! Sorry for being late!" Following a bright laughter, Chan Wei Hua and Su Xing He walked into the hall together.

Ximen Tian Xiong watched them enter together and a

premonition arose in his heart. His brows furrowed.

Chan Wei Hua had a carefree look as he looked at everyone, "Don't panic, I've come with the method of dealing with Yue Zhong."

Ximen Tian Xiong was shocked and asked in curiosity, "What is it?"

The rest of the people also turned their gazes to Chan Wei Hua.

"The method is, to let Ximen Tian Xiong die!" Chan Wei Hua laughed indifferently, and a coin shot out like a cannon, piercing Ximen Tian Xiong in the head.

There was a look of shock on Ximen Tian Xiong's face as his body slumped to the ground lifelessly.

Su Xing He instantly exploded out with 10 pieces of steel that pierced the 6 guards beside Ximen Tian Xiong. They were caught unprepared, and although they weren't weak Evolvers, they were still assassinated by Su Xing He.

At the same time, there was gunfire from outside, as Su Xing He and Chan Wei Hua's forces launched a swift assault on the soldiers of Ximen Tian Xiong. Under that sudden attack, Ximen Tian Xiong's forces were annihilated.

The rest of the upper echelons watched the proceedings in horror and shock, not knowing what to do. Under the heavy suppression of Chan Wei Hua and Su Xing He, they didn't dare to move.

Chan Wei Hua turned to survey everyone present and chuckled, "Don't worry, those who want to live better listen up! Su Xing He and I have submitted to Yue Zhong. We hope that everyone can cooperate, otherwise, don't blame us for being merciless."

Everyone saw that Ximen Tian Xiong had already died, and they had no intentions of rebelling, looking on quietly as Chan Wei Hua and Su Xing He cleared the close buddies of Ximen Tian Xiong.

After eradicating all potential trouble, Su Xing He sent someone to handle the Alliance while sending someone else to invite Yue Zhong's army in.

Chan Wei Hua immediately saluted Yue Zhong in respect when he saw him, "Chan Wei Hua greets Leader Yue Zhong, and is willing to serve!"

Yue Zhong chuckled, "Well done! Chan Wei Hua, from now on, you're promoted to the rank of Lieutenant Colonel!"

Chan Wei Hua was delighted, and responded enthusiastically, "Thank you, Leader!!"

Yue Zhong stared at him and said, "Chan Wei Hua, since you're already my subordinate, you have to follow my rules. My army is a proper one, not one that anyhow does things. Military men have to abide by the military laws, is that clear?"

Chan Wei Hua's heart turned cold, "Yes!"

Su Xing He came up to Yue Zhong and reported, "Leader, I have someone here, whom I think you'll be interested to meet."

Chapter 685: Negotiations!

Yue Zhong assessed the bespectacled and civil-looking man, "Who are you?"

The middle-aged man replied, "I'm called Cheng Zi Ming, I used to work at the 2nd Satellite Base near the capital before the apocalypse."

"Satellite base?" Yue Zhong was jolted when he heard that, and he asked hurriedly, "Do you remember the location of the base?"

Cheng Zi Ming was clear that this was a moment of potential rewards, and he replied, "I do. I can lead you there."

Yue Zhong's face broke out into a smile, "Good! Cheng Zi Ming, as long as I can obtain that base, I will reward you."

Satellites were useful in modern warfare. With enough of them, the entire earth could be displayed. Since most satellites were focused on major cities, the movements of large armies could not escape detection.

Any faction that gained control over satellites would gain a huge advantage. Other than, satellites enabled telecommunication across the globe. It was possible to locate positions and do many other things.

The Kingdom of God had such a strong expansion at the start throughout the globe because of their control over the satellites early on. With them, they could pass messages, and ensure communication as well as an understanding of the various situations. Without them, in a world where many types of equipment had failed, the Kingdom of God could not have planned and executed their plans properly.

Cheng Zi Ming's face lit up in joy, "Thank you, Leader!"

Yue Zhong looked at Su Xing He and praised, "Well done, Commander Su Xing He."

Regardless of character or efficiency, Su Xing He was truly outstanding. He understood what Yue Zhong needed and attended to it extremely well. If there were any cons, it would be that he was unlike Li Guang and Bai Xiao Sheng in their loyalty towards him.

If Yue Zhong's faction were to deteriorate, and another powerful faction appeared, Su Xing He would likely sell him out and join the other faction, just like how he betrayed the Alliance so easily.

Su Xing He grinned humbly, "Thank you for your praise, Leader!"

Su Xing He had already made his decision to help Yue Zhong in establishing his rule, and he would naturally bring forth all he had to offer.

Yue Zhong nodded and headed out.

After gaining the intelligence about the satellite base, he wasn't in a hurry to rush out. Instead, he began to reorganize the Alliance troops. In addition to his captives, there were a total of 10,000 able-bodied men now.

From them, he pulled out 3,000 to form the 5th Brigade, with the command falling to Yu Wen Ying. Su Xing He and Chan Wei Hua were drafted into the 5th Brigade as well.

It was a large brigade, and one of the companies was made up of ex-Adjudicators. Just that troop alone was enough to overwhelm the other companies of Su Xing He and Chan Wei Hua. At the same time, Yue Zhong assigned a few loyal commanders to them, ensuring that it would be hard for either of the 2 to sway the soldiers in the companies.

As he was reorganizing the army, Yue Zhong sent the armored division of the 1st Regiment to head to the granary. Food was more precious than gold in the apocalypse. Once he obtained the granary, he would not have to worry about rations in the short run.

The armored division of the 1st Regiment had a smooth journey,

only coming across a few Mutant Beasts along the way, and conquered the granary easily. However, half of the rations inside had already been destroyed by the Mutant Beast horde, with many broken bags and piles of excrement lying everywhere. The stench was truly overbearing.

Although most of the granary had been damaged, 10% of it was salvageable.

Yue Zhong thus arranged for the undamaged rations to be transported back to Zhang Kou City, Hohhot City, and Bao Xi City separately.

The huge zombie horde and Mutant Beast wave that had retreated was still a huge threat looming over Yue Zhong's mind. He did not want to leave the rations in a single place.

While that was going on, Yue Zhong sent the newly established 5th Brigade together with the 4th Brigade to clear zombies, slowly expanding his reach towards the capital.

On the other side, the defeat of the Kingdom of God's soldiers reached their headquarters, causing a huge wave among the elders of the KoG.

"Erek that fool, he failed!"

"800 of our kids had actually ended up in that Yue Zhong's hands because of that idiot Erek! What do we do now?"

"Punish that Erek!"

"Correct, punish him! He has to be put to death!"

"...."

The council erupted in voices of dissent.

Those 800 Adjudicators and Judges were all Aryans and part of the KoG's fighting force. They were also necessary for the reproduction of their race. With such a force, they could easily conquer a city over at Africa. They could not give up such a force.

As for Yu Wen Ying and the other foreign races, even if they were to be eradicated, the Elder Council would not make a big fuss. After all, it was easy to raise up another unit of these soldiers from their other bases. However, the troops that Erek had led were pure Aryans and precious people.

After all, that 800 soldiers had clashed against the 3,000-strong 3rd Brigade, and they only lost 300 people but managed to kill 600 soldiers of the 3rd Brigade. Furthermore, of the 300 casualties, some had been killed by the Mutant Beasts and the elite Evolvers of Yue Zhong's soldiers. The actual number that fell at the hands of the 3rd Brigade was only about 100.

Without any external assistance, the Aryan unit could easily crush the 3,000-strong 3rd Brigade. That was how strong they were.

The Great Elder Jonas announced with difficulty, "Erek shall be put to death!"

Hearing his words, the rest of the Elders regained their calm.

One Elder asked, "According to Wilson, there's still about 500 of our men in Yue Zhong. What do we do about them?"

"We have to save them!"

"How do we do so? They're already in his hands, if we continue to send people over, it will be just sending them to their deaths."

"India! We need to transfer some soldiers from India to deal with Yue Zhong. India can be considered to be our colony. We can deploy about 100,000 soldiers from there. It should be enough to eradicate Yue Zhong."

"100,000 foreign soldiers, this is the maximum that we can activate from India. Once we deploy them, our strength in India will suffer greatly. If we were to lose, India will also be lost. I am against this idea."

"I'm also against the idea. If we were to deploy troops from India,

then we need to transfer some resources over. Just transporting them will take up too much logistics. By then, when we start the assault against Yue Zhong, we will have to devote resources into the battle, and our plan to recover the capital in the city here will be delayed. This is not to our benefit."

"Negotiations! I feel that we should negotiate with him. Since cannons and weapons cannot help us achieve what we want, let's use negotiations!"

"That's right! A powerful, united China may not be to our benefit, but the number of zombies in China is about 1.5 billion. It is a number that Yue Zhong would need at least 10 years to deal with. Our main enemies are the zombies now, not other humans. Although it will be a pity to abandon China, for now, we definitely need to focus our efforts on reclaiming the major cities within our own country!"

"....."

The elders were all practical, the moment there didn't seem to be a solution to Yue Zhong, they chose to negotiate.

Jonas also came to a decision after some consideration, "Let Anreit go and negotiate with Yue Zhong to recover our children!"

The orders of the Kingdom of God soon traveled to China, and the branch there responded quickly, sending the envoy to Yue Zhong.

Anreit came up to Yue Zhong and saluted, "How are you, Leader Yue Zhong!"

Yue Zhong saw that it was Anreit and chuckled, "Anreit, it's you? Speak, what's your objective?"

Yue Zhong had negotiated with Anreit once in Vietnam before, and he had even stabbed them in the back viciously.

Anreit knew Yue Zhong's character and immediately got to the point, "Leader Yue Zhong, I hope to buy back the 500 Adjudicators

and Judges from your hands. We're willing to use 3,000 assault rifles and 50,000 rounds of ammunition to exchange for them."

Yue Zhong immediately responded "I want 2 manufacturing lines of the Thunder Fighters, 2 multi-functional battle helmet production lines, as well as 10,000 tonnes of fuel. If you can meet my requirements, I will release them immediately."

The Thunder Fighters and multi-functional battle helmets were great items. Especially the helmets, they provided adequate protection against rifles, and had night vision, navigation, analysis, battlefield scanning and other capabilities.

The Kingdom of God could conduct operations in the night and achieve outstanding results because of the helmets.

Anreit was taken aback and he laughed bitterly, "Leader Yue Zhong. The Thunder Fighters are our newest research, and we only have 5 production lines. It is impossible to give them to you. The helmets can only be produced over in Europe as well. Even if we want to give them to you, we can't port it over."

Chapter 686: Satellite Base!

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed, "Alright! Get all those factions in China under your Kingdom of God to submit to me, and hand over their weapons and resources, I'll release your men."

The Kingdom of God had many factions within China and were pretty active in China. Of course, even if they were to all work together, they weren't a match for Yue Zhong. However, if they were to react, they still posed a problem. Should Yue Zhong successfully swallow them up, he could truly become the conqueror of China.

Anreit chuckled bitterly again, "I'm sorry, I can't agree to that condition."

The power that the Kingdom of God had in China wasn't small, they had altogether about 27,000 soldiers. Anreit was naturally unwilling to hand them over to Yue Zhong. While most of them were ordinary soldiers, not having undergone any job changes, but they had already undergone tough military training and their combat power was still a notch above most normal soldiers. This was a sizeable force and the Kingdom of God would not give it away so simply.

Yue Zhong's expression turned extremely cold, "Then what the fuck are you here for?"

Anreit turned silent, "I can hand over all the factories from the Outer Mongolia in exchange for those 500 soldiers."

Yue Zhong stared at him, "Military factories?"

"That's right! Outer Mongolia has about 20 ammunition production lines and 15 heavy artillery production lines. They could produce enough for most armored vehicles."

Yue Zhong took the opportunity to propose a counter offer, "Add on another 5,000 rifles, 1,000,000 bullets. I know you can afford

that. As for the production lines, you guys will handle the transport. Don't bargain any further."

Anreit grit his teeth and replied, "Fine!"

The troops of the Outer Mongolia had already been defeated by Yue Zhong. Although the KoG still controlled much of the production lines there, they couldn't suppress the local factions for much longer. They had to clear out sooner or later and since that was the case, it was better to hand the lines over to Yue Zhong than to those local militants.

After completing his task, Anreit felt much at ease, "Leader Yue Zhong, the Kingdom of God is extremely interested in the laser gun technology in your hands. They are willing to exchange the production techniques for the Thunder Fighters and Multipurpose Combat Helmet for that technology. This will be beneficial to both our countries, we hope that you can agree."

Yue Zhong immediately refused, "No."

Yue Zhong and the Kingdom of God were on different levels of technology capabilities. Even if he were to gain the secrets of the Thunder Fighter and Multipurpose Combat Helmet, if he wanted to produce them, it was impossible within the next 2 years. After all, manufacturing an aircraft required many materials and time. Without the necessary capabilities, even if he had the blueprints, it was useless.

After the deal was confirmed, both sides started to carry out their ends of the deal.

A large number of production lines were delivered by the Kingdom of God into Yue Zhong's hands.

Yue Zhong received them, together with 5,000 assault rifles, and a million rounds, before releasing the 500 Aryan soldiers back to the Kingdom of God.

After an entire month, Yue Zhong finally managed to empty out

the granary storage, and his troops managed to eliminate about 800,000 zombies.

As they neared the capital, the number of zombies were increasing as well. An ordinary county might have a few hundred thousand of them and each time they launched an assault on a county, they would have to expend plenty of ammunition. However, Yue Zhong was not in shortage of production lines now, and in addition to the recently-joined Alliance members, everyday, there was plenty of ammunition produced to support the constant war against the zombies.

With the addition of the Outer Mongolia's production line, Yue Zhong's production speed had increased by a third. Everyday, there was ammunition produced and sent to the frontlines, allowing Yue Zhong's army to be constantly fighting, with more to spare and save.

Qin Yang County was extremely close to the capital and currently, there was a vehicle fleet on its way there. The satellite base was in a location just right outside of Qin Yang County.

Yue Zhong was seated in a Hummer that had been modified, as he looked out the window serenely. He had come on this trip personally in order to obtain this satellite base.

In his mind, the importance of this satellite base was equal, if not higher than, to the missile base. What he had gained within the missile base was not to be used lightly, whereas the potential of the satellite base was going to be extremely useful. All his communications and reconnaissance would level up.

"It's right here!!" Cheng Zi Ming brought Yue Zhong towards a barren mountain that seemed inconspicuous. There was a huge metal door right at the entrance of the mountain.

He pointed to the door and told Yue Zhong, "The base is right below there."

He continued to explain, "In fact, there is a city below, which is extremely huge. When I was here working, the number of personnel was about 3,000. The base is well equipped with all sorts of functions. I think that there might be at least 2,000 zombies within."

Yue Zhong looked at the door and said, "Open the door! Qing Wu!"

Ji Qing Wu put on her Blue Biological Armor and pulled out that large sword, before slashing a few times at the door. A hole was soon carved out.

One Evolver muttered a spell under his breath and stretched out his hands. There was a flash of light, and 8 hunting dogs appeared. He pointed to the door, and the 8 hunting dogs darted into the base.

"Not a problem!" After an hour, the 8 hunting dogs came out and the Evolver looked at them before nodding at Yue Zhong.

Having ensured that there was no danger within, Yue Zhong brought his troops into the tunnel.

Inside the tunnel, there was no light, and Yue Zhong took the lead cautiously.

Behind Yue Zhong, a number of flashlights were switched on.

The party then soon made their way into the city.

They discovered that within the underground city, there were all sorts of structures, just that there was no light, and the entire place looked like an underground tomb.

Yue Zhong surveyed the place and felt wary. He had also entered an underground city back at Ulan Mountain Range and had come across that strange parasitic creature.

He turned to speak to Ji Qing Wu, "Qing Wu, go get some men to guard the entrance, do not let anything escape out. I'll go take a

look."

Ji Qing Wu's eyes flashed with worry, "Be careful!"

"Don't worry!" Yue Zhong smiled at her, before carrying Yin Shuang on his back and made his way further into the city.

Yin Shuang had the combat strength of an Apostle, and Yue Zhong had the capabilities to overwhelm an Apostle himself. As long as they were careful and did not meet any Type 5 Mutant Beasts, it was hard for them to fall.

Barren and silence, that was the description for the underground city.

Yue Zhong walked along and could make out several broken windows. There were patches of blood on the ground, and it was obvious that there had been many deaths at the jaws of the zombies during the start of the apocalypse.

The defense was tight in this underground city, but at the same time, it had acted as a huge cage, trapping the people within, preventing them from escaping.

He did not come across any danger but he couldn't help feeling a sense of caution. This was because he had not come across something that he should have already, the zombies. He would rather face tens of thousands of zombies than any of those Mutant Beasts that had intelligence.

Kuang lang!

Just after Yue Zhong passed by a window, suddenly, dozens of S2s leaped out and charged at Yue Zhong.

While he still felt wary, he didn't panic, and swiftly activated his Shadow Steps, slashing out with his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade.

The S2s that pounced over were instantly killed by him.

Just as those S2s were dealt with, a number of L2s charged out from various corners, carrying H1s facing Yue Zhong.

When those H1s opened their mouths, a number of fireballs fired towards Yue Zhong like cannons.

Yue Zhong immediately dodged into a nearby shop when he saw the H1s.

Just as he entered the shop, 3 Type 2 Hunters leaped down from the roof, together with 8 S2s that were hidden within the shop.

This was obviously a strategy that made use of the zombies hidden at every corner. If it were any ordinary Evolver, they could not have dealt with the Type 2 Hunters.

Facing this continuous waves of attack, a nether hole appeared in mid air, and 3 sharp bone spikes shot out from the hole, impaling the 3 Hunters, nailing them to the wall.

Yue Zhong sent out 8 instantaneous slashes, slicing the 8 S2s in halves.

After killing those S2s easily, his eyes flashed with suspicious, "What is going on? When did the intelligence of these zombies evolve to this state? They even know how to set traps?"

Even the smart huge-head Mutant zombie had not thought to do so.

Yue Zhong thought to himself, "What if there's something like that Amaterasu inside here?"

Amaterasu was the only zombie with intelligence that Yue Zhong had encountered. He possessed human-like intelligence as well as a terrifying combat ability. At that time, Yue Zhong had only managed to injure him, instead of killing him. When he thought of the possibility of something similar appearing in China, he was worried.

Chapter 687: The Woman who controls Zombies!

Shatter!! As though under some command, the glass broke everywhere and a number of Type 2 zombies emitting some horrid stench charged into the shop.

Yin Shuang suddenly became blank, and leaped away from Yue Zhong's embrace, jumping out of the shop.

"Yin Shuang!!" Yue Zhong watched Yin Shuang leaving him suddenly and was shocked. He quickly leaped after her.

Yin Shuang was not only the most important combatant under Yue Zhong, but was also a little girl that was extremely reliant on Yue Zhong. He viewed her as family, and seeing such a change in her, he could not help but be flustered.

Yue Zhong had just arrived at that building, when a Devourer that was hiding appeared suddenly, as it opened its jaws and spat out its poisonous gas.

Yue Zhong was taken aback. He quickly stopped his breath, and Devil Flame erupted around him to burn away the poison. He quickly slashed out at the Devourer, slicing it into 2.

"Not good! I inhaled some!!" Yue Zhong had killed the Devourer easily, but he realized his cells were starting to break down, as a dark poisonous mist emitted from his body. He was also started to lose consciousness.

The toxicity of the Devourer was extremely horrific, if it had been anyone else, they would have instantly turned into a zombie. Yue Zhong could withstand the change because of his high Vitality. Even so, his cells were fighting against the infection with all their might. He might be a Vitality-based Evolver, but his body was still not immune to infection.

At this critical juncture, Yue Zhong bit down on his lips harshly.

The pain jolted him awake and he quickly retrieved his G-Type Cure, quickly injecting its contents into his body.

The moment the contents were absorbed, Yue Zhong felt his blood regaining its vigor and flow.

At that moment, 8 S2s pounced upon him, intending to bite down at his body.

His hands lit up in flames, as his powerful Devil Flame burst forth, enveloping the 8 S2s.

When the flames died down, only ashes remained, the 8 S2s had disappeared entirely.

"Ah! Blue Treasure Box!" After wiping out those 8 S2s, Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief and was about to continue up the stairs when he noticed a blue treasure box beside the corpse of the Devourer.

Yue Zhong was overjoyed and picked it up.

The Blue Treasure Box was extremely rare, even higher grade than the Green ones. At the early stages when there were a few Type 3 Mutant Beasts, they tended to drop a few. However, the world had mutated to a state where even killing those Type 3 monsters might not guarantee any drops. Most of the boxes that appeared were Green, and Blue ones were rare.

Yue Zhong obtained a Blue Treasure Box from the Devourer, this caused him to be happy.

With a flash, a pair of wings of about 7m wide appeared in his hands. They were black in color, seemingly made up of some metal alloy, their edges sharp like blades, and the entire pair of wings was covered in mysterious runes, with a round pocket in the center.

"Level 6 Treasure, Dark Wind Alloy Wings, able to block bullets of 14.5mm. Upon equipping, allows the user to glide for a short distance from 20m above the ground. Once provided with a Type 3

Nuclei, the user can use the wings to fly. Can reach a maximum speed of sound barrier. Consumes energy for nucleus while flying."

"Good treasure!" Yue Zhong looked at the Dark Wind Alloy Wings and his eyes lit up with excitement. With this, he could fly and still battle in the skies.

After all, there weren't many Evolvers that could fly. Of the Evolvers under Yue Zhong, they numbered over 2,000, yet there were only 3 who could fly. One of them was a wind-controller, the other were air-controllers. In fact, they weren't really flying, just using their abilities to send their bodies into the skies. However, it could not be maintained for long, at most, they could do so for 5 minutes.

Having gained this Dark Wind Alloy Wings, it could complement his other skills, and allow him to fly. In any case, he wasn't lacking in Type 3 Nuclei.

As he stopped here to inspect his new equipment, the evolved zombies below were slowly making their way up.

His eyes flashed coldly and with a thought, a nether hold appeared in mid-air, and 10 sharp bone blades shot out, twisting and slashing into the group of zombies, turning them into mincemeat.

White Bones killed the zombies then stepped out of the nether hole, and guarded at the entrance of the building according to Yue Zhong's instructions.

Yue Zhong came to the 2nd level of the store, coming face to face with 6 Devourers crawling on the ceiling. They opened their jaws and shot out their tongues that were capable of tearing through armored vehicles.

The Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade in his hand slashed out with multiple beams, causing 6 tongues to be severed as murky blood splattered everywhere.

He then pulled out his Stinger and fired 6 consecutive shots.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

Following the sound of gunshots, the 6 Devourers had their heads blasted open and they dropped from the ceiling.

After killing those 6 Hunters, Yue Zhong activated his Bone Encompassing Armor, his entire body encased in the bone carapace. He surveyed his surroundings, turning to fix his gaze on some broken windows.

His eyes flashed coldly and he walked closer to take a look.

All of a sudden, 4 Type 2 Hunters leaped in from outside, opening their jaws and firing their tongues.

4 sharp spikes shot out from Yue Zhong's shoulders, slicing through the tongues, while another 4 shot out from his chest, piercing the heads of the Hunters, before flinging them away.

Having gained intelligence, White Bones was able to utilize its skills effectively based on its own judgment to deal with enemies.

Yue Zhong looked out and noticed that Yin Shuang was currently shivering while kneeling in front of a figure, atop another building.

That person was a beautiful woman in a long white dress, with a lush head of thick hair. Her skin was fair and her features were exquisite, yet she had a sense of being untouchable.

Beside her, stood 8 S3s, 2 L3s, and a Devourer.

Yue Zhong opened his hands and a bone spike shot out, impaling the wall of the next building.

As the bone spike retracted, Yue Zhong was pulled towards the roof of that building.

Yue Zhong saw Yin Shuang shivering badly and he shouted in anxiety, "Yin Shuang, are you ok?"

Yin Shuang turned to face Yue Zhong, although her eyes were still blank, "Father, is she my mother?"

"No! Yin Shuang, she is not your mother."

Yue Zhong turned to face that cool-looking beauty and charged towards her. He could tell that she was the one who was the cause of everything happening here.

In a few breaths, Yue Zhong had already appeared behind her, reaching out with his right hand to grab her pale neck.

That act of grabbing her was ridiculously simple, he had in fact prepared a few countermeasures in case she acted out. It was as though she was just a normal person.

Yue Zhong exerted pressure and threatened, "Stop resisting and stop your controlling over my Yin Shuang!"

The cold beauty glared at Yue Zhong hatefully and gritted her teeth, "Kill me! All you beasts. Even in death, I will not become your toy!"

At this time, the 8 S3s, 2 L3s, and Devourer charged at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong frowned slightly and released the beautiful woman, pulling out his huge Black Tooth Blade, slashing out at the incoming zombies.

With a powerful blade beam slashing out, 9 zombies were turned into mincemeat, at the same time, 2 powerful Devil Flame incinerated the brains of the 2 L3s.

When the beautiful woman witnessed this, her eyes also flashed with shock. She knew how powerful the zombies she was controlling were. She had made use of them to tear through a few overpowered Evolvers, and to see Yue Zhong killing her trump card in such a casual manner, she could not help but be shocked.

After dealing with the 11 evolved zombies, Yue Zhong pulled out

his Stinger and pointed it at her, "I have no idea what kind of misunderstandings you might have towards me. I did not come here to capture you to be my toy. However, I'm not some nice guy. Stop trying to control my Yin Shuang, otherwise, I will not hesitate to blow your brains out. I think that if you were to die, your control over my Yin Shuang would be stopped. I don't like to kill without reason, but this does not mean that I will not kill."

The beauty looked at Yue Zhong, touching her neck while snorting coldly and stopped casting her ability.

Yin Shuang, who had been kneeling and shivering, immediately stood up and leaped into Yue Zhong's embrace, "Father!! Father!!"

Chapter 688: Triple-Spirit Evolver!

Yue Zhong saw that Yin Shuang had returned to him and his mood became better. He asked, "I'm Yue Zhong, what's your name? The beasts that you were referring to, who were they? What happened here?"

The cool beauty assessed Yue Zhong for a while, before saying, "I'm called Liu Yue Mei. Are you from outside?"

He replied, "That's right."

She continued to ask, "Are there still many zombies outside?"

Yue Zhong replied, "Many. In fact, many places are still overrun with zombies."

Although Yue Zhong had gained control of the whole Central Plains, in truth, there were still many towns and villages containing zombies. He had only controlled the important industrial cities and counties.

Even Zhang Kou City had nearby villages that were not entirely cleaned up yet. It was because it would take a lot of time, and it might divert his attention away from the important task of advancing into the capital.

The zombies in those smaller villages were left to hunters to deal with. After all, since the corpses of zombies were vital nutrients to the Mutant Plants, Yue Zhong had set up a market to purchase zombie corpses.

From there, plenty of hunting teams popped up to earn money. It was a dangerous task, but the rewards were attractive and those who did not wish to confine themselves into working at factories managed to find work as hunters. It fulfilled Yue Zhong's objectives as well.

In such a process, a new culture emerged. In the past, bounty hunters were a rare breed of occupation, and now, it had become

the highly sought-after job for those who loved risks and high returns.

Yue Zhong stared straight at the lady and said solemnly, "I have already conquered most of the Central Plains. Zhang Kou City is already under my control. I have established a form of government there, and I'm highly interested in your ability. Do consider joining us."

Her brows arched, as she challenged, "What if I decide not to, what will you do?"

Yue Zhong replied slowly, "Then I will have to apologize, your ability is too dangerous. If you don't, I'll have to eliminate you right here."

Liu Yue Mei could control zombies, this was one of the sickest abilities Yue Zhong had come across. Although she was weak, the zombie troops she controlled could easily wipe out a peak level Evolver. With such a dangerous entity, if Yue Zhong had no means of controlling her, he would not leave her to his enemies.

In the system, there were many abilities that could be bought. However, the miraculous ability to control the zombies could not be bought from the system.

The easiest to obtain was the Firearms Manipulation Specialization skill once one turned into a soldier, while the other was the Medical Specialization for those who became medics.

Liu Yue Mei had an 'as expected' look, as she replied indifferently, "As expected! If I were to join you, what do I have to do?"

Yue Zhong looked at her and said, "I would like to know what your skill is called as well as its limitation. From there I can assign you tasks. You will be paid and treated according to your contributions. At the same time, you won't have to worry about me lusting over your body. In fact, I have a number of women by

my side, each and every one of them is even more beautiful than you."

She snorted before replying, "My skill is the Third Order Zombie Control. I'm a Triple-Spirit Evolver. I'm currently level 60, and the maximum number of zombies I can control is 500. This refers to ordinary zombies. As for evolved ones, the numbers will be lesser."

Yue Zhong's brows arched as he asked, "Triple-Spirit Evolver?"

It was the first time that he heard such a term.

She replied somewhat haughtily, "The term Triple-Spirit Evolver means that each time I level up, other than the points to be allocated, there will be a fixed increase of 3 points in Spirit per level."

When Yue Zhong heard that, he couldn't help but tremble in shock.

Such an existence was truly terrifying. It meant that Liu Yue Mei's innate talent was insanely high. Each time she gained a level, her Spirit was definitely stronger than any other person. Her only weakness was her weak survivability. However, if she had enough protection, she could unleash a terrifying combat strength.

Furthermore, with such a high level of Spirit, other than controlling zombies, she could use the system to learn other offensive and defensive spells. At that time, she would truly be a force to be reckoned with.

Yue Zhong chuckled and said, "Very good. I can assign you the rank of a Major, with the perks and treatment of one. Of course, you will have to use your abilities to wipe out zombies to earn that rank and promote."

Her gaze flitted about before she replied, "It's fine to join you, but I have a condition!"

Yue Zhong said, "Name it!"

Liu Yue Mei turned around and went down the stairs, "Come with me!"

Yue Zhong carried Yin Shuang and followed her out.

As they went past a few alleys, they came to a huge warehouse.

In front of the huge warehouse, there were 2 L3s. She eyed them and sent out a spiritual wave, and the 2 L3s pulled the door open.

"Sis, you're back!"

"Sis Liu!!"

"....."

The moment she entered the warehouse, a dozen little kids came running over.

A few of these youths, looking about 13 or 14 looked at Yue Zhong and Yin Shuang warily, and asked, "Sis Liu, who are these people?"

The rest of the kids also took a few steps back, hiding behind Liu Yue Mei.

Liu Yue Mei looked at them with a sense of warmth, "Little Zhen, don't be afraid. They're my friends."

Yue Zhong looked at them, not saying anything, as he turned to look at Liu Yue Mei.

She returned his gaze and said, "Come with me!"

Liu Yue Mei brought Yue Zhong further into the warehouse, and they came across a number of women lying by the wall. Most of them had their legs broken, some even had their arms chopped off. Some of them had faces full of burn scars, while others had bulging tummies as though they were pregnant, but their limbs were frail and weak.

"This is the result of those bastards' actions." Liu Mei Yue eyed those women, her gaze full of vengeance as she revealed what happened to this city.

After the world changed, the entire underground city was also filled with zombies.

However, since this was a satellite base, the defense wasn't too weak. There was a special forces team as well as firepower to ensure the safety of the place.

As the apocalypse continued, the soldiers were all deployed to kill the zombies and rescue the citizens.

The survivors that were rescued retreated to the city center, waiting for rescue. Because the special forces started to transform into zombies as well, and the remaining soldiers had no way of clearing the rest of the zombies.

There were enough rations in this city, at the start, the situation was stable. With the passing of time, an Evolver by the name of Wei Xian suddenly appeared, launching an assault on the upper echelons of the society as well as the special forces, killing them all and snatching authority.

Wei Xian was a Special Forces soldier that possessed incredible combat skill. When he awakened as an Evolver, he was practically unparalleled within the city. Prior to the apocalypse, he had been a nice person, and a model soldier. However, when the world changed, he began to give in to his inner desires, turning into a lustful and violent person.

Wei Xian had swiftly organized a team to be his teeth and claws, as they holed themselves up in the center of the city, eating their fill while toying with the women. The rest of the survivors were treated like shit. Those in the warehouse were the women who had been broken by Wei Xian and his gang of cronies.

Liu Yue Mei had taken the opportunity to escape during Wei Xian's fight for power. During her escape, she had awakened as an Evolver and gained her skill, making use of it to kill her pursuers, at the same time, forcing Wei Xian and the rest to be stuck, with no means of escaping the center of the city.

Yue Zhong asked curiously, "Why not kill those bunch of bastards? Since you have so many evolved zombies, you should be able to kill them easily."

The L3s were impervious to normal weapons, not many Evolvers were a match for them. Even for Yue Zhong, he had to utilize the Devil Flame to incinerate them.

As for the Devourers, even Yue Zhong almost perished at their hands, and the claws of such a freak could kill any ordinary Evolver.

She gritted her teeth as her fury erupted, "Those bastards are holding the children hostage in order to threaten me! The moment I get the zombies to get too near to them, they will execute all the children within. If I were to let the zombies charge in and kill him, the children in there will all die! That bastard even resorted to something like this!"

Yue Zhong glanced at her strangely, he had not expected this woman to be so kind-hearted. It was truly rare in this world.

Liu Yue Mei looked towards Yue Zhong with a resolute gaze, "The condition for me joining you is this, you have to send people to take care of these women, and help me to take out Wei Xian, rescuing the kids from his hands."

Yue Zhong replied, "Fine! Even if you didn't raise it, I will send men to take care of these women and kill that bastard Wei Xian. This is what a leader, a person should do. I don't want to take advantage of you. Do you want to raise one more condition for yourself?"

She looked at Yue Zhong somewhat taken aback, and sighed before she shook her head, "No need. As long as you satisfy those conditions, it's more than enough for me."

Yue Zhong replied, "Take me to Wei Xian!"

"En!"

Under her lead, Yue Zhong came to the center of the city, where a number of walls stood high and tall, surrounding a few towering buildings.

Chapter 689: Sneak!

Outside of the large gates, there were a few security cameras swiveling every once in awhile, taking in the surroundings. The rest of the base was shrouded in darkness, however, a few structures were still lit.

This was the core of the underground city, and surrounding it were plenty of zombies patrolling around without stopping.

Liu Yue Mei looked at the base with undisguised hatred, "It's right here. Wei Xian that asshole is here."

Yue Zhong took a look and said, "Can't you control the zombies to assassinate him? It isn't too difficult for the Type 2 Hunters to breach in."

The Type 2 Hunters were natural predators if attacked by them in the dark, even a Level 60 Evolver would perish. Someone as strong as Yue Zhong had almost fallen at the continuous ambushes earlier.

Liu Yue Mei hesitated for a while, but decided to reveal the shortcomings of her power in the end, "I can control the zombies to gather together and issue them some simple commands. But I cannot order them to kill an enemy outside of my vision. Otherwise, they will go out of control and attack as per their instinct."

Yue Zhong nodded and activated his Second Order Stealth, disappearing into the night, "So it's like so! Go ascertain his position."

Liu Yue Mei watched in shock as Yue Zhong disappeared right in front of her eyes. She adjusted her emotions then controlled the 2 L3 by her side to come right in front of the base.

One of the zombies went to press the communication button near the gate.

Her voice rang out, "Wei Xian, I know you're in there. I want to see you!!"

As her words rang out, a number of bright lights shone towards her position, at the same time, the security cameras near the gate swivelled to lock onto her position.

After a while, an image appeared on the electronic display near the gate.

A bald man with a naked upper torso, his aura sharp, and his muscles ripped, appeared. There were 2 beautiful naked girls in his embrace, as well as another 2 kneeling on the ground, licking his feet. This man was precisely Wei Xian.

He kicked the 2 women by his legs away, his body edging forward slightly, "Liu Yue Mei, have you thought it through? As long as you are willing to become my woman, the both of us can leave this place with our powers. Once we go above, with our strength, we can establish a powerful kingdom. By that time, we are the law, we can do whatever we want to. Everyone else will have to grovel at our feet."

Liu Yue Mei looked back in disgust, her gaze icy cold. "Even if I were to die, I would not become your woman. This time, I'm here to discuss a deal with you. Release the children, and I will control the zombies to allow you to leave."

Wei Xian laughed out, "Miss Liu, do you take me for a fool? If I were to hand the kids over to you, won't you just control the zombies to kill me after?"

Wei Xian waved his hands, pulling out a naked boy who was all skin and bones right in front of him, "Forget it, since you're so pitiful, I'll let you have some appetizers. Get 200 jin of food in exchange for this boy."

Liu Yue Mei looked at the state of the boy and erupted in fury, "You damn beast!"

"You dare to scold me? Sure, let's see if this teaches you a lesson!" Wei Xian's eyes flashed with a cruel gaze, raising the gun in his hand towards the boy's head and he laughed savagely.

The boy immediately cried out in shock and fear, his snot and tears flowing down his face. His skinny frame also started to tremble uncontrollably, "No! Don't kill me! I don't want to die!!"

Peng!

Following a loud gunshot, a bullet hole appeared in the boy's head, as he slumped lifelessly to the ground.

Seeing this, the 4 naked beauties kneeled down on the ground and trembled as well, not daring to raise their heads. They were afraid of antagonizing this devil.

Having been trapped in this underground city for a long time, with uncertainty and fear towards the future, Wei Xian was pushed to the brink of insanity. From time to time, he would just kill, and these women did not dare to anger him.

Liu Yue Mei's eyes blazed with fury as her body trembled from the rage as well. However, she was helpless. She might have an insane skill in controlling zombies, but the skill had its limits as well. Her personal combat abilities were currently slightly above ordinary people. She wasn't a match for Wei Xian.

Wei Xian waved his hands and another 15 year old boy was dragged right in front of him. He chuckled at Liu Yue Mei, "Miss Liu. You have just caused the death of an important hostage. Now I want 600 jin of rations. If you bring it, this boy is yours. Of course, if you can't do so in 3 days, I will eat him!"

It had already been over a year since the apocalypse began, and although there weren't shortage of food in the center of the base, the inhabitants had gone through quite an amount. There was the worry of insufficient food going around. In order to save on the food, Wei Xian had allowed his subordinates to resort to

cannibalism.

Liu Yue Mei gritted her teeth in hatred, "I got it! I will bring 600 jin of food to exchange for him in 3 days. You better not be killing anyone else."

Wei Xian replied indifferently, "I kill whoever I want to kill. What business is it of yours? However, if you do bring the food within 3 days, I can promise not to touch him."

Liu Yue Mei shot him a deep glare, before turning around to leave.

Seeing her leave, the lights scattered and the electronic display dimmed. The rest of the surveillance cameras swivelled elsewhere.

Yue Zhong appeared from the dark, "Where is he?"

Liu Yue Mei pointed to the highest structure within the base, "That building over there. The 7th level hall. He should be engaging in shit with his subordinates."

Yue Zhong turned to look at the structure, and his body disappeared into the night again.

The walls surrounding the center of the city were about 4m-tall. Yue Zhong leaped lightly and went over easily.

When he landed, he immediately shot for the 7-storey tall building.

As he passed through the center, he could see plenty of human bones and corpses littered about everywhere. It was hell.

In barely 10 seconds, Yue Zhong had arrived at the building, which happened to be the only lit one. He stretched out his hands and a strand of silk shot out from his ring.

The silk pulled him up to the roof of the building and he utilized his Devil Flame through his fingertips to melt the glass of a window.

He then entered the room without much difficulty.

As he entered the room, he saw many little girls without a single shred of clothing being locked in cages like animals.

Most of them had blank expressions even after seeing Yue Zhong suddenly appear. A few of them covered their mouths with expressions of joy and fear at the same time. They had hoped for a hero to come save them, but their hopes had been dashed time and time again. They already lost hope.

"This beast!" Yue Zhong saw the state of these girls and his eyes flashed with fury.

A little 12 year old came to the front of her cage, her skin fair and a collar around her neck, as she looked at Yue Zhong expectantly, "Uncle, are you here to save us?"

He looked at her and replied, "That's right, I'm here to save you! Where's the hall?"

The little girl swiftly replied, "It's on the left once you exit from here. Uncle, you must be careful, Wei Xian is an Evolver. His main attribute is speed. He had also 3 Evolver experts with him. One of them is called Zhang Er Dan, he can transform into a werewolf. Another if called Liu Hong, she can control her hair, and the last one is called Xu Wei, he has monstrous strength."

Right at this time, another naked girl had a strange glint in her eyes as she screamed out loud, "Enemy!! Ah!!! Enemy!! Boss Wei Xian, someone is here to kill you!! You must be careful!!"

The cute girl who had advised Yue Zhong looked towards her fellow captive in disbelief, "Zhang Li, you!!!"

There was a venomous look and gloating in Zhang Li's eyes, "Boss Wei Xian! Lu Rong has betrayed you!! She has revealed information about you!! Lu Rong, once Boss Wei Xian comes later, you're dead!! I hate people like you. This time, Boss Wei Xian will turn you into a bitch!! Haha!! Haha!!"

Zhang Li had gone crazy under the torment and humiliation of

Wei Xian and his men, and her jealousy and hatred was projected onto those who had not yet been harmed. She just wanted to obtain Wei Xian's love, and get a better position.

Peng!

Following a gunshot, Zhang Li had a bullet hole in the middle of her brows, fresh blood flowing down. Her face was still contorted in a gloating look.

Yue Zhong eyed the corpse with a cold look, "What an eyesore!"

Chapter 690: Artificial Intelligence!

When the rest of the girls saw how Yue Zhong took out Zhang Li without hesitation, their hearts chilled.

Even Lu Rong, who had approached Yue Zhong to help, felt fear and backed up a few steps. If this man in front of her could kill without blinking, he wasn't anyone merciful.

Yue Zhong looked at them and spoke to what seemed to be blank air, "Saka, you protect them."

After that, Yue Zhong disappeared from the room.

By now, because of Zhang Li's scream, the entire building had raised the alarm.

Wei Xian's subordinates had begun to move, and Yue Zhong had not left far from the room when he saw 4 gun-toting militants.

The 4 of them charged at Yue Zhong the moment they saw him.

However, Yue Zhong disappeared right in front of their eyes, reappearing behind them.

At the next instant, the bodies of the militants split apart, as large amounts of blood splattered everywhere, dying the hallway. Normal people could not catch Yue Zhong's movements at all.

Even for Evolvers, other than those who were high-level, very few could withstand a strike from Yue Zhong.

With a few slashes of his blade, the huge door to the hall was split apart. Yue Zhong kicked right through it and stormed into the room.

He discovered that 3 men were naked, surrounded by over 20 naked women. In fact, there was still a man engrossed in pounding another woman.

There was a strong smell of sex and grime in the hall.

Wei Xian looked at Yue Zhong and smiled in appreciation, "You must be the assassin? Truly gutsy eh? I'm Wei Xian, the leader of this base. I admire you, how about working for me. As long as you agree, the women here are yours to toy with. If you like virgins, I have a few stashed away. I even have a few non-mature pets lying around. As long as you join me, those toys will be yours."

In this apocalypse, there wasn't any form of entertainment. Since Wei Xian and the rest were trapped here, the only form of fun they had was to toy with the women. He had made use of them to pull over Zhang Er Dan, Liu Hong, and Xu Wei.

Although Liu Hong was a woman herself, she was an ordinary-looking lesbian. Before the apocalypse, she had not been accepted, thus, she had tried to suppress herself. After the world changed, having obtained some strength, she began to indulge in her desires.

Yue Zhong's gaze was cold as he stared at Wei Xian, pulling out his Stinger and immediately firing, "Human scum! Go to hell!"

Peng!

With a single gunshot, before Wei Xian even had the time to finish his words, his brains had been blown apart, as red and white matter splattered all over the woman beneath him.

The naked Zhang Er Dan saw Wei Xian's death and he roared out in rage, triggering his werewolf transformation, "Damn it! You dare kill Boss Wei!! I will avenge him!!"

Peng!

The Stinger sounded out once more, and the just-transformed Zhang Er Dan slumped to the floor with a bullet hole in his wolf-head.

Wei Xian and Zhang Er Dan were like invincible existences to the ordinary people of the underground city, but to Yue Zhong, they were just trash. Any elite Evolver under him could easily take them

out.

When the naked women on the ground saw how easily the 2 demons of their lives were killed by Yue Zhong, their hearts were full of shock.

After Yue Zhong took out Wei Xian and Zhang Er Dan, he discovered Liu Hong and Xu Wei each gyrating their own women passionately. As to the events that just occurred, they seemed oblivious to them.

Yue Zhong saw the glass table filled with some white powder and he frowned deeply. Pulling out his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade, he slashed out at the 2 cocaine-snorting Evolvers.

With a flash of his blade, their heads rolled to the ground, fresh blood spraying everywhere.

The naked women seemed to be used to the sight of death, although they were scared, they didn't scream out like most normal people.

Yue Zhong glanced around and announced dryly, "I need someone who's familiar with this place to lead me around. I want to rescue everyone out of here. Whoever has the ability stand up, I will ensure her safety, and I promise, not only will she live with dignity from now on, as long as I'm alive, she will not be short of food and clothes."

There were over 20 naked beauties all around, and such a scene was more than enough to send a hot-blooded man dizzy.

However, Yue Zhong was someone who had his fair share of beauties, and these women weren't enough to shake his resolve.

One bespectacled lady with fair skin and dressed in black lace, her demeanor charming and elegant, stood up as she stared straight at Yue Zhong, "I'm called Zhang Ya, I used to be the overseer in this satellite base. I'm familiar with the entire place, please allow me to be your guide."

Zhang Ya knew to grab hold of an opportunity when she saw it. She saw how casually Yue Zhong had taken care of those 4 Evolvers and knew she had to use all she had to hang on to this man. Even if she had to give up her body, she didn't care, in any case, she had been humiliated before.

"Don't move!"

Right at this time, a dozen militants came charging in, pointing their guns at Yue Zhong.

Many of them caught sight of the naked women and their eyes shone with lust.

As Wei Xian's subordinates, they had been able to play with women as well. It was just that the women they had vastly different from those that Wei Xian and his Evolvers kept for themselves. Thus, the soldiers turned sluggish.

"Die!" Yue Zhong pointed at those soldiers, as a dozen Devil Flame balls appeared and flew right towards their heads, exploding upon contact.

Zhang Ya saw how easily Yue Zhong killed those soldiers and her eyes flashed with shock, "Strong!!"

After all, even for Wei Xian who had been Special Forces prior, to kill a few soldiers, he would still have to exert quite some strength and effort. As for Yue Zhong, he had just killed dozens in the blink of an eye. That was the vast difference.

Yue Zhong then threw an assault rifle to Zhang Ya and said, "Come!! Bring me to the rest."

She held it tightly and replied, "Yes!!"

In this world, there was only dignity with power, this, Zhang Ya had learned with her body.

She followed closely behind him, and the rest of the women felt regret, not taking the chance to stand up earlier.

Inside the base, there was no one who could stand up to Yue Zhong.

Any soldier that appeared was instantly taken out.

The survivors locked up in the various rooms were released one by one.

Other than the hired thugs of Wei Xian, there were about 250 people left in the building. Most of them were women, and only 30 were men. The rest were either his thugs or had been killed and eaten.

Wei Xian had cleaned out the men he didn't need other than his subordinates. The reason for the 30 men surviving were because they had been experts in the operating of the satellites. Wei Xian knew that the base was a precious treasure, and thus, kept them alive.

Yue Zhong asked one man whose eyes were swollen, his body emaciated, as though the wind could blow him over, "Song Ben, when can we control the satellites?"

Song Ben had been one of the higher-ranking managers of the base, and was a technical expert in the satellite field.

Song Ben replied, "Leader, as long as we have enough power, and the base regains operations, I can gain control within 3 days."

When Yue Zhong heard that, his eyes lit up with joy, "Great!!"

This time, he had come to gain the satellites. He didn't have to worry about energy as he could easily set up the transfer of power from Zhang Kou City. Even if he didn't have the grid, he could make use of fuel to generate power.

Song Ben seemed to hesitate before continuing, "Leader!! There's another secret of this base."

Yue Zhong became curious, "Oh? What is it?"

Song Ben revealed the secret solemnly, "There's a powerful

central computer in the base, with a completed artificial intelligence before the apocalypse. We call it Mars No. 1."

Yue Zhong's brows arched as he asked in suspicion, "Artificial intelligence?"

Song Ben replied, "Yes! It's like the Red Queen from the Resident Evil shows. In truth, this satellite base is also a experimental area, meant to test the usage of artificial intelligence on the satellites. Mars No. 1 has a huge computing and processing ability. If you could gain it, it could monitor and control the satellites for you 24/7."

Chapter 691: Mars No.1!

Yue Zhong was shocked, and he said solemnly, "Bring me there!"

Computers had an advantage over humans, that was the disregard for rest. Ordinary people cannot function without sufficient rest, as for computers, even running for a few months was no problem. Gaining the artificial intelligence would only spell benefits for Yue Zhong.

Song Ben replied, "Yes!"

Under his lead, Yue Zhong came to a small room beside the main satellite building, and revealed a tunnel.

The tunnel went on for quite a distance, before a huge electronic gate appeared in front of the 2 of them.

Song Ben pointed to the door and spoke apologetically to Yue Zhong, "This is the place where the supercomputer is kept. To enter, one must have the security clearance. I only know of this place, but I don't possess the security clearance. I've been in there a few times to conduct maintenance, but it was under the lead of other higher-ups."

He continued, "There's an automatic defense system in there as well, if one were to break in forcefully, then the automatic defense will be triggered to eradicate all invaders."

The supercomputer was the product of hard work, sweat and countless resources by the government prior to the apocalypse. Once humanity could utilize it well, then technology would advance at an insane pace. With the right amount of A.I, different appliances and technology could be produced to enhance quality of life.

With artificial intelligence, wars could be fought with robots instead of humans tearing into each other, hence protecting precious human life.

This sort of research was extremely classified, regardless of country. Ordinary people would never get a chance to get near it. Yue Zhong had never expected even his own China, that most had assumed to be lagging behind in technology, had already developed artificial intelligence under the shroud of secrecy. Even if it was in its initial stages, it was a feat to behold. Such a research location would definitely be protected heavily.

Yue Zhong looked at the electronic door and spoke mildly, "You back up first. I will open it up."

Song Ben knew the danger and he quickly found a place for cover, "Yes!"

Yue Zhong came to the door and pressed his fingerprint to the scanner. It was the first lock he had to clear.

"Scanning fingerprint, not included in database. Does not have clearance to enter. Please get someone with the clearance to scan within 2 minutes, otherwise, will be treated as invader and eliminated!"

After that, there was the whirring of gears, and a latch opened up above the door, as a number of 25mm heavy machine guns appeared, pointing at Yue Zhong.

The 20 guns locked on to Yue Zhong, sealing his route of escape entirely. Even an armored vehicle would be blown apart by these numbers.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and 20 Devil Flame balls flew out, incinerating the 20 guns into ash, "Burn!"

Song Ben hid in one corner and saw how Yue Zhong took care of the defense mechanisms, his eyes filled with shock, "Powerful!"

After destroying the 20 cannons, the flames in Yue Zhong's hands condensed to form beautiful blades.

He slashed out at the electronic door, and the blade made out of flames tore into the metal as easily as a hot knife through butter.

After tearing a hole in the door, he walked in with large strides.

The moment he stepped through the door, Yue Zhong noticed various machines that he did not recognize fitted within the huge room, which was about 50m wide and 20m tall.

At the center of the room, there was a cylindrical area that linked to the roof, and there were display screens mounted throughout. All sorts of equipment and supercomputers were laid out in front of him.

Song Ben also entered the room quietly behind him.

The moment Yue Zhong entered the room, the supercomputers lit up and began to whir to life. There was a holographic projection beamed out, forming a young man with huge eyes, dressed in military uniform and a star-shaped hat.

The young man looked at Yue Zhong and spoke in a robotic voice, "I'm Mars No. 1!! Outside, you have no authority to enter this room. Since you have forced your way in, according to the country's laws, you have committed serious treason and endangered your country, public security as well as your people... and so on. Please stop your actions immediately."

Yue Zhong looked at Mars No. 1 and asked, "Mars No. 1, as an artificial intelligence that controls the satellites, you should know about the situation outside."

Mars No.1 responded, "Yes! The zombies that are similar to those of Resident Evil have overrun the earth, and they are continually encroaching on the living space of humans. This is the situation outside."

Yue Zhong spoke solemnly, "Very good! Since you know that, then you know how dangerous it is outside. I need your help to clear up the zombies and to re-establish the stability of the country."

Mars No.1 replied mechanically, "No! You don't have the

authority to command me. If you want to gain my help, you must get No. 1 Head to enter the password, and assign you control. Otherwise, I will not assist you."

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed, as he continued to persuade this artificial intelligence, "Since the earth has already become like this, the No.1 Head is no longer here. The capital now has turned into a zombieland, and most of the governing personnel of this base is no longer around. Naturally, I have the ability to command you. Just assist me, Mars No.1!"

Mars No.1 continued to reject in its robotic voice, "In my programming, only those with access can give me commands. I can only assist those with the confirmed security clearance. Since you don't have it, please leave."

Yue Zhong's face turned sullen, "You're truly not willing to help me?"

Mars No. 1 replied, "This is part of my programming. I cannot go against my core programming."

Yue Zhong's expression turned cold, "Since it's like this, then I should just destroy you. I will stop your energy source and reformat you. I have no need of something like you that is not useful! Since your base hardware is still powerful enough, I will wipe you away and leave only the basic functions."

Although the A.I was powerful, if it could not be used by Yue Zhong, it was just a piece of junk. Even if it was the precious product of China's research, he could not allow its existence to continue.

The A.I was capable of churning out large amounts of data every second, and without a supercomputer, there was no way the A.I could be supported.

Yue Zhong pointed to Mars No.1 and asked Song Ben, "Song Ben, tell me, where is the core of this thing? I want to take it and

reformat it."

Hearing his words, Mars No.1 finally had some reaction, as it quickly shouted, "No! You can't do that! I am a top-secret research of China, and it was the cost of sweat, tears, and blood of countless scientists! If you were to remove me, based on your current technology, there will be no way to recreate another me even after 20 years! If you reformat me, you're a traitor to the Chinese people!!"

Yue Zhong looked at Mars No.1 and his eyes flashed with a desperate look, "You fear death! What an incredible A.I. Fearing death is something that belongs to those with life. Seems like you have already developed some life-like traits. What a pity, no matter how good something is, if I can't make use of it, then it's just a piece of trash. You might be the darling of the country in the past, but now, since I can't use you, your value is less than the supercomputer supporting you. After I wipe you away, I might not have gained as much, but it's not too bad already."

Mars No.1 seemed to struggle for a while, before it gave in, "Fine! Please don't wipe me away. I can work for you. However, before you fully conquer the country, I can only extend your scope of control. After all, only the person of the highest status in this country can control me. It was one of the conditions carved into my programming. If I were to go against this protocol, my entire being will collapse. If you're still not satisfied with this, you may erase me now."

Yue Zhong asked, "Releasing some of the restrictions, what does that do for me?"

Facing the restricted control, Yue Zhong was more concerned about the help Mars No.1 could bring him. In this world, even as Yue Zhong's power was expanding, he constantly felt a sense of danger weighing on him.

After all, after he gained the Evolving Temple, Yue Zhong had

been clear that the zombies and Mutant Beasts were just the 1st level of difficulty on this earth. The next stage was going to be more terrifying, and who knows what dangers await the already-struggling humanity.

Mars No.1 replied, "I can help you control the satellites, and report the movements of overseas troops. I can also make use of the satellites to triangulate locations and maintain telecommunications. When you fight the zombies, I can be your eyes, and monitor the movement of the zombies. If you want to conquer the capital, I can provide you all the images of the capital.

Chapter 692: Liu Yue Mei's Tyrannical Ability!

Yue Zhong's face revealed a slight smile and said, "Fine! Deal!"

If possible, Yue Zhong also did not want to resort to destroying Mars No. 1. The proposed assistance was more than enough to him. Especially the image displays of the capital.

With that, Yue Zhong would be able to determine any nearby ammunitions storage and weapon facilities, which could bolster his troops.

The number of zombies was simply too much, seemingly endless. Furthermore, all the soldiers under Yue Zhong were humans, and although they could take on a 100 each, they would need the necessary weapons to fight. Against a small group of ordinary zombies, they could still try to engage them in melee combat, but against a huge horde, they would definitely need firepower.

In fact, Mars No. 1 had a lot more under its control than what it had offered Yue Zhong. Although it was just an artificial intelligence, in the process of its programming, it had been installed with many restrictions. That was why it was limited.

Yue Zhong and Mars No. 1 agreed on the details, and White Bones was left to defend the entrance while Yue Zhong.

At the nearby storage that was enveloped in darkness, Liu Yue Mei stood on the roof and surveyed the outside quietly. She had the night vision ability as well. It was awakened together with her ability to control zombies.

Her brows furrowed deeply as she kept her gaze on the streets. She knew clearly how strong Wei Xian and the rest were. There were at least a hundred soldiers, with a few Evolvers. She was worried that Yue Zhong might die within.

As she watched, she noticed a small figure walking slowly

towards her.

It was precisely Yue Zhong, and beside him, there was Lu Rong.

Yue Zhong lifted his head and his gaze met Liu Yue Mei's. He grabbed Lu Rong and leaped once onto the 7m-tall building, his gaze still fixed on Liu Yue Mei.

Liu Yue Mei stared at Yue Zhong in disbelief, "You've already killed Wei Xian?"

Yue Zhong ruffled Lu Rong's head and chuckled lightly, "You can ask her!"

Lu Rong smiled sweetly at Liu Yue Mei, "Big sister! Big brother here has already killed the big baddie Wei Xian. Now, everyone has been released!"

Liu Yue Mei's cold countenance finally broke into a warm smile, "Thank you for fulfilling my wish. From now on, I, Liu Yue Mei, will serve you willingly."

There were all sorts of people in the apocalypse, some like Yue Zhong who became warlords and leaders of their own factions that sought to grow, some turned mad from the fear and insecurity, some gave in to their inner demons, while others became cruel. There were also a rare few, that in spite of all of these, having experienced such horrors, they still shone with their humanity and kindness. It was especially bright and warm in this cold, cruel world.

Yue Zhong nodded slightly.

Liu Yue Mei's ability was an important tool to Yue Zhong. He could not just allow it to be buried here. She was also big-hearted, thus, Yue Zhong would assign her to face the zombies in the future.

Right at this time, her face suddenly fell, "Not good!! The zombies are here!"

Yue Zhong looked out and realized that a huge group of them had suddenly appeared without warning.

Liu Yue Mei walked to a window and sent out her Spirit, issuing an order to the zombies under her control, "Attack! Kill all the enemies!"

Under her control, many zombies awaiting in different rooms charged right out, pouncing towards the zombie group.

The 2 groups of zombies clashed together in a frenzy and every moment, there would be a zombie head being torn apart. Under Liu Yue Mei, the tank-like L3s charged into the group and could pummel 5 or 6 zombies with every fist of theirs.

Liu Yue Mei's zombies followed the lead of those L3s and took the advantage of the flow.

Suddenly, Liu Yue Mei gasped, "Quick! Run! There's a zombie commander within the group. It can wrestle away my control. If we don't escape now, all those under my control will be taken away! Ah!! It hurts!!"

Her words had just landed and she gripped her head tightly, kneeling on the ground, as she broke out in cold sweat.

Yue Zhong looked at the curled up Liu Yue Mei and his eyes flashed as he asked, "Are you able to sense the location of the commander?"

Liu Yue Mei gritted her teeth and said, "I can! I can't pinpoint its exact location, but I know where it's at generally. I may be able to get a clearer picture the closer I get."

"Good! Come with me! We'll go take it down together."

Yue Zhong then carried Liu Yue Mei and leaped out from the window forcefully, leaping onto the roof of the next building. He then jumped off.

"Are you looking for death?!" Seeing Yue Zhong leap into the air

with nothing below, Liu Yue Mei's eyes widened in shock and shrieked at him.

Yue Zhong laughed, and with a swoosh, a pair of jet-black metal wings unfolded from his back, covered in mysterious runes. Propelled by the wind, it helped Yue Zhong and Liu Yue Mei glide gracefully through the air.

Liu Yue Mei was nestled in Yue Zhong's embrace and felt the comfort of soaring over the air, and her eyes flashed in excitement, "This is an airborne treasure! The feeling's so great! Is this what it's like to fly?"

Flying freely like the birds have always been a dream of many humans. Although Liu Yue Mei was an Evolver with triple-Spirit growth, she was still a woman, and being able to fly in the sky felt extremely romantic.

Of course, she could feel like this because the speed at which they were gliding was pretty slow. If it was flying at Mach speed, her frail body would not be able to endure the resistance.

Yue Zhong roused her from her daydreams, "Where is the commander?"

She closed her eyes and concentrated for a moment, before pointing to a direction, "Over there!"

Yue Zhong swiftly made his way there.

Liu Yue Mei pointed to a building below, "It's right here, I can only sense that it's in here somewhere, but not the exact room."

Yue Zhong looked down and saw the densely packed zombies, with 4 L3s and dozens of S3s. At the same time, there were many other evolved zombies within the building. To a normal person, knowing the commander's location didn't mean they could do anything.

"It's enough!! Watch me!"

Yue Zhong looked down coldly and slapped out with his hand. At that instant, a terrifying blaze of Devil Flame roared downwards like a raging dragon, opening its jaws as it slammed downwards in a burst of flames.

The moment the Devil Flame dragon bit down, the entire building was instantly enveloped in flames, burning instantly.

The ordinary zombies within were instantly incinerated, while other evolved ones struggled for a while, before succumbing to the powerful flames.

From within, the howl of the Z2 sounded, as many zombies quickly rushed into the building, only to be consumed by the fire.

Kuang lang!!

Following the shattering of glass, the Z2 leaped out of the room, with flames still on its body.

Peng!

Yue Zhong had retrieved his Stinger and fired a single shot at the Z2, causing a large bullet hole to burst through its brain. It struggled for a moment and slumped into the sea of flames, burning away.

With the death of the Z2, the zombie horde quickly dispersed, returning to its state of confusion.

As for the other zombies near the building, they just stood there quietly and did not move.

Liu Yue Mei stared at the carnage below and turned to look at Yue Zhong, her gaze complicated, "You're powerful!"

Yue Zhong was the strongest person she had ever seen before, even someone like her who could control 500 zombies had to admit that.

Yue Zhong looked back at her and said, "No! The true powerful one is you. I'm just a single person. Without you to locate the Z2,

even I would be hard-pressed to deal with these zombies. There are many like me, even some are stronger than me. Yet the ability you possess is truly one of a kind. You will be a valuable asset to our cause, and the trump card against the zombies. I am really sincere in hoping that you will join us to fight and eliminate the zombies, reunite the country, and restore peace."

With just her ability to control zombies, while it was truly a unique and strong one, it could be considered so-so by herself. Yue Zhong could easily eliminate 500 zombies, and many other Evolvers could do the same. However, no one else could locate the Z-types easily, not even Yue Zhong. With the ability to locate the commanders, Liu Yue Mei's importance had heightened, and Yue Zhong sorely wished that he had that ability as well.

Liu Yue Mei smiled back, "En! I will help you wipe out the zombies, and conquer the country!"

Although Yue Zhong wasn't a saint, he was truly devoted to eliminating the zombies. To Liu Yue Mei, such a man who did not lust for her beauty and body was rare, and she began to take interest in him.

Chapter 693: Horde of Zombies in the Capital!

Yue Zhong managed to obtain the images of the military installations and facilities near the capital with the help of Mars No.1. He immediately deployed the 1st Regiment, the 2nd Brigade, the 3rd Brigade as well as the 4th Brigade to launch an attack on those areas.

The zombies that overrun those places were easily vanquished by Yue Zhong's army, and he recovered the facilities with ease.

Yue Zhong broke into those facilities and gained a huge amount of resources, even acquiring an airfield as well as some bomb carriers and explosives.

The 4 units had fought tirelessly, battle after battle, advancing towards the capital.

Along the way, the smaller factions or groups of resistances were easily eliminated by them, and the leaders would either submit or be killed. The survivors were then absorbed by Yue Zhong, and those who had committed atrocities were directly thrown into the Scum Battalion as cannon fodder.

On the backend, the support from the various factories churned out ammunition and rations to be sent to the front lines, supporting the troops.

As the soldiers of the 4 units continued to fight and grow, they became elites in their own rights, and every day, over tens of thousands of zombies would die at their hands.

The various villages and towns were conquered one after the other.

Prior to the apocalypse, there were tens of millions of people in the capital. After the apocalypse, it was likely that the number of zombies was that high. It was definitely not going to be easy

dealing with such a number.

Even for Yue Zhong, such a feat was going to be difficult. Before he had his own production lines, he could only deal with at most a million zombie. With sufficient logistics and support, he now possessed the capability of facing millions of zombies.

The Treant army controlled by Bì Lǚ was also used to fight the zombies. They were the strongest form of cannon fodder, not knowing fear, and their stamina surpassed the ordinary humans. They could also fight in the night, and what was more important, with the existence of the mother tree, it could continually send out more Treants into the battlefield.

As the forces continued to advance, Yue Zhong's faction continued to expand towards the capital.

Finally, the sea-like horde of zombies began to move.

With the satellites keeping watch under the control of Mars No.1, Yue Zhong and his men could see the zombies straggling towards the center of the capital.

The huge horde gathered together, reaching about tens of millions in number. It was truly the height of death.

Seeing the horrific numbers, Yue Zhong decided to let his troops retreat and rest. After a period of constant battling, they had already eradicated over a million zombies. Likewise, they had their exhaustion to deal with.

At the end of the day, humans weren't like the zombies or robots, after constant fighting, their bodies will feel the fatigue. Without adequate rest, they would develop adverse effects to war.

When the 4 units took the chance to rest, Yue Zhong got Ji Qing Wu and Bì Lǚ as well as her 5,000 treants to continue and whittle down at the zombies near the capital.

Under the assault of the 5,000-strong Treant army, every day, over tens of thousands of zombies were swallowed by them.

However, the zombies surrounding the capital continued to trickle towards the center of the city. The rate at which Ji Qing Wu, Bì Lǚ, and the Treants were killing the zombies could not keep up with the increasing numbers of zombies in the capital.

After a fortnight, the total number of zombies in the capital had reached 20 million.

When the gathering of the zombies was complete, 5 separate groups of 2 million zombies started to attack Zhang Kou City from different directions.

After sending out those 5 waves, the other 10 million zombies began to surge towards the direction of Yue Zhong's forces in the Central Plains.

Yue Zhong monitored the developments and sighed, "Divisions! They actually know how to launch divisionary tactics! The intelligence of the zombie commander seems to be getting higher."

The moment the zombie horde separated into 6, the pressure on Yue Zhong was intensified by at least 10 times. If they had continued to surge as a single body like in the past, then all he had to do was to gather his troops and hold out at a defensive point, making use of channels to block the advance. However, with their pronged attacks, he had to separate his own forces to deal with them.

Furthermore, each and every group of these zombies could not be underestimated. Anyone of them was enough to crush whatever Yue Zhong had built up. 2 million zombies were not easy to deal with. Any of them required Yue Zhong and his forces to give their all to resist and defend against.

This was the true threat of having an intelligent enemy commander of the zombies. They would be able to deploy a force that was 100 or 1,000 times that of humans. The moment they could execute military tactics and strategies, it would be almost impossible for humans to fight against.

Yue Zhong watched the movements and gave an order, "Heed my command! Immediately move all resources of Zhang Kou City and personnel towards Ulan City!"

Zhang Kou City was about 200km away from the capital, and it was a short distance for the zombies. Although Yue Zhong was reluctant, he had to give the city up. The 6 separate waves were too much to handle.

One of the officers responded, "Yes!"

On his orders, the survivors from Zhang Kou City began to move towards Ulan City. The once bustling city became a ghost town overnight.

Amongst the survivors, many of them moved on the government orders. However, there was a minority that was reluctant to head to Ulan City and wanted to stay within the Zhang Kou City.

"Why must we leave? This is our place! I will definitely not leave!"

"Let me stay!! I don't want to leave!!"

"....."

The survivors cried and begged and laid on the ground, not willing to leave. They had their houses and stores here. These were all their possessions, and they had managed to carve a life for themselves. They were naturally unwilling to leave.

The police officers looked at them and were helpless.

An officer came riding into town with 100 soldiers, as he barked coldly, "What's going on here?"

One of the police officers explained, "They're unwilling to leave their own homes."

The officer replied with a cold look, "Fine! Since they're not willing to obey orders, then let them sacrifice for their country. The leader has already passed his orders, those who are unwilling

will be drafted into the Defense Battalion, staying behind to defend. Men, round them up."

The officer waved his hand and the 100 soldiers swiftly came up and tied up all the survivors that were proving to be difficult.

Seeing this, those who were still contemplating to stay behind felt their hearts turn cold and became obedient, following the rest of the survivors.

This order of Yue Zhong was slightly overbearing and it resulted in several hundreds of survivors being rounded up. However, in doing so, many others became obedient and moved towards Ulan City. There weren't any further troubles.

At the same time, in order to deal with the 6 huge zombie groups, Yue Zhong sent out 6 Infantry Battalions to defend major transport channels.

This time, it was a critical situation that spelled the survival of Yue Zhong's established bases. He had finally let go of his guard towards Hu-er Ran, as he issued them rocket launchers, rifles and other powerful firearms for them to utilize.

If they failed this time, Yue Zhong had no choice but to retreat towards the Central Plain. Within a year, there would be no means of conquering the capital. The commander of the zombie horde would also be able to evolve to an uncertain degree.

Should the commander become even more intelligent and continued to push towards Yue Zhong's other bases, they could easily overrun all of the cities.

Xu Yuan Gorge was an important channel that led to Zhang Kou City, and it was extremely narrow, accommodating only 6 figures at any one time.

Currently, there were many workers hard at working fortifying structures and setting defensive traps.

Hu-er Ran was observing the work, everywhere he went, the

soldiers of the 3rd Regiment would salute him.

Many of the soldiers were his loyal subordinates over the years. Even if Yue Zhong had filled up the ranks with other commanders, all the soldiers were mostly respectful of Hu-Er Ran. Not just because of his royal Huangjin blood, but because he led his battles, and cared for his soldiers.

Hu-er Ran continued to survey the area, looking at the various firepower consisting of rockets, rifles, cannons and other heavy weapons prepared, and his heart was filled with complicated emotions. The 3rd Brigade had finally received Yue Zhong's trust, earning modern weapons.

On one hand, he felt proud of himself for bringing the 3rd Brigade to where it was, at the same time, there was still the fear and respect towards Yue Zhong. He never expected Yue Zhong to just easily equip them with the weapons. If it were him, he would not have been able to just do that. Because he was clear as well as Yue Zhong, that his own influence of his 3rd Brigade was still higher than that of Yue Zhong.

Chapter 694: Evolved Zombie with Intelligence!

From far, the seemingly endless horde slowly appeared over the horizon, arriving at Xu Yuan Gorge. Looking at them gave a suffocating pressure.

Hua Bu La Ci, one of Hu-er Ran's trusted aides, came up to him and spoke in a low voice, "Great Khan, this is our chance! Now that the zombies have split into 6, Yue Zhong had deployed his forces to deal with them. His camp is empty, and as long as we launch a successful attack, and stab him in the back while he is defending against the horde, he will surely crumble. At that time, as long as you give the signal, all the Mongolian soldiers will definitely respond. We can rise again as the Great Mongolian Empire!"

Hu-er Ran's eyes fixed on Hua Bu La Ci as he sunk in his thoughts.

As per his words, it was truly the most dangerous time for the army of Yue Zhong right now. Not only did Yue Zhong have to deal with 20 million zombies, at the same time, the commander was an evolved intelligent being. If Hu-er Ran wanted to rebel, it was currently the best opportunity.

Although Hu-er Ran had submitted to Yue Zhong, he had been forced to. There was not a moment that he did not think of the Great Mongolian Empire. Hua Bu La Ci's suggestion was extremely appealing.

He was silent for a while, before shaking his head, "Hua Bu La Ci, this battle, I have to fight. It concerns the lives of everyone here in the Central Plains. If we humans were to lose, then there would be no space for us humans at all. Even if we can survive, it will be like rats, trying to hide in every corner, and there would be no place to expand whatsoever."

Hu-er Ran continued in a solemn voice, "This battle, should we lose, the Central Plains will not belong to us, but to those intelligent zombies, to those freaks. We have to win, not because of Yue Zhong, but because of our people, so that they can live freely out in the Central Plains. If we lose, what awaits them is hell. We can only win. Hua Bu La Ci, at this time, our only enemy is the zombies, is that clear?"

Hua Bu La Ci's heart turned cold, "Yes! Great Khan!"

The sea-like zombie horde slowly surged towards the gorge, and while their speed was not fast, it gave off an oppressive feeling.

Hu-er Ran stood at the frontlines and roared out, "Brothers, let these corpses taste our resolve! They're just a bunch of bones, and there's nothing to be afraid of! Fire!!"

He was a peak-level Evolver and when summoning his Dou Qi, he could unleash his voice for miles to be heard.

Bolstered by his shout, the morale of the 3rd Brigade soared highly, as they begun to aim and fire at the zombies.

Da da da!

With the dense gunfire, the rain of bullets buffeted the zombies, striking them to the ground, which marked the prelude to the battle for Central Plains.

Li Guang stood in front of his 1st Regiment, pulling out his blade and roared, "Our 1st Regiment is the strongest existence of the Central Plains, and we definitely cannot bring shame to this title! Let us use our firepower and weapons to return this undead to the ground!! Use their corpses to exchange for our glory!"

Lie Ming Yi stood in front of his 2nd Brigade and shouted at the top of his voice as well, "This battle concerns the life-and-death of everyone here in the Central Plains. If we win, everyone's expenditure in pleasures will be borne by your father I! However, those who don't put in their all, don't blame your father I for not

giving you face!"

The various commanders riled up their troops, preparing them for the upcoming battle.

Countless bullets rained down on the zombies, causing large numbers of them to fall. A single artillery round could easily wipe out hundreds of zombies in one go. However, facing the millions of zombies, the artillery could not possibly stop the advance.

However, with the various fortifications and structures set up, the soldiers were able to impede the zombies slightly.

Tian Yue Canyon was the place that Yue Zhong chose to place his heavy firepower on. The millions of zombies slowly began to appear outside of the canyon.

As the zombies surged towards the canyon, Yue Zhong's forces began to fire their artillery from atop, and every single round could devastate a large number of zombies on the ground.

The horde of zombies stretched for miles, and when one swept his gaze out, other than zombies, there would be nothing else. With every artillery round, it seemed that half a football field's worth of zombies would be obliterated. However, space was quickly filled up with the other zombies, and it felt extremely frustrating, as though it was never-ending.

Other than the ordinary zombies, there were all sorts of evolved zombies mixed within. From time to time, they would charge into the defense posts, killing a few people before being annihilated. Those infected soldiers could only wait for death in an excruciating manner.

After an intense bout of artillery fire, Yue Zhong then gave an order to Bì Lǚ, "Send the Treant army!"

With a thought, 10,000 Level 20 Treants charged forth into battle, tearing into the ordinary zombies.

The moment they joined the fray, they tore apart the zombies

and consumed those that were blasted apart by the artillery fire.

However, they had just gotten one round of the zombies which had been baptized by fire, when the next wave surged forwards.

Yue Zhong looked at the endless horde and called out to Liu Yue Mei, Ji Qing Wu, and Yin Shuang, "It's our turn! Let's go!"

The numbers were truly staggering, even if Yue Zhong were to use all his cannons and artillery on the sea of zombies, it was not enough to wipe them entirely. He could only employ all other means as well.

24 Thunder Fighters flew out, carrying Yue Zhong and his team, as they flew above the horde.

Not long after, inside one of the Thunder Fighters, Liu Yue Mei suddenly grabbed her head in slight pain as she pointed below, "There's a commander here!"

Yue Zhong ordered, "Commence firing!"

Immediately, the Thunder Fighter released a large number of cluster bombs in the area pointed out by Liu Yue Mei.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

After the area was enveloped by the intense flames, all the zombies were incinerated.

Within seconds, Liu Yue Mei spoke with a pale face, "It's eliminated."

Yue Zhong looked below, and saw the zombies that had been advancing forwards earlier, stopped in their tracks, staring blankly ahead. His heart relaxed slightly, as he knew he found the solution to the horde.

Liu Yue Mei suddenly hugged her head in pain again, pointing to the east, "It's here again! There're a few commanders there!"

Yue Zhong immediately commanded, "Fly to the east!"

The 24 Thunder Fighters immediately headed east.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

As Liu Yue Mei pointed, a large number of Z-types were being annihilated quickly time after time, and the advance of the millions of zombies began to suffer some chaos.

The Z-types were all in control of certain patches, and there was a certain hierarchy to them. The higher level ones controlled the lower level ones, which in turn, controlled the ordinary zombies, resulting in the huge horde. They were like commanders of an army and were indispensable.

Losing the command of the Z-types, many zombies began to just stop and stare blankly at the frontlines of the battle. They were either bombarded to death or lost their heads to the countless bullets spraying everywhere.

As Yue Zhong brought Liu Yue Mei to deal with the Z-Types within the horde, there were a few human-like entities eyeing the 24 Thunder Fighters in the skies coldly.

One of them was a young humanoid of about 2m, his body covered in scales, a handsome face with a pair of blood-red eyes. He was speaking to another humanoid beside him, who was 3m tall, his body full of rippling muscles, his skin black and his claws long and sharp. He had a long tail that swung, while his expression was savage. The younger one said, "Chi You, what do you think?"

Chi You glanced at the 24 Thunder Fighters in the skies with a fierce glint as he shook his head, "Xuan Yuan! I have no anti-air ability! Unless those helicopters land, I have no way to deal with them."

Xuan Yuan's eyes flashed with a demonic glint as he turned to another strange beast beside him. This strange beast had a pair of large wings, its body covered with strange tentacles. It had a snake-head, and its body was about 5m. Xuan Yuan said, "Feng Bo! Go

deal with those helicopters! These mechanical inventions are the bane of us zombies! They want to wipe our zombie race away with these machines, as long as we destroy them, victory is ours! From the brains of some of the humans I've consumed, I learned that this army belongs to this human called Yue Zhong. As long as we wipe them out, the northern parts of China will be our playground. We can rear and hunt humans as we please. The taste of those human experts is truly delicious. Every time I think about that Evolver whose head I ripped off, I feel so excited. I can't bring myself to taste any other types of humans anymore."

Xuan Yuan, Chi You and Feng Bo were highly intelligent life forms evolved out from the 20 million zombies in the capital. Each of them possessed a terrifying strength, and it was them who had gathered the 20 million zombies to launch an attack on Yue Zhong's faction.

Feng Bo's eyes flashed with a fierce glint, as he licked his lips, laughing out savagely, "Keke!! I like to consume human experts as well. After destroying those 24 Thunder Fighters, and destroying Yue Zhong's factions, I want half of the experts!"

Chapter 695: Terrifying Feng Bo!

Xuan Yuan revealed a cruel expression, "Fine! As long as you can destroy those 24 helicopters, half of the experts will belong to you."

"Deal!"

Feng Bo also had a savage expression on his face as he flapped his wings. With a gust of wind, he shot towards the skies in a flash.

Feng Bo's speed was faster than the speed of sound, and in a few breaths, he had appeared in front of one of the Thunder Fighters. He leaped right in front of the cockpit, smiling dangerously at the shocked pilot. He then slashed out with his claws, tearing through the windshield of the helicopter that was able to withstand even 25mm caliber bullets, tearing the pilot's head off as well.

Feng Bo killed the pilot in a single strike, and he opened his mouth, his long tongue shooting out from his mouth and sweeping through the entire Thunder Fighter as though it had a life of its own.

Blood gushed out in sprays, as the 4 elite Evolvers inside the Thunder Fighter were ripped at their waists.

Feng Bo then swished his tongue, flicking the corpses into his mouth, and crunched down with a greedy look. Blood flowed out his sharp teeth, giving him an appearance of a demon from hell.

Having lost its pilot, the Thunder Fighter wobbled and descended in a nosedive.

As it crashed into the ground, its outstanding design shone through, and it didn't explode. Instead, the impact was absorbed through the alloys it was made out of, and its nose became slightly deformed.

Feng Bo's bloody tongue flicked out to taste the organs and blood splattered on his face, as he called out in drunken relish, "Delicious! So delicious! This is the taste of human experts! It truly

is amazing, I can feel the cells of my body evolving! As long as I can eat another 1,000 more, I can evolve once more and become stronger!!"

"Another 23 more! Great! There're still so many delicious humans in the skies!" Feng Bo's tongue uncurled out, full of spikes as he eyed the remaining Thunder Fighters in the skies with an excited look.

He flapped his wings and a gust of wind enveloped his body, sending him hurtling towards the next Thunder Fighter at the speed of sound.

In a few breaths, Feng Bo appeared on top of that Thunder Fighter and tore through its armor with his claws. His tongue shot in and instantly decimated the 5 Evolvers within.

"Damn bastard!!"

Feng Bo had destroyed 2 Thunder Fighters in a manner of seconds, attracting the attention of Yue Zhong's army. The rest of the Thunder Fighters adjusted their formation and started to fire their cannons at Feng Bo.

The bullets fired out like shooting stars, yet they just passed through his body.

"Afterimage?" One of the pilots saw the cannons passing through Feng Bo's body and his face fell.

"You want to kill me with such firepower? What a joke! Go to hell!" Feng Bo laughed out savagely, as he appeared in front of another Thunder Fighter and clawed through the windshield. His tongue shot out and tore the soldiers within into two, pulling their corpses into his mouth as he began to savor them.

"What a terrifying creature!" Yue Zhong saw how easily Feng Bo dodged the bullets and he couldn't help but suck in a breath of cold air.

While this Feng Bo's speed could not match the Type 4 Flame

Bird, he was not any slower than the Type 3 Greenie. Furthermore, he had intelligence, and if no one were to stop him, he could single-handedly destroy all 24 Thunder Fighters.

The Thunder Fighter was a creation during the apocalypse and its firepower and defense were all top-notch, surpassing even the designs of before the apocalypse. However, it was still a helicopter at the end of the day, and its speed could not match a fighter jet. Hence, Feng Bo was a natural bane for them, considering his speed.

All the pilots had looks of despair as they looked at Feng Bo helplessly. They had wiped out their own fair share of zombies with the Thunder Fighters they controlled. Even against the Kingdom of God, they had the confidence to fair well in battle. Yet, against this Feng Bo, even locking onto his position was tough, not to mention fighting against him.

"Seems like it's time for me to make my move!" Yue Zhong breathed in deep, before telling Ji Qing Wu, "Continue to eradicate those Z-types, leave this monster to me."

After which, Yue Zhong leaped out from the Thunder Fighter. The moment he jumped out, his Dark Wind Alloy Wings unfolded and the runes shone, as a gust of wind surrounded his body and sent him soaring towards Feng Bo.

Feng Bo looked at Yue Zhong and laughed savagely, "Oh! A human that can fly, this is the first time I'm seeing this. Oh right, I know who you are, you're the leader of the humans in the Central Plains, Yue Zhong."

Yue Zhong stared at him and could feel the suffocating sense of danger radiating from him. With the help of his Danger Perception, every single cell of his body was warning him that this enemy in front of him was the strongest that he had ever met, even more dangerous than the Apostles from the Kingdom of God. The nearer he got to him, the stronger the trembling and fear of his body.

He took a deep breath to suppress the instinct to flee, and spoke slowly, "How do you know about me? This should be the first time that we've met."

"Simple. We just have to consume the brains of you humans and can easily possess your knowledge. I've just consumed 20 human brains earlier, each and every one of them possesses information about you. They seem to hold you in high regard! Come, let me eat your brain as well, that way, you can be with them forever, as part of me! Haha!!"

Feng Bo cackled, and flapped his wings, disappearing with a powerful gust of wind. He then suddenly appeared in front of Yue Zhong and slashed out.

"Fast!!" Yue Zhong activated his Shadow Steps, and his Agility increased to a level of 30 times, and barely managed to swing his Flame Blade to block the attack.

Dang!

As the blade and claws met, a powerful energy traveled up the Flame Blade, and Yue Zhong was sent flying back a few meters from the horrific strength.

After sending Yue Zhong back, Feng Bo laughed out savagely and opened its huge mouth to fire its tongue at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong immediately felt a huge sense of danger and began to circulate his Dark Dou Qi, furiously enhancing his strength. He managed to pull forth strength to dodge the incoming tongue.

The Flame Blade that was made out of the sharp claws of a Type 4 Mutant Beast, together with the enhancement of Yue Zhong's Dark Dou Qi finally had some effect, as the blow left a deep wound on Feng Bo's tongue.

However, it was just that after the tongue was sliced, it slammed into Yue Zhong's left shoulder forcefully, shattering the bone carapace, and the sharp spikes pierced through the Type 4 Mutant

Sea Snake hide, as well as the Level 4 Defense Vest, before being stopped by Yue Zhong's own Body of Steel.

Even so, Yue Zhong was still struck in his shoulder, and the impact caused his body to tremble as he spat out a mouthful of blood, his entire body hurtling down like a cannonball.

Yue Zhong's heart shook from that single blow, "Strong!! This monster is truly too strong!!"

Feng Bo's tongue curled, and the wound that was caused by the Flame Blade began to heal at a visible speed, within 5 seconds, it had already recovered fully.

He licked his lips, his eyes flashing with a savage glint as he cackled, "You actually managed to injure me! As a human, that was something noteworthy. Even so, no matter how much you struggle, it would not change your fate. In front of me, there's only despair! Now I want to eat you more."

Feng Bo flapped his wings and a gust of wind blew. He disappeared from his location and reappeared behind Yue Zhong, his claws making a grab for Yue Zhong's heart.

Every single cell in Yue Zhong's body was screaming out danger, as he wrapped himself up with his Dark Dou Qi. His Dark Wind Alloy Wings suddenly twisted towards Feng Bo's claws and slashed down.

Other than being capable of flight, the Wings could deflect bullets and even attack based on the owner's intentions.

The powerful Dark Wind Alloy Wings sliced the right shoulder of Feng Bo, causing a huge gash.

At the same time, Yue Zhong relied on his abundant battle experience to force his body to its extreme. The dangerous blow from Feng Bo managed to slice through the bone carapace of Yue Zhong's left abdomen, tearing through the Type 4 Giant Sea Snake's hide, and cause a large wound on his chest as well. Fresh

blood flowed, splattering on the ground below.

As his body was still twisted to deal with that blow, Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a stubborn glint. He activated his Gravity Manipulation, and a powerful gravitational force weighed down suddenly on Feng Bo, causing his body to shudder.

Chapter 696: Yue Zhong Gravely Injured!

Yue Zhong's Flame Blade slashed out at the speed of sound, clashing against Feng Bo's body. The sharp blade tore through his flesh, resulting in a deep gash, as blackened blood poured out.

Feng Bo's eyes flashed with a vicious glint, the tail on his back swinging violently towards Yue Zhong.

With a wave of his hands, a shield of light appeared in front of Yue Zhong.

Feng Bo's powerful tail struck the shield, which shattered apart like an egg. The tail continued in its swing without losing momentum, slamming against Yue Zhong's left shoulder.

Dang!

There was a loud sound and the bone carapace shattered. Yue Zhong also shot through the skies like a cannonball. The impact had caused his inner organs to shudder, as a mouthful of blood rose in his chest yet again. He was gravely injured this time.

"Strong! His Strength and Agility is likely superior to Yin Shuang. What a terrifying creature. It truly is an evolved intelligent life form and is likely to be stronger than an Apostle!"

Yue Zhong channeled his blood and strength, firing out 10 sharp bone spikes while still in mid-air.

"Interesting! Interesting!! The more interesting you are, the more I want to devour you!! Your blood, your brains, will all be nutrients for me. Kekekeke!!"

The bone blades had fired out too suddenly, Feng Bo did not expect such a counter-attack from him. However, he continued to cackle evilly, his claws grabbing towards the bone spikes.

As he grabbed the various bone spikes, he would crush down with his claws, shattering the bone spikes,

He managed to crush 8 of the bone blades, but 2 managed to pierce Feng Bo.

Then, a terrifying scene occurred. The bone spikes that could pierce through even the thickest of armored vehicles, were actually stopped by the flesh of Feng Bo.

"It seems that your bone blades are not sharp enough!! They can't even penetrate my body!! Keke!!"

Feng Bo laughed out savagely and grabbed the bone blades, flinging them away. He then flapped his wings once more, as powerful gusts of winds were generated around him before he appeared right in front of Yue Zhong with an imposing aura. He reached out with his right claw, throwing a punch towards Yue Zhong.

Although Feng Bo's body was affected by the Gravity field around Yue Zhong, his movements seemed to be unaffected. This was because his body was simply too strong, and the additional gravity could not affect him much.

"My Stamina, Endurance and combat ability cannot match up to this freak. I need to kill him fast, otherwise, all that awaits is death."

Yue Zhong thought to himself, a look of resolution appearing in his eyes. He gritted his teeth, and the Dark Dou Qi poured out of him. The Dark Wind Alloy Wings radiated as well, the runes shining brightly, and Yue Zhong's speed was pushed to the maximum.

He slammed towards Feng Bo viciously.

"You want to risk it all? Haha! Just a puny human and you want to go down with me? Go to hell!"

Feng Bo watched Yue Zhong shooting towards him, his eyes shining with a hint of ridicule. He roared out and rushed to meet Yue Zhong.

At the moment of impact, Yue Zhong pressed slightly upwards, allowing Feng Bo claws to slice through his chest.

He forcefully endured the pain and channeled his Dark Dou Qi, and activated his Body of Steel to lock Feng Bo's claws in place.

Despite his strength, under Yue Zhong's Dark Dou Qi, his Body of Steel combined with his powerful Endurance and physique, Feng Bo's right claw was sealed.

"Freak! Die!!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with an unbridled madness, as he pushed his Devil Flame to the maximum. The terrifying Second Order Devil Flames instantly enveloped Feng Bo's body.

If he had activated this skill from afar, Feng Bo was likely able to evade it with his speed. However, at such close proximity, he could not get away.

Within the flames, Feng Bo struggled madly as he roared out and sent a punch at Yue Zhong, "Damn ant!!"

Yue Zhong's wings immediately folded to meet the blow.

Feng Bo's terrifying fist slammed into Yue Zhong's wings, causing even those equipment to be twisted.

Yue Zhong himself was sent shooting towards the distance. His chest had swelled up to a terrifying degree due to the injury caused by Feng Bo. A large amount of fresh blood was flowing.

Yue Zhong's chest was ripped badly by Feng Bo, while his entire body had suffered from the few attacks earlier. With the loss of blood and slight rupture of his organs, he was in great pain, as though he was suffering in hell. Both his shoulders had been shattered. He was starting to get light-hearted. Even if he was an Evolver, he was still a human and had his limits.

Even under such circumstances, Yue Zhong bit harshly down on his lips, the pain shaking him awake. He reached out with his right hand and conjured a Devil Flame Spear to fling it at Feng Bo.

The powerful Devil Flame Spear penetrated Feng Bo's body and erupted, causing a huge hole while the flames burned his insides, and one could see smoke and smell flesh being cooked.

Feng Bo continued to scream while enveloped by the flames, "You can't kill me!! You can't kill me!! I'm the strongest!!"

All of a sudden, his aura seemed to surge, as a green radiance burst out and doused the Devil Flames.

The moment the Devil Flames were extinguished forcefully, his countenance became extremely pale and weak, while parts of his body could be seen charred and smoking. Even the wound caused by the exploding Devil Flame Spear had not healed.

Just when Feng Bo looked as though he had escaped from certain death, a number of anti-air rockets fired upon his body, exploding upon contact.

Bombarded by those rockets, pieces of meat rained down from the sky, as the terrifying Feng Bo was finally vanquished and blasted apart.

Seeing how Feng Bo was blasted apart, Yue Zhong finally heaved a sigh of relief. He allowed the pain to set in, and the intensity of the broken bones and displaced organs finally wrecked him. His brows furrowed deeply as he coughed uncontrollably after a deep breath, coughing mouthfuls of blood.

Forcefully suppressing the pain, he spurred the Dark Wing Alloy Wings on his back and flew towards one of the Thunder Fighters.

Xuan Yuan's eyes flashed eerily, as he lifted his head, his tone sullen, "Feng Bo's killed."

Chi You laughed bitterly, his gaze ferocious as well, "Feng Bo that idiot, he underestimated his enemy. That person's strength can't compare with him at all!"

Xuan Yuan looked at the remaining 20 Thunder Fighters and spoke, "What do we do now? We don't have the ability to fly."

While they don't possess any threat to us, we can't do anything to them as well."

Chi You and Xuan Yuan were both powerful creatures, surpassing even Feng Bo, but they could not engage in aerial fights.

Chi You had a look of self-confidence, "No need to worry. That person called Yue Zhong is already injured to such an extent, he won't live for long. Once he dies, victory is ours. In the history of humankind, once the leader is dead, the rest would crumble. Even if they didn't, how can they be a match for our millions of troops?"

It was hard to deal with the millions of zombies, even if all the armies of the world prior to the apocalypse joined together, not to mention the scattered remains of humanity now.

Xuan Yuan nodded when he heard this, looking towards the skies and falling into contemplation.

The moment Yue Zhong landed in the Thunder Fighter, a large amount of blood from his wounds caused the interior of the helicopter to be splattered red.

"Yue Zhong, what happened?! Quick, apply some medicine!" Ji Qing Wu caught sight of Yue Zhong's heavily injured body, her face turning pale as her eyes teared up. She became slightly frantic as she pulled out her bag of Life-Saving Grass and applied them to Yue Zhong's wounds.

A gust of wind blew past, as Yin Shuang appeared beside Yue Zhong. Her face was full of worry as she asked, "Father!! Father!! How did you become like this?"

Liu Yue Mei could not help but cover her mouth in shock as she saw the various injuries on Yue Zhong, her face turning pale.

Bai Xiao Sheng looked at Yue Zhong and his expression turned grave as well, "Boss Yue!! Hang in there!! We're turning back now, we'll find someone to patch you up!!"

Bai Xiao Sheng had followed Yue Zhong for so long, and fought

alongside him in so many battles, vanquishing countless enemies. Other than his lustful nature, he lacked ambition. Yue Zhong had treated him well and thus, he was equally loyal to Yue Zhong.

"No! We can't turn back! Cough! Cough!" Yue Zhong gasped out before struck with a bout of coughing, fresh blood coming out his mouth.

He continued amidst his coughing fits, "Continue to eradicate the Z-types, this battle, we must definitely win! Furthermore, don't let anyone know about my condition! Otherwise, martial law will be passed! Cough! Cough!!"

This battle was a crucial one which concerned the new rulers of the Central Plains. Should they lose, the rest of the Central Plains and China would follow suit.

Chapter 697: Persistence!

Not only would humans be pushed further and further back, but as long as the evolved intelligent zombie life forms were to control the S3s, S4s, and Hunters to launch an all-out assault, they could easily overrun the human troops.

At the same time, with the loss of industrial cities and production lines, the expenditure of resources and ammunitions could not be compensated, making the task for the human soldiers even tougher.

Once the zombie army was to overrun all the cities that Yue Zhong had painstakingly recovered, then the humans would have to fall back like rats and hide where they could. Even if they could evade death, there would be no more future, nor hope.

Ji Qing Wu grabbed Yue Zhong's hands gingerly as though he was the most precious object on earth, and pleaded with her melodious voice, "Yue Zhong, you're already like this. Can we just go back to patch you up? Treat it as I'm begging you. Please head back. I will stay here to wipe out all the Z-Types. I will assure you with my life, to hunt them all down. Please go back and get some treatment."

This was the first time Ji Qing Wu was this agitated, her cool composure entirely absent.

Ji Qing Wu's Ji Clan was considered the servants to Chen Yao's Chen Clan. Even to Chen Yao, who was considered half her master, Ji Qing Wu had never pleaded this profusely before. At this moment, Yue Zhong's position had finally overtaken Chen Yao as the most important person in her life. She reaffirmed her own feelings towards him.

Yue Zhong's countenance was pale and his chest was bleeding, yet his eyes were as bright as ever as he turned to fix his gaze on Liu Yue Mei, "No!! I've made up my mind, there's no need to try

and persuade me otherwise. Liu Yue Mei, continue!! The fate of the millions of survivors in Central Plains rests on you!!"

Without her, Yue Zhong might not have brazenly try to attack the capital. He had not expected the appearance of evolved life forms capable of commanding the 20 million-strong zombie horde, as well as ones whose fighting capabilities were so terrifying.

Liu Yue Mei looked at this man, who was so gravely injured and yet so insistent on fighting the zombies without a shred of hesitation, and finally understood why so many soldiers were willing to give their lives for him, without a word of complaint even in death.

If it had been a normal official, he would have long since hidden in the safety of his own base, who would be willing to fight on the frontlines with the soldiers?

Of course, Yue Zhong's style had a huge shortcoming, which was that, should he die, the rest of the troops would immediately collapse.

Liu Yue Mei was also a strong woman, and she walked up to the pilot Zhao Tian Gang and said, "I got it! In that direction, there's a commander-type!"

With her directions, Zhao Tian Gang quickly collected his chaotic emotions and brought the Thunder Fighter releasing huge numbers of cluster bombs on the patch of zombies. The unfortunate zombies below were immediately blasted apart, together with the Z-Type hiding within.

Yue Zhong sat on a sofa, opening up a can of Type 4 Mutant Beast meat and consumed it, His chest had been ripped apart by Feng Bo, had it been any other normal person, they would have died. However, for Yue Zhong, with this Dark Dou Qi, the vitality of his cells were enhanced, and together with the Level 4 Regeneration skill, his wounds had already stopped bleeding.

The large quantity of Type 4 Mutant Beast meat also helped, transforming into nourishment, pushing the recovery of Yue Zhong's body.

Every time he gobbled down a can of meat, his body would be wracked by a bout of pain, which could drive someone insane. However, after countless battles, his fortitude was as strong as one could be, and each time the pain struck, his face would just be contorted, as he gasped. However, he gritted through it and continued to eat. In order to live and heal, he had to gain enough energy.

Having evolved to this point, with the Regeneration ability, as well as his Vitality, reaching 294 points, coupled with the enhancement of his Dark Dou Qi, Yue Zhong only had 3 weak points, his head, his heart and his digestive systems.

If his head or heart was destroyed, Yue Zhong would definitely die. If his stomach was destroyed, and the rest of his body was injured as well, he could not take food to hasten the healing process, which could cause death should the recovery happen too slowly.

Yue Zhong swallowed down cans after cans of Type 4 Beast Meat, and it felt like his chest was being sliced apart by a knife. The healing wounds would start to split, causing the new muscle to reform, and the pain from the constant tear and healing could drive a person to wish for death.

Even so, while his will was resolute, the pain did not recede. His entire body was covered with perspiration. Within 5 minutes, his face and body were entirely wet, and his eyes seemed to lose focus. He continued to shove food down mechanically, his attention focused on bearing with the pain, with no capacity to care about anything else.

Ji Qing Wu watched Yue Zhong covered entirely in sweat and continued to help wipe him off. Her heart ached, yet she was

helpless.

Ji Qing Wu had the Biological Armor, which could help repair the user's body. However, since it was already bound to Ji Qing Wu on the first usage, she could not utilize it to help Yue Zhong.

Yin Shuang could feel Yue Zhong's pain as well, as she curled up quietly beside him, looking at his wounds with a face of worry. This was the first time since she was born that she was overcome with fear and anxiety. She was extremely afraid of losing Yue Zhong.

After all, a chest injury of this extent would be considered grave even for Yin Shuang. If it wasn't for the Regeneration skill that Yue Zhong possessed, together with the Dark Dou Qi, as well as the high Vitality he possessed, he might already be a corpse.

Bai Xiao Sheng looked at Yue Zhong, his gaze complicated, "Boss, you must not die. If you die, we're all finished. You haven't even raised a successor yet!!"

Yue Zhong's power was extensive, controlling the Central Plains, Hunan, Guang Xi, Vietnam, Japan and Country A. These various bases were all linked together, and as long as Yue Zhong was around, no one dared to contest his might. However, should he die, the upper echelons of all 6 places would not submit to anyone else, and all that he build up would crumble.

Throughout history, many powerful kingdoms had fallen due to the deaths of capable leaders. Power could change hands as easily as anything.

As Liu Yue Mei continued to point out the positions of the Z-Types, the areas would be bombarded. With each Z-Type eradicated, a large number of ordinary zombies would stop moving. They would then be flattened into meat paste by the zombies behind, or they would become targets to be fired upon.

The huge horde of zombies was simply endless, even as many of

them were being eradicated by Yue Zhong's troops, there didn't seem to be an end to them.

In fact, the most fearsome thing about the sea of zombies was that it seemed impossible to wipe them out. Regardless of how many they fought or killed, there was no end to it, and the soldiers couldn't help but feel tired and a sense of despair. Those with weaker minds would lose their fighting spirit easily.

As the Thunder Fighter carrying Yue Zhong flew over the area where Xuan Yuan was at, Xuan Yuan turned to look up at the Thunder Fighter, "Oh! I was wondering how come they can locate our commanders so easily, turns out there's a person among the humans who can locate us! Let me teach you a lesson then."

At an instant, Liu Yue Mei doubled over, kneeling down. Blood began to flow from her nose and mouth, as she grabbed her heart and gasped, "Below... There's a powerful being below... It is very strong, my Spirit cannot compare with it. I have never met such a strong commander-type before, it should be the one controlling the entire horde!"

Hearing her words, Yue Zhong who was semi-conscious began to stir. His body trembled slightly, and he opened his mouth as though to say something, but the pain racking his body made it extremely hard.

Ji Qing Wu pressed his head and ordered Zhao Tian Gang, "We must eradicate that leader at all cost!"

"Yes! Attack!"

Zhao Tian Gang responded and immediately gave the order to attack.

Immediately, a number of cluster bombs were dropped on the area, as machine guns and rockets were fired freely at the location that Liu Yue Mei pointed.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Following some explosions, the entire region was consumed by flames, and many zombies were blasted apart. 6 huge L4s were even obliterated under that mass bombing, before being burned alive by the flames from the cluster bombs.

Zhao Tian Gang asked, full of expectations, "Is it dead? Major Liu!!"

As long as the leader was wiped, the horde of zombies would be easier to deal with. Without the leader, the zombies would just be sheep awaiting slaughter, at the expense of ammunition.

Liu Yue Mei grabbed her head and curled further, her expression extremely pale as she spat out a mouthful of blood, "No! They're not dead! There're 2 of them! Cough!"

Below, a gust of wind blew past, amidst the destruction, 2 figures slowly appeared. They were Chi You and Xuan Yuan.

Chapter 698: Threat of Missiles!

Xuan Yuan lifted his head, eyeing the Thunder Fighter and spoke indifferently, "I was actually underestimated. These humans dare to think of us as equal to those ant-like Z-Types. Such an attack cannot harm us at all!"

Chi You looked at the Thunder Fighter as well, chuckling with menace, "No matter how strong their weapons, it's useless if they don't perform. With the monkey-like intelligence of these humans, it's too much to expect them to understand this."

Both of them were evolved beings with high intelligence among the zombies, with a terrifying combat strength exceeding even that of Yin Shuang's. Even Yue Zhong had to give his all, and sacrificed his body, together with the attacks of the Thunder Fighter, just to take out Feng Bo.

If an ordinary person wanted to take out Xuan Yuan and Chi You, it was practically impossible. If it weren't for the Thunder Fighters being airborne, they would have been easily crushed by the 2 freaks.

Right at this time, Zhao Tian Gang suddenly had a change of expression, "Leader!! Leader!! There's revolt, there're people rebelling in Ulan Town!!"

When Yue Zhong heard this, he became enraged and coughed out a mouth of fresh blood, "What?!"

Yue Zhong and his subordinates had went to the frontlines, putting themselves in danger, all for the sake of protecting the lives of the millions of survivors. This was an important time and critical situation, and the people they were protecting actually tried to stab them in the back. Anyone would be infuriated.

Ji Qing Wu hugged him, without caring about the blood or perspiration and tried to calm him down, "Don't be agitated, Yue

Zhong, your body cannot take it. Those fellows would definitely not succeed. It's not worth it harming your body over them."

Ji Qing Wu was also angry about those people, but she was even more concerned about Yue Zhong's health, and could not help but try to calm him down.

Yue Zhong suppressed his pain to order, "Lock down the news. Don't let it spread."

Should it travel to the front lines, it would affect the 6 units. After all, these 6 units were focused on facing 20 billion zombies, the pressure they were facing was extremely high. Should there be news of a revolt, their mindset would be affected.

Zhao Tian Gang immediately responded, "Yes!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a fierce light, "Contact the missile base! Convey my order! Fire the No. 3 missile on coordinates X00234, Y00567."

Zhao Tian Gang's expression turned to one of shock, "Missile? Leader, are you really going to fire that missile?"

Missiles were terrifying weapons that humans created. Ever since they presented the devastation they were capable of, they had all been sealed. They had always been used in threats and power showcases, rather than actual firing.

The moment one was fired, the radius of the blast zone would be contaminated with radiation, one which would not dissipate even after a hundred years. No one in the right mind would fire it into his own backyard.

"Tian Gang, execute the order! I'll bear the consequences!! This battle, we definitely cannot lose!! Quick! Cough! Cough!" Yue Zhong gasped out, before going into another fit.

Zhao Tian Gang was already a seasoned soldier, and he immediately contacted the missile base, replying Yue Zhong, "Yes! Leader!"

"This is the nuclear missile base, I'm the person in charge, Major Liu Jin He."

Yue Zhong gritted his teeth through the pain and came to the communications device, "This is Yue Zhong. I'm ordering you to immediately fire the 3rd Missile on coordinates, X00234, Y00567. The password is XBJWYEG2347654590."

"Leader!! Please wait a moment!!" After a while, Liu Jin He keyed in the password and confirmed it was Yue Zhong before trying to affirm Yue Zhong's decision, "Firing Missile No.3, target coordinates X00234, Y00567. Please confirm again if you want to go through with the decision, Leader!"

Yue Zhong's face was pale as he hacked a few more times, "Immediately! Fire it at the fastest you can! This concerns the life and death of all survivors of the Central Plains!! Cough cough!!"

Liu Jin He's heart turned cold, "Yes!"

"Let's leave!!"

After passing the order, Yue Zhong told Zhao Tian Gang. If they didn't leave in time, they would also be caught in the blast and become corpses.

Xuan Yuan watched the 20 Thunder Fighters retreating and slowly said, "They're flying away!"

Chi You let out a chuckle in ridicule, "Seems like Yue Zhong is dead and they're rushing to head back to keep things under control. Humans are such pathetic creatures that concern themselves with such authority and hope. However, their flesh, blood, and brains are delicious! Keke!"

Xuan Yuan thought for a while, before smiling, "That's true!"

Xuan Yuan and Chi You had consumed plenty of human brains and learned a lot of knowledge. They were clear that once Yue Zhong, a leader of the humans, were to die, many of them would struggle for his authority and power. In fact, humans were much

uglier and stupid than they had imagined, seeing that the zombies had not yet been eliminated, and they were already scrambling for power.

Chi You's eyesight was powerful, and saw a missile flying towards their position, "Ah! What's that?"

"Long-range missile, so they still have such a move. What a pity, it would not be able to kill us."

Xuan Yuan eyed the rocket and laughed coldly, disappearing from his position.

Chi You also flashed and appeared about 400m away in a second.

With such terrifying speed, it didn't matter what rockets or missiles were launched at them, Xuan Yuan and Chi You could dodge them easily. However, these weren't ordinary missiles, but the apex of all explosives!

Hong!

The moment the bomb landed, it resulted in a terrifying explosion, and the blast spread out at the speed of light, enveloping Chi You and Xuan Yuan.

Chi You's body immediately revealed a white light to try and block the effects of the blast, but at the next instant, the light disintegrated, and the searing heat covered Chi You, causing his body that was capable of blocking even grenades, to slowly break apart.

"How is this possible? How is this possible?! This is the nuclear missile! It's the nuclear missile!!!" Amidst his screams of horror and pain, Chi You was slowly broken down.

Xuan Yuan also roared out in rage and pain, before being destroyed by the searing heat, "Nuclear bomb!! What a vicious move!! Vicious!!!!"

The moment the missile landed, the powerful explosion covered

a wide radius, and all that it consumed turned to ash, as a huge mushroom cloud blossomed in the sky. The nearby zombies were all wiped out, not even the L4s could withstand such a terrifying strike.

Many zombies were caught up in powerful winds that blew and were sent flying, while others had been affected by the resulting shockwave, that caused their bodies to burst apart as well.

At that time of the impact, the resulting tremor had caused even the canyon to tremble, causing many soldiers to panic.

Yue Zhong eyed the devastation from afar, his eyes flashing with a complicated gaze, "Are they finished?"

Within a hundred years from today, the area of impact would become a no-mans-land for years to come.

After the explosion, the number of zombies which was about 8 million (with over 1 million dying to the various artillery and nuclear bomb) instantly came to a stop, their attacks ceased. Of which, 2 million of them began to escape towards the capital.

The remaining zombies began to disperse towards different directions.

Since Xuan Yuan and Chi You had died, their control over the Z-Types had completely disappeared. This led to the few Z-Types controlling their own groups to protect them as they fled, fearing the nuclear bomb.

Another 4 million were still standing there blankly on the battlefield, not advancing nor retreating. This was the result of having lost command.

The Z-Type over this 4 million had long been annihilated since Liu Yue Mei pointed its position out, and thus the zombies were waiting for another Z-Type to command them.

Yue Zhong watched the chaos unfold among the zombies, and heaved a sigh of relief, "We finally won!"

Disrupting the main force of over 10 million zombies was a huge motivation to the rest of the 5 main battlefields, and with this, Yue Zhong could also deploy his troops to support the other battlefields.

Since the 3 powerful intelligent lifeforms Xuan Yuan, Chi You and Feng Bo had died, the control they had over the other 5 battlefields was gone as well.

However, there were still Z3s at the other locations, they had not yet experienced the terror of the nuclear bomb. Hence, after Xuan Yuan and Chi You were killed, the battle still went on at the other 5 locations.

The information continued to stream to Yue Zhong, revealing the brutal nature of war, and the rising casualty count of his troops.

Bai Xiao Sheng came up to Yue Zhong and asked, "Boss, what do we do now? Do we go back to quell the rebellion or assist the other battlefields?"

Yue Zhong responded solemnly, "Go support the other battlefields. I have left the task of quelling the chaos to Lian Da Zhong and Ya Tong. Those people are just some clowns. Our first task is to help our brothers and comrades!!"

"Tian Gang, fly to the 2nd Brigade. We shall help the 2nd Brigade with their side first. " Yue Zhong then turned to Liu Yue Mei, whose face was still pale, and asked, "Yue Mei, how do you feel? Can you hold on?"

She leaned against the sofa and sipped some Divine Spring Tea and laughed coquettishly at Yue Zhong, "Compared to you, my injuries aren't much. As long as there're no more monsters like earlier, I'll be fine."

Chapter 699: Rebellion!

"Down with the dictator Yue Zhong!"

"Long live democracy! Long live freedom!"

"Down with Yue Zhong!"

Ulan City, which had been a vital location of support, was currently plunged into chaos. A number of rebel soldiers were taking arms against the government district.

One particular woman, with beautiful features and short hair, hollered at the top of her voice, "Yue Zhong is a dictator that does not care about the welfare of the people! He just brings his troops to war all over the place, and execute those that disagree with him. We need to bring him down and reestablish democracy! A free country!! Down with his dictatorship!!"

"Down with Yue Zhong!! Down with dictatorship!!"

A number of hot-blooded students were chanting together with the young woman. As students, they were at the age where they were most passionate and were incited to join her in rebellion.

Other than them, there were a few others who had grown disillusioned in their own posts and began causing trouble in the name of flushing out Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong had not much understanding about governance and had gone about it as per his perception of government before the apocalypse. He was harsh on corruption but other than that, he did not do anything special nor was he a genius at governing. Furthermore, he had been warring against the zombies constantly, pushing the logistics and backend support to their limits. Therefore, many survivors had to work extra hard to produce ammunition, clothes and all sorts of other supplies. This led to discontent.

After all, before the apocalypse, many had been living carefree

lives, driving fast cars and enjoying life's pleasures. Those in the white-collar industries would head to work with a cup of coffee or tea, reading newspapers, and knocking off on time. They weren't used to the hard work at a constant 12 hours a day.

Many of these people soon gathered by the woman, who was called Lin Ran and took the opportunity to protest and rebel during the critical time as Yue Zhong was dealing with the 20 million zombies.

Normally, Yue Zhong had an iron grip over his military, and if these people dared to rebel, they would be seeking death. It was only during such a period of unrest that they dared to try. Furthermore, once they did so, it was tantamount to cutting off any path of retreat for Yue Zhong's army, and could potentially cause disastrous results for the 30,000 elites.

After all, while the 30,000 elites might be invincible existences to the rebels, to the 20 million zombies, a simple mishap could cause them to be wiped out.

Among the rebels, Situ Jin looked at the soldiers attacking the government building, his eyes flashing with a complicated gaze, as he muttered, "Is what we're doing right?"

Another soldier whose bearing was extremely neat chuckled slightly and told Situ Jin, "Commander Situ, Yue Zhong is a butcher, someone who had wrestled control of the country. He's an offender. By bringing your troops to remove him, you're a hero of the country."

Situ Jin looked at the middle-aged man and sighed, the chaos in his heart settling down.

This man was called Lin Dui Xing and was a pretty high-ranking official before the apocalypse. After he had been rescued by Yue Zhong out of the capital, he had been treated like an ordinary citizen.

It was because of his order that Situ Jin gave the command to start the rebellion. This Lin Dui Xing represented an authority from before the apocalypse after all.

Situ Jin was an old-fashioned military through and through and was only loyal towards the government of before the apocalypse. The moment Lin Dui Xing gave him an order, he had betrayed Yue Zhong and took part in the chaos. Of course, to him, he was on the right side of the law.

Ying Kong brought a battalion of soldiers near the street of the government building and roared out with fury, "Captain!! Why did you betray Leader!! Leader has been treating our brother right! He gave you authority and did not force your troops to take part in any battles you didn't wish to!! Why?! Why must you betray Leader Yue Zhong?! He is on the front lines putting his life on the line for all of us!! How dare you cut off his path of retreat?!" Situ Jin had initially thought that he can easily control the entire Ulan City and cut off Yue Zhong's retreat. However, he had never imagined his once-loyal subordinate Ying Kong to actually turn against him, defending the government building. At the same time, when Ying Kong brought out what Yue Zhong had done for them, he managed to gather a few scattered and hesitating troops over to his side. It had caused all hopes of Situ Jin quickly controlling the city to be dashed.

When Situ Jin heard those words, his face fell. He had never imagined Yue Zhong's prestige to reach such a level, causing even his subordinates to turn against him.

Yue Zhong had brought his troops to capture the surrounding cities, leading them to successive victories, and even rewarded his soldiers.

Since Situ Jin had chosen to incite the rebellion, there was no retreat for him. He could only force himself through, "Ying Kong!! Yue Zhong had not obtained the recognition from the Central Government, thus, he's a traitor! It's not too late for you to join

me!"

Ying Kong responded in disappointment, "Captain!! You're muddleheaded!! Now is the time where we humans have to unite against the zombies if Leader Yue Zhong were to fail, how could we find another army to stand against them?! I might not be learned, but I know shame! Today, as long as I am not dead, you, Situ Jin, shall not pass!"

Ying Kong was filled with disappointment towards him, that he referred to him by name instead of his rank of the past.

When Situ Jin heard this, his face alternated between white and green, as he ordered loudly, "All troops, attack!!"

Under his order, 2 battalions of soldiers raised their weapons against Ying Kong and his battalion. In response, Ying Kong led his troops to cover and began an intense gunfight.

Right at this time, there was the sound of horses galloping through Ulan City. A number of Mongol soldiers riding Black Scaled Stallions charged through the city, led by Lian Da Zhong, beside him, was the vice-commander, Cha Bi Lai.

Since they were both on extremely good terms, and Cha Bi Lai used to be the commander of the reinforcement Mongolian troops, Lian Da Zhong had sought him out the moment he received the command from Yue Zhong to deal with the uprising.

Cha Bi Lai knew his chance had come when he heard this order, without hesitation, he announced his loyalty towards Yue Zhong in front of Lian Da Zhong and led his troops to follow him.

"Everyone is to get down on their knees and put down their weapons! Otherwise, they will be executed immediately!! Those who partook in the rebellion will be put to death!" The moment Lian Da Zhong entered the city, his arrogant voice resounded throughout.

Seeing the riders charging in with billowing killing intent, all

those who had come out to watch the commotion quickly scurried back to their homes, leaving behind only those rebels!

"We want democracy!! Freedom!!"

"Down with Yue Zhong, down with the dictator!!"

"....."

As Lin Ran continued to lead them, the students began to gather and blocked Lian Da Zhong. They assumed that the law would still protect them, as long as they stuck united, Yue Zhong would be helpless against them.

Many of those who were smarter saw the soldiers filled with killing intent and felt that things were not right, quickly retreating towards the various corners and alleys.

Lian Da Zhong immediately gave the cold order as he watched those idiots protesting, "Kill these rebels!!"

Although he was a coward, he was someone who had carved a position and name for himself, and for his own power and position, he had not hesitated to kill a few people. As long as Yue Zhong recognized his contributions, he could rise.

Cha Bi Lai also prioritized getting in benefits and did not blink when killing. He looked at the rebels in front coldly, and shouted, "Kill!!!"

The 1,000 Mongolian riders charged right into the midst of the people, waving their blades, and a number of heads flew, as bodies were struck down.

"AH!!!"

"Help!!"

"Don't kill me!!"

"....."

The rebels died in tragic fashion, while many others fled.

Lin Ran saw her comrades being slaughtered in a hellish fashion, and her face instantly turned pale. She did not know what to do. Although she had been hollering for democracy and freedom, she was still ignorant and didn't expect Lian Da Zhong to start killing without a second word.

In her original plans, she had hoped to talk to Lian Da Zhong and negotiate in the name of democracy, delaying his troops, buying time for Situ Jin's forces. She had not yet suffered under the current system and did not know the terror of warlords.

Lian Da Zhong got the troops to surround the troublemakers and shouted, "Get down and surrender! Those who still stand shall be executed!! Those who flee will be executed!!"

He did not dare to head forward himself, just in case, they attacked him. His life was too precious, in his opinion.

Hearing his shouts, those who were initially calling for Yue Zhong to be brought down began to kneel and beg for their lives.

Lin Ran watched the rest surrender blankly when a blade suddenly flashed past her, and her beautiful head flew into the sky, as blood splatter from her neck.

The soldier that slashed her head off coldly kept his blade and did not even spare a glance at her corpse as he charged forwards.

The rest of the protesting group began to crumble and sob for their lives as those who stood were slaughtered in front of them.

Cha Bi Lai continued to lead the soldiers towards Situ Jin's troops, intending to cut off their retreat.

Chapter 700: Quelling the Rebellion!

Situ Jin was taken aback when faced with the sudden attack, however, he was still an experienced general, and quickly deployed a number of soldiers to defend the back without losing composure.

The sounds of gunshots rang throughout Ulan City, with all 3 sides fighting for their own objectives with frenzy.

Within the government building, Zhuo Ya Tong was decked in military wear, her countenance frosty. She called out solemnly, "It's time for us to head out. All units, attack!"

After which, she led the 40 elite Evolvers out herself into the battlefield.

Yue Zhong had gotten Zhuo Ya Tong to take the reins of Ulan City, and for her safety, he had left 40 Evolvers to assist her.

Ying Kong saw them come out and quickly went to ask, "Mayor Zhuo, how can you come out? What if something happens to you, how can I explain to Leader? Please head back in. I'll handle the situation out here. As long as I, Ying Kong, am alive, Situ Jin's troops would definitely not reach you."

Zhuo Ya Tong pointed to the government building and said, "I'm here to quickly vanquish Situ Jin! Watch!"

Ying Kong turned to look, only to see the Type 3 Lightning walking out of the building with billowing killing intent.

In a flash, it turned into a blur of light, and the next thing they knew, Lightning had appeared among Situ Jin's troops.

Lightning's speed was extremely fast; before Situ Jin's troops had the chance to react, it had already reached the front troops and tore off the heads of the soldiers one by one in a gruesome manner.

In a short span of time, the platoon right in front had been wiped out by Lightning. The sight of their comrades' heads flying caused

the rest of the soldiers to feel horrified, and their morale plunged.

The troops of Situ Jin had been trained only to fill up the ranks of Yue Zhong's main forces. While the soldiers might have undergone some training, they lacked Evolvers, and the number of Enhancers was low as well. Not a single one of them was above Level 30.

If they were up against a proper military unit from before the apocalypse, they might have an advantage, but against the powerful Lightning whose speed was extremely fast, they were just sheep preparing to be slaughtered. They couldn't even catch sight of its movements, how could they defend?

Other than that, the 40 elite Evolvers by Zhuo Ya Tong's side had all undergone Job changes as well, and when they launched their assault on Situ Jin's forces, they were precise, quick, and ruthless. Every attack claimed the lives of the rebelling soldiers.

Situ Jin's forces were picked out from the ordinary survivors, who were then placed through training. Their combat abilities could not match up against the soldiers that were baptized by true battle. Facing those soldiers, as well as the powerful Lightning, they could only hold off the attacks for barely a while before they were eliminated easily.

"No retreat!! Anyone who does so will be executed!! No retreat!!"

As the 2 front battalions collapsed, many of the other soldiers started to abandon their posts and threw their weapons as they fled. The commanders tried to execute a few of them to make an example but they were helpless against the flood of retreating soldiers.

One by one, heads would fly because of Lightning's swiping, causing the rest of the soldiers to feel even more despair. This supplementary division that had a short history soon fell apart, even Situ Jin had no way of controlling the troops anymore.

"Kill Situ Jin this bastard!!"

"It's over!! It's over!! Kill Situ Jin and present his head, we might be able to claim amnesty!!"

"That's right!! It's all because of Situ Jin and those bastards who trick us!! Sending us to our deaths. Kill those bastards, and we can live on!!"

"...."

Surrounded on all 3 sides, those soldiers who felt that things were going south began to feel angry. Their eyes turned bloodshot as they quickly ganged up against Situ Jin, pointing their weapons on Situ Jin and his trusted aides.

Faced with the backlash, Situ Jin could only protect Lin Dui Xing as they tried to flee.

"The traitorous general Lin Chen has been killed!!"

Following the sound of cheers, Situ Jin turned to look and noticed his comrade who had gone through countless life-and-death situations with him, being sliced apart by countless blades. One soldier went forward to decapitate him, grabbing the head and hollering out in excitement.

"I'm sorry, Xiao Chen! It's all my fault!!" Situ Jin felt his heart clench, and he was filled with hatred.

"The traitorous Liu Yu has been killed! I've chopped his head off!!"

Following another excited shout, Situ Jin saw another comrade hacked by 6 or 7 different blades, his head chopped off by a soldier. The moment his head rolled, a few soldiers rushed up in a frenzy to grab it. It was their protection charm.

Yue Zhong had never mistreated his soldiers, but his vicious and decisiveness was known to all. Since he had swallowed up many factions, from time to time, random fellows who did not know

their own place would try to challenge his position. These rebels would be captured and fed to the zombies while still alive before their corpses were turned to nourishment for the Mother Tree.

When these rebelling soldiers thought to the potential fate they were going to be subjected to, their hearts were filled with a chill, and they scrambled to grab onto any chance of survival they got.

"Xiao Yu!!! I've let you down!!" Situ Jin began to sob out loud, Liu Yu had been a good friend as well. At that time, Liu Yu had saved him from the mountain of corpses and even blocked a bullet for him. When he thought of the tragic end to such a young and fine soldier, his head decapitated, a death without a full corpse, Situ Jin was filled with sadness.

Following the cheers of celebration, a number of Situ Jin's trusted aides and comrades were hunted down and executed, their heads chopped off and displayed for all to see.

Making use of this chance, Situ Jin shielded Lin Dui Xing as they broke out of the perimeter together with a few other guards.

Lin Dui Xing consoled him, "Commander Situ, don't worry. Good always triumphs evil. Yue Zhong's rule is not stable, and this episode has already revealed his weakness. As long as we work hard, and gather the other forces in the name of righteousness, we will definitely be able to topple Yue Zhong's rule."

Situ Jin chuckled bitterly, his words thick with unspoken words, "En!"

Right at this time, Lian Da Zhong appeared right in front of them, flanked by a number of guards. His face radiated with excitement, "Haha!! I caught the big fish!! Capture them!!"

The hundred-odd Mongolian soldiers saw Situ Jin and Lin Dui Xing, their eyes turning red as they shot towards them.

The dozens of guards beside Situ Jin and Lin Dui Xing were easily dispatched by the Mongolian soldiers, and the 2 of them were also

captured easily.

A cold blade was pressed against Lin Dui Xing's neck, and he hurriedly called out, "Brother!! I want to report a person! I want to report Situ Jin, it was he who had instigated the rebellion against Leader Yue Zhong! That's right! I also know the list of those who had ideas or are conspiring against Yue Zhong, I want to report them!"

Lian Da Zhong's eyes went wide, "Oh!! Who's there? As long as you tell me all of it, I can assure your safety!!"

Lin Dui Xing's face turned pale as he revealed everything, "There's the commander of the Cangya Mercenary Group, Li Lie, the female student Lin Ran, the boss Mo Yi Ming of the Tian Feng Restaurant..."

Situ Jin closed his eyes in pain as he heard Lin Dui Xing's words. For his own life, Lin Dui Xing had actually spat out all the core members of the resistance and rebellion. He regretted listening to this piece of trash. For this trash, he had sacrificed so many brothers and friends. Since he had emerged as the loser, he could imagine the merciless ending in store for himself.

As Lian Da Zhong listened to the various names pouring out from Lin Dui Xing's mouth, he was pleased, saying, "Good!! Good!! Good!!"

To be able to flush out so many traitors, Lian Da Zhong knew that it was his chance to really shine. He could make use of these bad eggs to climb higher.

Since Situ Jin's troops were the main fighting force, the rest of the rebel army were a random bunch. Once Situ Jin and his forces were eradicated, Lian Da Zhong had clarified with Zhuo Ya Tong, and he proceeded to bring Cha Bi Lai and his troops to go apprehend the rest of the people reported by Lin Dui Xing.

In a short span of time, the streets of Ulan City were filled with

the traitors and their family members. There were so many that the jails could not accommodate them, and Zhuo Ya Tong had no choice but to stuff them in some of the bigger warehouses.

"Commander, Zhang Ru Hai of the 1st Platoon is requesting for backup."

Lie Ming Yi's eyes were bloodshot as he screamed out, "Fuck him! Tell him to hold on!! All we can send we have already sent out!! There's still an hour, even if he dies, he better hold on for one more hour! Otherwise, tell him to deliver his own head on a platter to me!"

Facing 2 million zombies for the first time gave Lie Ming Yi huge pressure. Even though he held the advantage in terrain and prepared countless traps and defense mechanisms, together with the support of his artillery, tanks, and armored vehicles, he still felt the battle to be extremely frightening.

From the get-go, they had been thrown into the heat of battle, and the endless sea of zombies seemed to steamroll over every single construct they had prepared, before launching assaults on the base that Lie Ming Yi's troops were guarding.

His soldiers had put up a terrific resistance, even so, they suffered greatly, and his nerves were getting taut. It was the first time he had felt the pressure leading troops on his own. If he was not careful, the entire Brigade might die out here.

Table of Contents

[God and Devil World](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 601: Gaining the God and Devil World's 18th Novice Village!](#)

[Chapter 602: Evolving Temple!](#)

[Chapter 603: Reaching the Central Plains!](#)

[Chapter 604: Yin Shuang's Terrifying Strength!](#)

[Chapter 605: Qi Mu County!](#)

[Chapter 606: Tian Mu Town!](#)

[Chapter 607: Zhao Jing Lei!](#)

[Chapter 608: Gold Wolf Riders!](#)

[Chapter 609: Alliance Meeting!](#)

[Chapter 610: Attack of the Gold Wolf Riders!](#)

[Chapter 611: Fierce Dong-Er Molei!](#)

[Chapter 612: Repelling the Gold Wolf Riders!](#)

[Chapter 613: Aisin Gioro - Xuan Zhen!](#)

[Chapter 614: Miserable Victory of the Manchurian Army!](#)

[Chapter 615: Geng Da Zhong!](#)

[Chapter 616: Battling the White Armor Army!](#)

[Chapter 617: Tough Battle!](#)

[Chapter 618: Meat Grinder!](#)

[Chapter 619: Assassinating Xuan Zhen!](#)

[Chapter 620: Burning Camp!](#)

[Chapter 621: Victorious Troops!](#)

[Chapter 622: Situ Jin!](#)

[Chapter 623: The army of the Mongol King!](#)

[Chapter 624: Grey Wolf Rider and Blood Eagle Rider!](#)

[Chapter 625: Defeating the Grey Wolf Riders and Blood Eagle Riders!](#)

[Chapter 626: Refining the Blood Lotus!](#)

[Chapter 627: Mutant Army Ant Colony!](#)

[Chapter 628: Rescue!](#)

[Chapter 629: Taking in the defeated!](#)

[Chapter 630: Ulan Mountain Range!](#)

[Chapter 631: Man-Eating Mutant Flower!](#)

[Chapter 632: Trap!](#)

[Chapter 633: Treants!](#)
[Chapter 634: Tree Spirit Bi Lù!](#)
[Chapter 635: Heart!](#)
[Chapter 636: Underground Lab!](#)
[Chapter 637: Underground City!](#)
[Chapter 638: Freak!](#)
[Chapter 639: Terrifying Parasites!](#)
[Chapter 640: Raiding the Underground City!](#)
[Chapter 641: Research Lab!](#)
[Chapter 642: Wiping out the Parasites!](#)
[Chapter 643: Killer Lie Ming Yi!](#)
[Chapter 644: Mongol-Manchu Alliance!](#)
[Chapter 645: Pressure of the Army!](#)
[Chapter 646: The Slave Army Attacks!](#)
[Chapter 647: Fight on the Hill!](#)
[Chapter 648: Night Raid on the Manchu Camp!](#)
[Chapter 649: Defeating the Manchu Troops!](#)
[Chapter 650: The Mongolian Army Retreats](#)
[Chapter 651: Assault throughout the Night!](#)
[Chapter 652: Clash!](#)
[Chapter 653: Defeating the Mongolian Army!](#)
[Chapter 654: Advice to Surrender!](#)
[Chapter 655: Hu-er Ran's conditions!](#)
[Chapter 656: Elder Council!](#)
[Chapter 657: Undercurrent!](#)
[Chapter 658: Dog Hu-er Ran!](#)
[Chapter 659: Reorganizing Troops!](#)
[Chapter 660: The Strange Movement of 4 Million Zombies!](#)
[Chapter 661: Snipe!](#)
[Chapter 662: Zombie with Art of War!](#)
[Chapter 663: Yue Zhong arrives personally! The might of the Laser Gun!](#)
[Chapter 664: Cunning Zombie!](#)
[Chapter 665: Obtaining Bao Xi City!](#)
[Chapter 666: The Allied Forces Appear!](#)
[Chapter 667: The Tyrannical Apostles!](#)
[Chapter 668: Intense Battle with the Apostle!](#)
[Chapter 669: Hitting the Apostles Hard!](#)
[Chapter 670: Ereka!](#)
[Chapter 671: Yin Shan Mountain Range!](#)

[Chapter 672: Tiger Wolf Army!](#)
[Chapter 673: 8-Leaf Blue Plant!](#)
[Chapter 674: Obtaining the Nuclear Bombs!](#)
[Chapter 675: Strategic Granary!](#)
[Chapter 676: The 5 Heads of the Greater China Alliance!](#)
[Chapter 677: Arrival of the Beast Horde!](#)
[Chapter 678: Fierce Battle with the Mutant Beast Horde!](#)
[Chapter 679: Strange Change!](#)
[Chapter 680: Fierce Battle with the Apostles!](#)
[Chapter 681: Collapse!](#)
[Chapter 682: Fierce Battle with the Type 3s!](#)
[Chapter 683: Su Xing He joins!](#)
[Chapter 684: Swallowing the Alliance!](#)
[Chapter 685: Negotiations!](#)
[Chapter 686: Satellite Base!](#)
[Chapter 687: The Woman who controls Zombies!](#)
[Chapter 688: Triple-Spirit Evolver!](#)
[Chapter 689: Sneak!](#)
[Chapter 690: Artificial Intelligence!](#)
[Chapter 691: Mars No.1!](#)
[Chapter 692: Liu Yue Mei's Tyrannical Ability!](#)
[Chapter 693: Horde of Zombies in the Capital!](#)
[Chapter 694: Evolved Zombie with Intelligence!](#)
[Chapter 695: Terrifying Feng Bo!](#)
[Chapter 696: Yue Zhong Gravely Injured!](#)
[Chapter 697: Persistence!](#)
[Chapter 698: Threat of Missiles!](#)
[Chapter 699: Rebellion!](#)
[Chapter 700: Quelling the Rebellion!](#)